

# **Salvation and Bible Conversations**

by Dr. Ken Matto

Printed at [snowfallpress.com](http://snowfallpress.com)

## Contents

Salvation	4
How to Know if You are Saved	14
Salvation parts 1, 2 and 3	23
Effectual Salvation	47
Salvation is Forever	53
The Cross: Payment for Sin or Demonstration?	56
The End of Salvation	64
The Fulness of the Atonement	72
The Glorious Aspects of God's Salvation Program	80
How Were Old Testament Saints Saved?	92
Faith: Where Does it Originate?	107
Freewillism is a false gospel	110
John 3:16 An Offer of the Gospel or a Declaration of the Gospel?	117
Last Will and Testament of Christ	120
Man the Sovereign and God the Beggar	125
The Order of Salvation	132
Saint or Sinner – Which are you?	138
What Happened at the Cross	146
With Men Salvation is Impossible	150
How Does God View the Believer?	152
Repentance: The Requirement for or the Results of Salvation	164
Works n' Faith	170
Work of Faith	174
What is a Christian?	175
160 Reasons Jesus is God	177
50 Most Misunderstood Verses of the Bible	186

Adam and Eve: Fear or Repentance	261
Assumptive Hermeneutics	265
The Suffering of Christ	278
Backsliding	279
Biblical Absolutes	284
Christians Need to Become Biblicists	287
Contrast Between the Physical and Eternal Covenants	297
Allegory: It's Use and Abuse	300
Differing Covenants	308
Does God Answer Every Prayer?	321
Subtle False Church Teachings	324
Gathered to Your People	327
Jesus: King of the Jews	332
Last Will and Testament of Christ	336
The Old Testament Genealogies	341
Pentecost: The Misunderstanding	345
Our Mediator	348
Peace on Earth	350
Theological Slavery	353
The Supremacy and Sufficiency of Scripture	364
The Full Christian Life	374

## Salvation

### What is it?

Salvation is when a person is removed from the kingdom of Satan and placed into the kingdom of God by means of receiving the Lord Jesus Christ as personal savior. *Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: (Colossians 1:13, KJV)* When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, he became the substitute atonement for the people he came to save. *And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. (Matthew 1:21, KJV)* When a person became saved they are saved from the final penalty for sins. They no longer are under condemnation for sins but have eternal life. *Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. (John 5:24, KJV)* They shall never be judged for their sins.

### Where did my sins go upon salvation?

Here are some of the great promises from the Scriptures concerning the fate of our sins because of Calvary.

For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. (Hebrews 8:12, KJV)

And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. (Hebrews 10:17, KJV)

I, even I, am he that bloteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25, KJV)

And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Jeremiah 31:34, KJV)

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14, KJV)

As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12, KJV)

As you can see in these seven verses, the great promises that God gives us concerning the fate of our sins upon salvation in Christ. He will blot out our sins, He will never remember our sins and iniquities, our sins were nailed to the cross of Christ, and he not only blotted them out but he removed them from us. In other words, because of these promises of God, we will never have to worry that our sins will keep us out of Heaven. Since he removed our sins, there is nothing for him to judge us for because all our sins were paid for by the Lord Jesus Christ. This is why God can say the following found in Isaiah 55:1. *Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath*

*no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. (Isaiah 55:1, KJV)* The reason they can buy without money is because the price was already paid by Christ.

### Why is Salvation necessary?

Salvation is necessary because no one can get to Heaven without becoming saved in Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ is the only way to Heaven and although there are hundreds of religions out there none can get you to Heaven. *Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6, KJV)* Many religions believe they can bypass Jesus and go directly to the Father but that cannot and will never happen.

### Is Salvation a Process?

There are many world religions that claim you must go through certain rituals or you must adhere to their set of rules and regulations to get to Heaven. Salvation is not a process because a person becomes saved instantly. When a person receives the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal savior, they are saved at that moment for eternity. There is no process or procedures to follow since salvation is in God's hands and not ours. *But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay that that I have vowed. Salvation is of the LORD. (Jonah 2:9, KJV)* Back in the Old Testament in the book of Jonah, the prophet Jonah writes that salvation is of the Lord. It is verses like this which show how the Bible is one cohesive whole.

### Does Salvation Require any Good Works?

If salvation required a person to do any good works then salvation would be by works and not by grace. *8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 9 Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9, KJV)* The next question would be how many good works and what types of good works? No one can work for salvation because Christ paid the entire penalty for our sins. If a person believes they have to do good works for salvation, then they are basically stating that the sacrifice of Christ was not sufficient enough for our salvation and that man has to add to it. That would be tantamount to blasphemy because it was God the Son who removed our sins from us and to say that we could do a better job than he did is total wickedness. Now do good works play a part in the life of a Christian? *For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (Ephesians 2:10, KJV)* Once we become saved, then we partake in doing good works which could be giving to ministries or passing out tracts or some other type of ministry. This is why I included a chapter on spiritual gifts because it is these that the Lord gave to empower us and to engage in the right ministry which the Lord will guide us into according to the way He has gifted us.

### Must one Repent as a Requirement for Salvation?

Repentance means a "change of mind" toward something. When we repent of sins it means we have changed our minds about it. At one time we thought a particular sin was fine but when we became saved, we now realize that the sin was against the teachings of Scripture and we decide to never partake in that sin again. Now repentance for salvation would also constitute a work which means before I can become saved I must repent of my sins. This is also an error because a person before salvation is still dead in their sins

and therefore a dead person cannot do anything but be dead. *And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; (Colossians 2:13, KJV)* As we read in Colossians 2:13, a person before salvation is dead in their sins. Biblical repentance is also a gift from God and is another way of saying salvation. *In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; (2 Timothy 2:25, KJV)* In 2 Timothy 2:25, we read that it is God who gives repentance just as it is God who gives salvation. After a person becomes saved, then they are able to repent of their sins because they will have the ability to see that sinning in any form is wrong.

### How does a Person become Saved?

We have seen that a person cannot do any kind of good works to obtain salvation nor even repenting of their sins does not lead to salvation. The way a person becomes saved is through the grace of God. Now I mentioned grace in a previous section, so what is it? The technical meaning of grace is “the unmerited favor of God.” In other words, you were chosen by God not because you did something to deserve it but you were chosen because God has a plan for your life both here and in the next life. Why God chooses one and not another is a great mystery. All those who believe today and will believe in Christ in the future were chosen from before the foundation of the world. *According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4, KJV)* Therefore since God chose us before the foundation of the world, there is no such thing as us accepting Him. As you continue in your Christian walk you will hear phrases like “accept the Lord” or “ask him into your life, etc.” These are unbiblical and cannot be found anywhere in Scripture. Since God has named you for salvation before the foundation of the world, He has also named a certain time when you will become saved. For me I became saved when I was 27 years old. For everyone the timing may be different and the circumstances may be different. Some are saved within tragic circumstances and some are saved without any special or tragic circumstances. Salvation is in the hands of God and not ours.

Since Adam and Eve sinned the whole human race was plunged into sin and with that sin came spiritual death. The way God saves us is that those who are named for salvation at their appointed time God takes from the point of spiritual death and gives them their resurrected soul. The reason it is called a resurrected soul is because just like when someone is physically dead such as Lazarus in John 11 and Jesus raised him from the dead, that was called a “resurrection.” In like manner God takes our dead souls and raises them from the dead and indwells us with the Holy Spirit who gives us life eternal. *Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life. (2 Corinthians 3:6, KJV)* Once we are saved and have the Holy Spirit dwelling in us, then we have faith to believe in Christ because faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit. *But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, (Galatians 5:22, KJV)* Those who are not saved cannot believe in Christ and that is why when you speak with those who are unsaved they will look at you strange and not understand the things you are saying because those who are saved speak on a different level than those who are unsaved. So just to recap you become saved and then you receive your resurrected souls and you are indwelt by the Holy Spirit and you now have the ability to believe on

Christ and the things of God. This all takes place in an instant, at the moment of salvation. There is a group called charismatics who teach that a person does not receive the fullness of the Holy Spirit at salvation but it comes at a later time. This is false and unbiblical. *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: (Ephesians 1:3, KJV)* As you can read in Ephesians 1:3 that we have been blessed with “all” spiritual blessings, in other words, God did not withhold anything from us until a later time. He gave it all to us at the moment of salvation. We just learn to develop those blessings and use them as we go along in our Christian walk.

### Can we know we are saved?

There are many religions even churches who cannot guarantee you that you can know you are saved and some even claim you are arrogant if you claim you can know. These people who claim this walk in darkness because the Bible is very clear that we can know if we are saved. *These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. (1 John 5:13, KJV)* 1 John 5:13 states in no uncertain terms that we can know we are saved and the reason God wants us to know we are saved so we can be encouraged all the time we have on earth and not continue wondering if we are saved. The Bible is very supportive of those who are saved and continues to encourage us in our walk. So never let anyone tell you that you cannot know if you are saved because the Bible tells us that we can know and that strengthens the believer every single day. Another reason God wants us to know we are saved is because that knowledge propels us into continuing on in ministry without any apprehension.

### Can we lose our salvation?

One of the most evil beliefs which is courted by many Christians is the belief that one can lose their salvation. First of all a Christian did not work for their salvation and therefore cannot work to lose it. Secondly, the person who died on the cross was not just a mere man but the Son of God who took upon himself the sins of all those he came to save and we previously saw that all our sins were removed from us and that God has blotted out our sins for his sake. If all our sins are removed and blotted out, then how could we lose our salvation since sin is the only thing that can send a person to hell? The reality is the loss of salvation is nowhere found in the scriptures because it is a manmade teaching. Once God has saved us, we are saved for eternity.

The phrase “everlasting life” is used eleven times in the Scriptures: Daniel 12:2, Matthew 19:29; John 3:16; John 3:36; John 4:14; John 5:24; John 6:27; John 6:40; John 6:47; Acts 13:46; Romans 6:22. Look up each of these verses and familiarize yourself with them.

The phrase “eternal life” is used twenty six times in the Scriptures: Matthew 19:16; Mark 10:17; Mark 10:30; Luke 10:25; Luke 18:18; John 3:15; John 5:39; John 6:54; John 6:68; John 10:28; John 17:2; Acts 13:48; Romans 2:7; Romans 5:21; Romans 6:23; 1 Timothy 6:12; 1 Timothy 6:19; Titus 1:2; Titus 3:7; 1 John 1:2; 1 John 2:25; 1 John 3:15; 1 John 5:11; 1 John 5:13; 1 John 5:20; Jude 21. Look up these verses and familiarize yourself with them.

It is important to understand that we just listed eleven verses where the term “everlasting life” is found and twenty six verses where “eternal life” is found. This means that 37 verses mention eternal and everlasting life. If a person could lose their salvation, then these 37 verses would be a false teaching. If a person could lose their salvation, then these 37 verses should read “temporary” life. The great truth of scripture concerning eternal life for the Christian is that eternal life begins at the moment of salvation and not at the moment of physical death. What happens at physical death is that the soul returns to the Lord and our physical bodies get buried. When this happens, we will be more alive than we are right now because we will not have a body attached to us which lusts after sin. At this point let us look at some scripture verses which show plainly that a true Christian cannot lose their salvation.

All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. {38} For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. {39} And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. (John 6:37-39, KJV)

Here are some verses which plainly teach that the Lord Jesus will not lose one person plus He will not cast any out. Notice that in verse 37, there is no exception clause. Jesus states that He will cast none of His true children out because He is the one who bought them with his own blood. *Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. (Acts 20:28, KJV)* He doesn't say that if you do a certain sin or a number of sins, then you get thrown out. He will not cast out nor will He lose one soul.

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Peter 3:9, KJV)

This verse has been misused by all in the free will camp that it is God's will that no one should perish. It is used with the understanding that God doesn't want anyone going to hell and that is why a person needs to accept Christ. This verse is not speaking about a general call to mankind but is speaking about the elect of God. It is God's will that none of those He has chosen before the foundation of the world will perish. If God names a person to salvation, during their lifetime, God will intervene and save them. This is God's will, that none of His chosen will ever perish. This is why those who are truly saved will never be cast out or lost, because God's will for their lives is eternal salvation.

And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. (John 10:28, KJV)

This verse tells us that we have eternal life. The term “eternal life” as we previously saw is found 26 times in the New Testament. If the believer has eternal life, and we shall never perish, then how can some teach that we have temporary life in Christ? It is a wrong assumption on the part of many who feel they must work for their salvation. Eternal life begins at the moment a person becomes truly saved and not at the moment of

death. What looks like a person losing their salvation is when a person makes some kind of verbal profession and then they quickly go back into their former lifestyle, having never been truly regenerated. So those who believe that a person can lose their salvation looks at this person and thinks they have living proof of that teaching. The truth is, if a person never becomes saved, they cannot live the regenerated life. This verse also tells us that Jesus gives eternal life, that it is not something that we work for. No one shall pluck or take us out of the hand of the Lord Jesus either. This also means we cannot pluck ourselves out of His hand. Once we are given eternal life, there are no breaches in it nor any way to lose it.

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. (John 13:1, KJV)

In this verse we are reminded that Jesus loves His own. He is not saying that He loves everyone in the world but that He loves His own and He loves them unto the end. Whenever we see God or Jesus loving someone, it is always a synonym for salvation. The love of Christ for the believer continues into the new Heaven and the new Earth. There is not one passage in Scripture where it teaches that God loves the unbeliever. On the contrary, He hates the workers of iniquity. (*Psalm 5:5 KJV*) *The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity.* This verse is avoided by those who teach the universal love of God for all mankind. So when we compare the two Scriptures, we see that there is love for the believer but an abhorrence of the unbeliever. If a person could lose their salvation by sinning, then Jesus would not be able to love them to the end, then He would only be able to love them till their next sin. This is not taught anywhere in Scripture.

I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. (John 17:6, KJV)

I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. {10} And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them. (John 17:9-10, KJV)

Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; John 17:20, KJV)

These particular verses confirm what was taught in John 6:37-39. God the Father draws people to the Lord Jesus Christ and then they become saved. We also see that Jesus is praying for those who are His and He is not praying for the unbelievers. The Lord Jesus Christ is not glorified in the unbeliever but only in the believer. Jesus prays for the disciples plus He also includes those that will be saved through their word which points to future generations.

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, {39} Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39, KJV)

These are some of the most powerful verses in Scripture which teach that a believer can never be separated from God. This means that no matter what happens to the believer, they can never be separated nor lose their salvation. The love of God is a synonym for salvation as we have previously seen.

For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance. (Romans 11:29, KJV)

The term “without repentance” means “irrevocable.” When God saves someone, that calling and gift of salvation to that believer is not revocable. That is because God is only saving those whom He named before the foundation of the world. This is why salvation cannot be revoked. As stated previously, salvation is applied only to those whom God has chosen and salvation is not an “offer” to the world. The following three verses teach this truth very plainly.

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. (Revelation 13:8, KJV)

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17:8, KJV)

For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. (Hebrews 4:3, KJV)

Here are two verses from Isaiah which plainly teach that whatever God sets out to do, He will accomplish it and no one can thwart His plans.

For the LORD of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back? (Isaiah 14:27, KJV)

Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it? (Isaiah 43:13, KJV)

When He speaks of being delivered out of His hands, it means that nothing can be taken from Him. We saw this principle taught in John 6:37-39 that the Lord Jesus will lose no one. In Isaiah 43:13, “who shall let it” may be understood as “who can turn it back.” If God saves a person, then who, including that person that God saved, has the power to reverse God’s work? I don’t know anyone powerful enough to do that, do you? Certainly sin cannot hold more power than God. *Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: (Romans 5:20, KJV)* So here we see that not even sin has the power to fracture grace. Knowing this, how can a person believe that they can lose their salvation if they sin? They can believe it only through biblical ignorance or willful evasion of the truth.

For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: {9} Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9, KJV)

Here are probably two of the most used, yet misunderstood verses. Those who teach that you must accept Christ as Savior misuse the verse, although maybe not intentionally. There are many Pastors and Theologians who know that salvation is by grace alone yet attach a work to it. That work being a person having to take an action by “accepting Christ.” Even though it does not look like a work, yet in God’s sight, it is adding to the salvation plan. Any addition of even a minute’s work, makes it an adulterated grace. As we have previously seen that God applies the Grace of Salvation to those He has predestined and there is no work on the part of the individual receiving salvation. This means that if a person received salvation without the addition of any work, then there is no work that anyone can do to lose it. Sin is a work of evil, but nevertheless it is a work. Therefore since it is impossible to work for salvation, it is also impossible to lose salvation by any sinful work.

And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. (Ephesians 4:30, KJV)

This verse teaches us that the believer is sealed unto the day of redemption which will either be the return of the Lord or the believer’s home going. The term “grieve” carries with it the meaning of “sorrow.” We are being admonished to refrain from sin because sin grieves the Holy Spirit. If you notice, the Holy Spirit is grieved when we sin but the Scripture does not say that He will leave us if we sin. This is because we are eternally sealed by the Holy Spirit. If the Holy Spirit stays with us during a time of sin and does not leave us, that means we cannot lose our salvation, since He is still dwelling in us. Only those without the Holy Spirit are unsaved. *(Romans 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*

For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. (Colossians 3:3, KJV)

This verse teaches us that the believer has died and their life is now hidden in Christ. The believer’s identity is with the Lord Jesus Christ. The words “is hid” is the Greek word “krupto” which carries with it the meaning of “kept secret and kept safe.” So this verse is telling us that we are kept safe and secret in the Lord Jesus Christ. Remember the passages of John 6:37-39 where Jesus stated that He will lose none? Now we know why, because our eternal lives are kept safe and secret with the Lord Jesus Christ. How is it possible for sin to be able to break that safekeeping by eternal God Himself? It is impossible.

For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. (Hebrews 8:12, KJV)

And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. (Hebrews 10:17, KJV)

I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25, KJV)

And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Jeremiah 31:34, KJV)

I wish to repost four verses from a previous section which carry the theme of the impossibility of loss of salvation. These four verses all carry with them the same theme. When God forgives a person of their sins, He has elected to forget those sins. Nowhere in Scripture is it written that God chooses to remember our sins thus causing a loss of salvation. When God removes our sins, He annihilates them. In other words, they can never be held against us.

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14, KJV)

Notice in these verses we read that ALL trespasses have been forgiven, God's perfect and holy law was satisfied (handwriting of ordinances) which means there will be no more penalty for sins committed by a believer. Some will object by asking, "what about sins committed in the future?" When Colossians 2:13-14 was written, which was about 60-64 AD, where were you? You were not scheduled to be born for another 19 centuries. This would mean that all the sins you were forgiven for, were not even committed yet. Those sins that you are yet to commit in the future, have all been blotted out by Christ. When God applied grace to you, it carried the full effect of the atonement of Christ, which means every sin you have committed or will commit has been blotted out. You don't have a sin to your name before God. *And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God. (Revelation 14:5, KJV)* If you still cling to the belief that you can lose your salvation, then you are also under the belief that the atonement of Christ was insufficient, thereby, forcing you to save yourself. The idea of insufficient atonement is a blasphemy against Christ and God's salvation plan. To say that the sinless Christ can't save you but your sinful works can, is the height of evil arrogance.

But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; {13} From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. {14} For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. (Hebrews 10:12-14, KJV)

In these verses we read that the atonement of Christ perfected those who are sanctified. The term sanctified is another synonym for salvation. In Scripture, we only read of God sanctifying the believer. The Greek word which underlies "sanctified" is the same word for "holy." Never does God refer to an unbeliever as holy. The word "perfected" means to "make perfect, complete." This is what the Lord Jesus Christ did for the believer. We are now complete in Christ. The one sacrifice has perfected the believer forever. That eternal sanctification and completeness begins at the moment a person becomes saved and continues right into eternity. If a person could lose their salvation, that would mean

they would lose their holiness but this verse teaches that the perfecting is forever and not a temporary, intermittent time period.

To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, (1 Peter 1:4, KJV)

In this verse we read that a place is reserved for the believer in Heaven. The word “reserved” carries with it the meaning of “preserved.” Now if a believer could lose their salvation, why would God promise His children that there is a place reserved for them in Heaven? If salvation was in the hands of man, then God would be in Heaven waiting to see if a person makes it. He would not be able to promise that a place is reserved for anyone if they can lose their salvation for any reason. This verse is an assurance that since the Lord Jesus Christ atoned for the sins of His people, they are assured a place in Heaven.

Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. (1 Peter 1:5, KJV)

This verse teaches us that the believer is not on their own exercising their spiritual abilities. We learn that God “keeps” His children through His power. The word “kept” carries with it the meaning of “guarded” and is in the present tense. So here we have God guarding His children through His power. What power on earth is capable of superseding the power of God? I know of none. Sin can never be stronger than the power of God!

## How To Know If You Are Saved

By Dr. Ken Matto

(Mat 19:24-25 KJV) And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. {25} When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

(1 John 5:13 KJV) These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

One of the hardest subjects to write on is this one. This is because there is a danger that someone may compare themselves to one of the tenets and then simply claim they are saved. The subject of this article is a question which I have received from many people on wanting to know how they can know if they are truly saved. First of all, let me say that no one can see into the heart of another person. Only God is able to see as to whether a person is truly saved. I have heard many times the following statement which is normally published by ministries to show their effectiveness in proclaiming the Gospel. The statement goes like this, “we gave the invitation and saw many come up to receive Christ” or “the call went out and many accepted Christ as their Savior.”

The problem with these two statements is that what they were seeing is people come up and make a verbal profession at the time the message is preached. There is no doubt in my mind that when the gospel message is properly preached it will draw the Elect among the hearers and there will be some legitimate salvations. However, there will also be those among them who are making more of a show because they may be caught up in the moment but their profession is only vain words.

To say that a person becomes saved after saying a few words such as a sinner’s prayer or walks the aisle is a very erroneous practice. The actions taken by someone at a meeting or crusade is in no way an indicator of a person’s conversion to Christianity.

(Col 4:14 KJV) Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, greet you.

(Phile 1:24 KJV) Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellowlabourers.

(2 Tim 4:10 KJV) For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

Let us look at a glaring example in Scripture. Demas was a man who had been with the Apostle Paul and obviously was considered a saved person because Paul called him “fellowlabourer” in the book of Philemon. The books of Philemon and Colossians were probably written about 61-62 A.D. and the book of Second Timothy was written right before Paul was martyred which was in 64 A.D. This would mean that Demas had forsaken Paul about two years after Paul called him a fellowlabourer. This shows us that Demas had believed he was probably saved but as time wore on, he became less enthusiastic about the Gospel and more enthusiastic about the world. So what does this tell us in regards to a person being truly saved? One more example and I will tell you.

(Mat 7:17 KJV) Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

(Mat 7:20 KJV) Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

In the Sermon on the Mount, the Lord Jesus Christ was giving a principle on how you can tell if you are saved and if others are saved. This is important because like Paul, you may befriend someone who claims to be saved and then eventually falls away at a critical time since they were never truly saved. It is also important to know if we have become saved and this section of the Sermon on the Mount gives an indicator of whether we have been truly saved or religiously elated. Notice in Verse 17 the Lord speaks about a fruit tree bringing forth good fruit and a corrupt tree bringing forth evil fruit. Then in verse 20, He tells us that by this method you will be able to discern whether a person is saved or not.

The key to knowing whether you are saved or not, is not based upon the moment of some type of confession or commitment, but the key is what comes afterward. Your lifestyle after a confession or commitment is the determining factor to indicate whether you are saved or not. Going back to the good and evil fruits, each is a fruit which the Lord states comes from the tree. Normally it takes about five months for a tree to bear fruit, from blossom to harvest. This means that a person who claims to be saved is tested by time and not words. It takes a good year or two to determine whether a person is saved or whether they will go back into the world as Demas did who showed his true nature in two years and was so convincing that he even had the Apostle Paul fooled. However, this does not mean a person sits around waiting for a specific time. They can become involved immediately in the work of the Lord. Now let us look at a parable of Jesus which speaks of the same principle.

(Mat 13:3-8 KJV) And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow;

(Mat 13:37 KJV) He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The one who sows the good seed is the son of Man, that is, the Lord Jesus Christ. The seed is the Gospel.

{4} And when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up:

This group of seeds had fallen on top of the ground. This field was not tilled yet and therefore the seeds remained on top of the soil and as soon as the birds saw the seed, they swooped down and ate up all the seeds. This is what happens when a person is not prepared to receive the Gospel. Their heart is not open to the Gospel and Satan steals from them whatever seeds of truth that came their way. These are the non-elect of God whose heart remains hard against the Gospel.

{5} Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

The seed here fell on a thin layer of soil but there was not enough room below for the plants to grow long roots so they could be healthy plants. There was a little evidence of growth but the rocks underneath the soil prevented the seeds from becoming strong plants. This is the religious crowd which believes they are saved but they have no root in the Lord Jesus Christ. Their root is in religion or in the teachings of their church or radio/TV preacher.

{6} And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

Since these people were not rooted in the Lord Jesus Christ, when a temptation or a situation comes along, their religion was not strong enough to hold them as the Lord Jesus Christ holds His children. This results in them withering away. The word “wither” in the Greek means “dry up.” There is no water of the Gospel in them, so their religion fails them and they just fade away and lose their faith in their church and ultimately in Christ because the visible church represents the Lord Jesus Christ on earth. These are the same people who say, “why did God let this happen?”

{7} And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

(Mark 4:18-19 KJV) And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, {19} And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. The thorns are associated with the cares of this world, the riches of this world, and the lusts. The word “choked” in the Greek carries with it the idea of “overpower or kill.” These are the people who concern themselves more with the present day and are rank unbelievers and care only for the things of this world. They are part of the world system and care not for spiritual things and do not allow Gospel teachings to supersede their lust for wealth or pleasure.

8} But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

These are the people who have been “spiritually tilled” to receive the Gospel and as a result of their true conversion, they are rooted in the Lord Jesus Christ and their lives after salvation bring forth fruit according to ministry and ability the Lord places in them. If you notice in this parable, just like the fruit from the tree, that it takes time for the seeds to germinate and grow and bring forth fruit. So once again we have confirmation that salvation in a person’s life becomes apparent only after a period of time whereby one can evaluate their walk to see if they are truly in the faith.

### Summary

Just to briefly summarize this section, a person will know whether they are saved or not by the life they lead after a supposed moment of salvation. To say a few words or to sign some paper means nothing. One who is truly saved will give evidence of that salvation because their life will begin to show a proclivity toward the things of God and there will begin to be distance between them and the world system. This is known as sanctification, which evidences itself by a person who begins to care more for the things of God than the

world. This is why a person needs to belong to a Bible believing church so there is accountability and guidance for their Christian walk. The Internet or radio alone will not do it. There must be contact and interaction with other Christians.

---

At this juncture, I wish to offer some lifestyle indicators which show a transformed lifestyle. When a person becomes truly saved, a transformation will begin to take place. The place where it begins is in the mind first. The human mind has been called Satan's playground and it is the place where sin is planned and then the body carries out that sin. When a person becomes saved, they are translated from the kingdom of Satan to the Kingdom of God.

(Col 1:13 KJV) Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son:

The word "translated" in this verse simply means "to transfer or set in another place." We were removed from the kingdom of darkness and set in the Kingdom of God. At the moment of salvation, we received our resurrected or living souls. The souls we had in us were dead in sins and now they have been made alive. Along with our risen souls, we also have been given the mind of Christ. (1 Cor 2:16 KJV) For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ. This means our minds are no longer darkened according to spiritual deadness. (Eph 4:18 KJV) Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: The mind of Christ in us allows us to filter our desires and actions through a holy mind and no longer through a dead one. There is no sin that you have committed or will commit that has not had its birthplace in the mind. Now that we have the mind of Christ, we are able to make decisions in keeping with our Christian transformation.

Let us now turn to the tenets of the new life in Christ and compare them to our present life. Keep in mind that we do not live the Christian life perfectly but that is not an excuse to intentionally commit sin. It is because we are still in the flesh and that flesh, if not kept under control, can cause us to sin. (Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

Now I would like to turn to a number of Christian lifestyle principles which will help us discern our proof of being Christians. God does not want us running around wondering every minute as to whether we are saved or not because that would cause us to come to a complete halt in our Christian lives. Our goal is to continue on and progress daily in our Christian walk.

### **How do I view Sin?**

Before we were saved, we did not count anything we did as sin. In fact, if it brought us gratification, then there was no reason to stop. Now that we have become saved, is sin reprehensible to you? Do you attempt to avoid any situation which may lead you in to sin? (1 Th 5:22 KJV) Abstain from all appearance of evil. The Bible warns us that we are to even abstain, that is, to refrain or hold ourselves back from even the appearance of sinning. Have I completely renounced sin because it is that very thing which sent the Lord Jesus Christ to the cross. Now it must be realized that even as Christians we do sin

and sometimes fall into sin. When this happens, what is your attitude toward it? Do you seek to continue in sin or do you seek to cut off any further situations which may cause a repeat of that act? Do you feel bad after you sin? If you do, then you are grieving the Holy Spirit and must repent of any further possibilities of committing that same sin.

### **What am I doing now I didn't do a year ago?**

As we progress in our Christian walk, we will also grow in the ways that we perform our ministries. Do I notice an increased desire today to become more involved than I did a year ago? Has my ministry increased over what it was a year ago? (2 Cor 12:15 KJV) And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved. The apostle Paul had no problem being spent which carries with it the idea of being completely dedicated to the Lord Jesus Christ by means of ministering to the believers and even unbelievers in some cases.

### **Persistence or Perseverance**

Do I notice an increase in persistence when it comes to ministry? (Acts 14:19-20 KJV) And there came thither *certain* Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and, having stoned Paul, drew *him* out of the city, supposing he had been dead. {20} Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe. When the Apostle Paul was stoned and left for dead, he did not run away, instead after he revived, he went back into the city. If something like this happened to you and you were derided because of you being a Christian, would you shrink back or would you continue on in ministry. One of the major tenets of being a Christian is tenacity. When we meet opposition, we do not shrink back but we face it head on, and not only face it, but we move forward in spite of it. (Mark 13:13 KJV) And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. Those who are faithful to the point of losing their lives or continue to be spent for the Kingdom of God right to the day of their home going are giving major evidence they are saved.

### **Have I Grown in Sanctification?**

Sanctification is not only growing in the faith and farther from sin, but it is also a separation of ourselves from the things of the world. For example, now that you have become saved, do you find that the things of the world are less interesting? Let us say that you were a sports fanatic, do you presently find yourself with more of a desire to involve yourself with ministry instead of hours in front of a TV watching sports? If you have begun to see a fading of what you were obsessed with before salvation and now have an increased desire for things of ministry, then you are growing in sanctification. Sanctification is basically dedicating yourself to whatever or whoever pervades your life. If you have been saved for some time and your desire for the things of God have not increased, then you need to check that. It may be you never became saved or you may have just adopted the "go to church and that's all" mentality which is found nowhere in the Bible. Basically, do you find less thrill with the things of the world and more thrill with the things of God?

### **Ministry Desires**

Do I have an increasing desire to reach the lost for Christ? Do I have a desire to minister to others in the body of Christ? Am I making myself available for Kingdom work? (1 Pet

4:10 KJV) As every man hath received the gift, *even so* minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. Ministry is not an option in the Kingdom of God. If there is no desire to perform any kind of ministry, then that shows a dead spirit and that salvation is absent. The greatest part of Christianity is ministering to others and reaching the Elect of God through evangelism.

### **Do I desire the company Christians more?**

Have I begun to exchange the group of people I spend time with? Do I still desire the company of the world or is there a desire to spend more time with the people of God? (1 Pet 4:4 KJV) Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with *them* to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of *you*. If there is one thing we can count on, it will be worldly friends who will begin to distance themselves from us because of our salvation. This does not mean we cannot remain friends but this means we do not partake in the same things we did when we were unsaved. The unsaved crowd will bring a Christian down and then accuse that Christian of being no different. This is why we must distance ourselves from worldly friends. When I became saved, my drinking buddies said “I went off the deep end.” Separation from the ways of worldly friends will be a big step in the reduction of many temptations in your life.

### **Do you study your Bible regularly?**

For a Christian to live a victorious life, it is necessary for them to study their Bible. The Bible is our guidebook for Christian living because it contains the mind of God for the things He has chosen to reveal to us. Do you have a continuing desire to read and study the Bible? At this point do not concern yourself with you do not know in the Bible, concern yourself with what you do know! Do you know more of the Bible than you did a month ago? Do you know more today than you did a year ago? Do you shun Bible study for any excuse? Do you fear what you will find in the Bible? Are you able to understand what you read? This question is serious because God gave us the Holy Spirit to give us understanding in the Bible and if you are not gaining any understanding, then you may not have the Holy Spirit which means you may still be unsaved. (Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

### **Do you give of your finances?**

Have you committed a portion of your finances for the purpose of supporting mission efforts? Do you struggle with giving? Do you make excuses as to why you cannot give or better yet, why you will not give? The Lord knows that we need money to live in this world and He does not expect you to sign over your whole paycheck but He does expect you to be a faithful steward of His money, which also means not going into unnecessary debt. God funds ministry through His children and when His children do not give, God has the right to withhold blessings from that person. Giving finances is the easiest ministry yet it is the hardest.

### **Have you produced any Fruit?**

(John 15:8 KJV) Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. One of the principles of the Christian life is that of “spiritual reproduction” which is the bringing of others into the Kingdom of God. The fruit that we produce is other believers. Now we will not be leading every single person we speak to into

salvation because salvation is given by the Lord and not by us coaxing or begging. Our responsibility is to send forth the Gospel within the confines of the ministry the Lord has given us. We are to be faithful stewards of the Gospel and we must always be ready when opportunity to present the Gospel arises. A Christian who preaches the true Gospel will bear much fruit in contrast to the false gospels which cannot save yet is prevalent in many churches. We must always make sure that we are proclaiming the true Gospel because a person's soul is at stake. If your life is void of any fruit because it is void of any type of ministry, then that needs to be checked very carefully.

### **Have you faced any persecution in any form?**

(2 Tim 3:12 KJV) Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. If there is one thing that a true Christian will face, it is persecution. If you have never faced any opposition to your ministry from the unsaved, then your ministry is in harmony with the world. All the Apostles faced persecution and all but John were martyred. In the Middle Ages, true Christians were martyred for their faith as they went against the Roman Catholic Institution. One such group which faced horrible persecution was the Waldensians of southern France. Then there were martyrs like Nicholas Ridley, John Hus, William Tyndale, many thousands more not known to us but known to God. If you face no opposition, then you are still in harmony with the world.

### **Have I joined up with a good church?**

One thing a true Christian does is to join a good church for the purpose of having fellowship with the body of believers. Christians who refuse to go to a church will suffer from being alone. We go to not only hear the word of God proclaimed, but also to exercise our spiritual gifts within the church thus blessing other Christians. We also have the opportunity in a church to train the next generation. (Acts 13:36 KJV) For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: David had served his generation and as believers we are to seek opportunities to serve ours and the local church is one place we can do that. If you have become saved and are still a member of a dead church, then you must come out from there or you will stagnate in your Christian walk. You must be very discerning in choosing a church because many churches have become apostate as they care more for the things of the world than the things of Christ. If you cannot find a true church, then do not join any church just to be a part of one because an apostate church and its teachings will destroy your faith.

### **Do you have an increased desire to do the will of God?**

When a person first becomes saved, they may not immediately know the will of God for their life. In His timing, God will eventually reveal where He has empowered you to work in the Kingdom. When He does, will you have the increased desire to seek the ministry God has for you or do you simply have a desire to go to church and do nothing beyond that? It is unfortunate that apathy runs high among Christians but apathy may also be a sign of someone being unsaved. If you do not have the desire to become involved, then you need to check that. Even a person who is saved for one day can hand out tracts with other believers and if someone questions you, then bring one of the more mature believers to speak to them while you listen.

### **Are you looking forward to the return of the Lord?**

As a Christian, you should be looking forward to the return of Christ. We look forward to the return of Christ because that moment signals the end of all suffering, sin, pain, and persecution. If you are not looking forward to His return because you fear you are not saved or you have not done enough for the Kingdom, then you need to check that. The thief on the cross did nothing and went to Heaven that very day. (Luke 23:43 KJV) And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. Your salvation is not based on what you do but what Christ did. However, we cannot use the thief on the cross as an excuse for being lazy in ministry. If you fear the return of the Lord, then you may still be hanging on to this world just as Demas did. (2 Tim 4:10 KJV) For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia. He will stand before the Lord on Judgment Day unless he became saved later. If you too love this world and its systems, then that is an indicator you are unsaved.

### **Do you desire to know more about God each day?**

How is your hunger to know God better each day? Do you have an ongoing desire to increase your relationship with Christ each day, that is, to become more obedient to Him and closer as a son is to a father. (James 4:8 KJV) Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse *your* hands, *ye* sinners; and purify *your* hearts, *ye* double minded. As we become closer to the Lord, He becomes closer to us! If you fear that relationship, then you are walking with the world and against Christ.

### **Do you have a servant's heart?**

Do you increasingly seek to serve others? The Lord Jesus Christ showed us that He came to serve by washing the feet of the disciples. The Apostle Paul was happy to give his life in service to other believers. One of the greatest tenets of Christianity is service to others. Do you see yourself as a servant or do you feel that you should be served? The latter is an attitude prevalent in this world. If servanthood is not your cup of tea, then maybe you are still drinking the Kool Aid of the world.

### **Do you find yourself obeying God's word or opposing it?**

When you find something in the word that specifically applies to you, do you accept it and adopt it, or do you fight against it by twisting the meaning or just outright rejecting it? God's word is not only for us to get to know Him better but it is also a guide to correct us and prevent us from sinning by correcting any wrong doctrines or principles. (2 Tim 3:16 KJV) All scripture *is* given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: The rejection of anything taught in the Bible that we do not like is evidence we are walking with the world and not the Lord.

### **Do you find that you are overcoming temptation easier now than a year ago?**

One of the tenets of the true Christian life is that as we grow in the faith, it becomes easier to identify temptation and reject it. As we continue to grow in the faith, it must be realized that Satan will never abandon his attempt to derail the Christian. (2 Cor 2:11 KJV) Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices. As we grow in the faith, then we are able to identify a possible temptation which will really be a trap of Satan to help ruin our testimonies. If Satan can get us to sin by tempting us,

then he will build a power base in our lives where it will be hard for us to reject the temptation. This is why the moment that we realize a temptation is headed our way, we reject it immediately, so Satan is unable to build that power base in our life. As Christians, we have two natures. One is the resurrected soul which is where salvation has taken place and is sinless because it has been redeemed. The second nature is our sinful nature which resides in our flesh. (Rom 7:18 KJV) For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but *how* to perform that which is good I find not.

Our flesh was not redeemed in our salvation and therefore the sin desire still dwells in the flesh. This is why there is such a war in the believers' life. The sinless soul desires purity and the sinful flesh desires gratification. This is why we have to be very careful that we do not serve the flesh. If a person, who claims to be saved does not have a conscience toward committing sin or yields easily to temptation without regret, then that gives evidence that a person is still unsaved. If your flesh and your spirit are still in harmony, then that is evidence transformation did not take place which means salvation did not take place. God has allowed the believer to have this war in their body so we are able to tell that we have truly become saved. Since we have a resurrected soul and are alive unto God, it should become harder to sin because we are able to spot the devices of Satan.

### Summary

We have looked at seventeen tenets of the true Christian faith. While they will not all be matured quickly, they are nevertheless part of the Christian walk. Some people claim to have a salvation experience and then continue to walk with the world. You will hear some say, "I got saved when I was younger but I walked away." The reality is that they were never saved. You don't walk away from salvation, you grow up in it. If there is no spiritual growth at all, then there is no salvation. These seventeen tenets have one thread in common and that is attitude or mindset. If we claim salvation and do nothing, then we are proving we do not have salvation. (James 2:17 KJV) Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. What James is telling us is that those who have truly become saved, will manifest that salvation by building upon that faith. In other words, if you are saved, your works will show it. These seventeen works listed above will give a good determination as to whether you have really become saved or not. As I stated at the beginning, it is hard for a person to write on this subject because no human can tell the heart of another human, only God can do that, however, Jesus did tell us that we will know them by their fruits, whether they are good or bad?

## Salvation Acceptance or Application?

By Dr. Ken Matto

### Part 1

(John 6:44 KJV) No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

(Rev 22:17 KJV) And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Over the past years there has been a serious decrease in Bible centered teachings in the Christian church and a serious increase in the teachings of man. One aspect of this shift is found in the understanding of salvation. In this treatise I am going to focus on the initial point of salvation. There are two major schools of thought on the understanding of salvation, that is, how a person becomes saved. One line of thinking is that a person comes to the Lord and seeks to become saved by making Christ Lord of their life. The second line of thinking is that God simply takes the Gospel and applies it to those He has named before the foundation of the world and these people do not ask for salvation but something happens whereby they know they have become transformed. My personal testimony aligns with the second line of thought. I never asked for salvation, but God gave it to me.

### My Personal Testimony

In August 1980, on a Saturday afternoon, I was flipping around the TV channels and came upon Channel 17 from Philadelphia, PA and it came in great. I received it on a small black and white TV with rabbit ears and at that time I lived in Edison, NJ which was 65 miles north of Philly. On the screen was Dr. Jack Van Impe who was speaking about prophecy and the coming invasion of Israel by Russia. It caught my attention so I watched the program and sent for the records and books. I had become a faith partner and started watching the program steadily every Saturday. At this time I was still drinking but God was drawing me and it was sometime in December 1980 that I knew I had become saved and God took away every desire for alcohol in an instant. The last drink I had was January 1, 1981 and after that I never had a desire for even a beer. Then on January 20, 1981, I met the man who disciplined me. He was hired a few days before and was let go about a year later but He received a better job closer to home but the connection was made. I live 8/10 of a mile from him now. That is how I became saved as the Lord drew me in salvation and took away the desire for alcohol. Let me just give one more point here. When I was 12 years old in 1965, I had a small crystal AM radio that I bought from Spencer Gifts for \$1.99. I would clip it to the screw on the plate of the electric outlet and that made the whole house the antenna. On Sunday night I would listen and would receive WOR 710 AM from New York very clearly. Every Sunday night there was a program with Blind Evangelist Ralph Montanus and it was from him that I heard the true Gospel for the first time in my life but it was not till I was 27 when the Lord saved me. (1 Cor 3:6 KJV) I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. I did not fall down and beg for salvation nor did I have any great catharsis of tears, yet I knew I had been saved because there was a transformation which took place at that time. All my drinking buddies thought I had gone off the deep end. They were right, I did go off the

deep end and it was "Deeper, Deeper, In the Love of Jesus" the title of the hymn by Charles P. Jones from 1900.

### **Man's Spiritual Condition**

For one to understand man's ability to ask for salvation, they must understand from which point man would be asking for salvation. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve had sinned which resulted in both physical and spiritual death. Spiritual death was instantaneous while physical death became a process of degeneration of the physical body which eventually lead to its demise. As a result of Adam and Eve's sin, the sin nature has been passed down from generation to generation and there is no one who is bypassed.

Man is a tripartite being which consists of body, soul, and spirit. In the sin of Adam and Eve, they suffered spiritual death immediately, that is, fellowship with God was broken and they were now at enmity with God. Their soul was maintained because the soul of man is the bridge between the spiritual life of the person and their physical body. The soul gives a person their physical life and then delivers their personality and other traits. When the soul is disconnected from the Spirit of God, the result is only a physical outlook on life, that is, the things of the world are the main focus. Before Adam and Eve sinned, their souls were in perfect harmony with God because there was no sin to cause a break in the fellowship. The unsaved man has a soul which God allows so he or she can have physical life but they are disconnected from God because of sin. (Isa 59:2 KJV) But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid *his* face from you, that he will not hear. We see this principle in the New Testament. (Rom 2:9 KJV) Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; Notice it speaks about tribulation and anguish upon the soul of everyone who does evil. The unbeliever will suffer for their sins, in this world their sin will create anxiety, confusion, disorder, and many other things but if they remain unsaved, they will lose their soul in Hell.

(1 Th 5:23 KJV) And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Thessalonians 5:23 speaks about the believer being completely sanctified until the Lord returns. The spirit will be blameless because it is the indwelling Holy Spirit in the believer which regenerates the soul thus causing the body to be used in a proper manner and one that is not given over to sin. This is because the soul of man is now reconnected to God by means of the Holy Spirit causing the believer to be a full tripartite being once again, lacking nothing in their spiritual walk.

The reality of man's spiritual condition is found in three main verses in the book of Ephesians, one in Colossians, and one in Romans.

(Rom 6:13 KJV) Neither yield ye your members *as* instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive  
from the dead, and your members *as* instruments of righteousness unto God.

(Eph 2:1 KJV) And you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins:

(Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved:)

(Eph 5:14 KJV) Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

(Col 2:13 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you  
all trespasses;

The Greek word for “dead” used in these five verses is “νεκρός (nekros) which means dead, lifeless, or useless.” These five verses teach plainly that prior to salvation a person is spiritually dead. Just as a physical body lies dead after death, the spiritual death which has been passed down from Adam and Eve causes every non-regenerated person to remain in a state of spiritual death. A person who is physically dead has no knowledge of anything around them because they are dead. A person who is spiritually dead has no knowledge of anything spiritual because they are spiritually dead, even though they are physically alive.

### **Seeking God**

One of the aspects of believing a person can accept Christ is the belief that a person is seeking after God for salvation. This belief may become intensified if a person is in some type of problematic situation. If one listens to a show like Unshackled, then you will believe that a person can accept Christ after they seek God while in their situation. Let us test that by Scripture, which is always the standard.

(Psa 14:2-3 KJV) The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, *and seek God.* {3}

They are all gone aside, they are *all* together become filthy: *there is none that doeth good, no, not one.*

(Psa 53:2-3 KJV) God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were *any* that did understand, that did seek God. {3}

Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; *there is none that doeth good, no, not one.*

(Rom 3:11 KJV) There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

In three separate Scriptures we read that there is none who seeks after God and there is no qualifier or exception to that rule. If a person becomes saved in a time of troubles, then that was their time selected by God and not by them. The Scriptures bear this out that none seek after God. Why? A spiritually dead person can do nothing except be dead. The Scripture also teaches they do not understand, so how could one understand their need for a Savior if the spiritually dead person is unable to understand?

## Who Seeks Who?

Now let us look at the other side of that question and ask who seeks who? Since a spiritually dead person is incapable of seeking after God, people are becoming saved every day, so how is that possible? Once again we must turn to the Scriptures to gain our answer.

(Ezek 34:11 KJV) For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I, *even* I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out.

(John 6:37 KJV) All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.

(John 10:27-28 KJV) My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: {28} And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

In Ezekiel 34:11, we have a great promise that it is God who will seek out His sheep and that promise culminates in the New Testament. Then when God seeks out His sheep according to the names He wrote down before the foundation of the world, they are given to the Lord Jesus Christ according to John 6:37. Then in John 10:27-28, we see the result of being given to the Lord Jesus Christ and we must look at the language very carefully. First of all, the sheep hear His voice. The word in the Greek for “hear” means to “hear with understanding.” Since they hear with understanding, it means their spiritual ears have been opened. Next you will notice that Jesus knows them, not the other way around. Since they follow the Lord Jesus because they are now His disciples and He gives eternal life unto them plus they are eternally secure because no one can pluck them out of the hands of Jesus. So here we see that it is God who does the seeking and not man.

## Understanding our Situation

There is another misconception concerning salvation and that is a person needs to understand their sinful condition so they may make a decision for Christ. The problem with this is that understanding does not bring about a solution. For example, a person is diagnosed with cancer and after they have a discussion with their doctor, they understand a little about their disease. When does a person know they have cancer? They know after the doctor diagnoses it. When do they have understanding? After they speak to the doctor. Now the same principles apply to the spiritual realm. When does a person know they are a sinner? After their spiritual eyes are opened. When do they have understanding that they were a sinner? After they have become saved does a person see their true spiritual condition before salvation.

(1 Cor 2:14 KJV) But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned.

1 Corinthians 2:14 speaks about the natural man not receiving the things of the Spirit of God. The word for “know” is the word “ginosko” which carries with it the meaning of “be conscious of, understand, or become aware.” We have already read that the natural man is physically alive but spiritually dead. So he is dead to the things of the Spirit of

God because being spiritually dead, the things of the Spirit can only be understood when one is saved and indwelled by the Holy Spirit. So therefore, a person cannot come to an understanding of their sinful condition unless they have become already saved and then they will understand what they were saved from.

(Psa 14:2 KJV) The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, *and* seek God.

(Psa 53:2 KJV) God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were *any* that did understand, that did seek God.

(Rom 3:10-11 KJV) As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: {11} There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after  
God.

In Psalm 14 and 53, God wrote as one looking down to see if there is anyone on earth who understands and seeks God. This teaching is also repeated in Romans which means it is applicable to every human on earth and not just ancient Israel in David's time. The reality is that God is the one who is saying that there is no one who understands and when God says no one, He is not making exceptions for anyone, He means no one because as we have seen the spiritually dead cannot understand the things of God and therefore they go their own way in their own understanding.

(Prov 28:5 KJV) Evil men understand not judgment: but they that seek the LORD understand all *things*.

The wicked man does not understand what justice is simply because his heart is not inclined toward justice. His ways are contrary to the laws of God and the laws of the land. Those who break the laws will not understand what they are doing because they do not care. They may know they are breaking the law and they do not investigate the penalties involved for breaking these laws. Those who seek the Lord, and only the saved do, will understand the severe consequences for breaking the law. Not only do they understand the temporary penalties but they know the eternal penalty of breaking the law of God. One seeks the Lord because they are saved and want to know more and therefore when they study the Scriptures, they understand all things pertaining to the law and justice. They know that temporary gain is nothing compared to eternal loss.

(Isa 6:8-9 KJV) Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here *am* I; send me. {9} And  
he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.

(Mat 13:14-15 KJV) And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye  
shall see, and shall not perceive: {15} For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their  
eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see  
with *their* eyes and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with

*their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

God had sent Isaiah to the nation of Judah to bring the Word of God but God had warned him that they would hear his words but would not understand. When the Lord Jesus Christ came on the scene, He ran into the same situation. They were spiritually dead and because of this they would hear the words of Christ but would not understand them. It is the same situation today because nothing has changed. We will bring the Gospel and people will physically hear the words being preached but will not understand. The natural, that is, unregenerate man cannot understand the things which are spiritual unless they become saved.

(Dan 12:9-10 KJV) And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words *are* closed up and sealed till the time of the end. {10} Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.

One last verse and there are many others which speak about the unregenerate who will not understand. Daniel is speaking about the entire New Testament period which is called the last days. (Heb 1:2 KJV) Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Hebrews 1:2 confirms that we are in the last days from the time of the cross to the last day. This means that during this time period, the wicked will not understand the Gospel. Daniel speaks about many being purified and made white and that is language of salvation but in contrast to those who will become saved, the wicked will remain in darkness and the things of the Spirit will be kept from them and only revealed to those who became saved.

So we have seen in many verses that those who are unsaved will be unable to understand. That non-understanding includes all of the things of the Spirit. They will not be able to understand their spiritual condition because that is spiritually discerned. We have the evidence of Scripture that states the unsaved will not understand anything pertaining to the things of God as long as they are in an unregenerate state. So the idea that a person has to understand their present condition to make a decision for Christ is absolutely foreign to the Bible.

### **Whosoever? Will?**

Another total misconception concerning salvation is the absolute misuse and misunderstanding of the word “whosoever.” It is a shame that preachers and Christians in general will not look at the this word in the original languages to gain an understanding. The word “whosoever” is found in both the Old and New Testament and in neither language does it have a meaning of any person at any time. The free will preachers like to tout this word as meaning a person can come to Christ for salvation at any time they choose. That English interpretation of the word “whosoever” is an absolute deception to true translation and its meaning. It is another case of preachers twisting words to make them say whatever they want it to. How come preachers never twist biblical words when it comes to tithing?

### The Old Testament

The word “whosoever” in the Hebrew Scriptures is the word “kô l” which is used over 5,000 times. It carries with it the meaning of “totality, whole, entire, or all.” Other uses of the word beside “whosoever” is “any, whoever, wherever, or none.” The translation of the word depends upon the context where it is used. Examples are found below in Exodus 35:5 and Deuteronomy 6:5.

(Exo 35:5 KJV) Take ye from among you an offering unto the LORD: whosoever is of a willing heart, let him bring it, an offering of the LORD; gold, and silver, and brass,

(Deu 6:5 KJV) And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

### The New Testament

The word “whosoever” in the New Testament is the Greek word “pas” which is used over 1,200 times. It carries with it the meaning of “all, everyone, every, each, or everything.” The translation of this word depends upon the context of the passage where the word is used. As you can see in the three examples below, that if you were to use “all or everyone” in place of whosoever, you would come to the same understanding of the passages. If you used the same meaning the free will preachers give it, it would totally destroy the meaning of the passages. John 3:16 is not an offer of the Gospel but it is a declaration that those who are saved, will never perish and are given everlasting life.

(John 3:16 KJV) For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

(Gal 5:4 KJV) Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

(1 John 3:6 KJV) Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

Now there is one verse which seems to be saying that a person can be willing to come to the Lord Jesus Christ. It is Revelation 22:17 where “pas” is not used.

(Rev 22:17 KJV) And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

The Greek word behind “whosoever will” is the word “thelo” which means, “desire, to wish to have, to be willing, or to purpose to do.” So it does sound like there is a verse which is teaching that a person can come in their free will. Right? Well, not really. Look carefully at this passage and you will see the word “heareth.” It is the word “akouw” in the Greek which carries with it the meaning of “hearing with understanding.” Remember what we found before concerning those who can and cannot understand? The unsaved will not understand but only the saved will understand. Look at the first part of the verse. Who is calling the people to come? It is the Spirit of God who is doing the calling along with the bride, who is the body of believers. Based upon what we have already studied,

who are the ones who hear? It is the believers. Who are the ones who are athirst for God? It is the believers because the unbelievers do not understand and in their spiritual deadness only walk according to the course of this world. (Eph 2:2 KJV) Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: This is what the believer had been saved out of. Rev. 22:17 is a verse which is evangelism based. The Holy Spirit indwelling the believer gives them the Gospel message to send out and only those who have been qualified by God to hear and understand, that is, having their spiritual ears opened, will come to God. Only those who are saved will thirst for God and take the water of life freely, which is the Gospel. (John 4:14 KJV) But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. So Revelation 22:17 cannot be used as a proof text for the free will Gospel simply because it is not teaching that, yet, free will preachers use it without really knowing what it means. The scary thing is that these free will preachers do this to the whole Bible just to bring it under a biased system of beliefs instead of allowing the Bible to speak for itself.

### **Salvation of Babies**

This subject is probably one of the most touchiest but we cannot run away from it, so we must face it. Babies are part of the human race because they are born into the human race and they grow up to be adults. The question has long raged on as to the eternal fate of a baby if they die. The pat answer given by emotionally based people is that they automatically go to Heaven. The Biblical answer is that if they are God's Elect, named before the foundation of the world, then they go right into the presence of the Lord. If they are not the Elect of God, then they will be raised on the last day to stand for judgment. If a baby is non-elect, then no matter if they live to be 100 years old, they will not become saved.

(Psa 58:3-5 KJV) The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies. {4} Their poison *is* like the poison of a serpent: *they are* like the deaf adder *that* stoppeth her ear; {5} Which will not hearken to the voice of charmers, charming never so wisely.

Since babies are part of the human race, they also inherit the sin nature. Psalm 58:3-5 tells us how God views the wicked which come right from the womb. He likens them to poisonous snakes because they start lying as soon as they leave the womb. In other words, no baby is born innocent of original sin, they are all born in sin. (Psa 51:5 KJV) Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me. Wait a minute, David's mother and father were married when they bore David. So what is he speaking of? He is speaking of the fact that he was shaped or formed in iniquity and that he was born sinful because he received the sin nature at birth. Psalm 51 is David's admission of guilt with Bathsheba and its grievous consequences. Even though he was saved, he still refers back to the time when he was still a baby in the womb with a sin nature. Therefore, if a baby is just conceived in sin, from the moment they are forming into a person from a zygote, they have the sinful nature which means they are born in sin and not innocent or pure or under the blood of Christ.

## Free Will

The major premise upon which the idea of “accepting Christ” is built is the misconception that a person has free will. Below is the dictionary definition of free will which pretty much describes the free will concept which is preached today.

1: voluntary choice or decision \*I do this of my own free will\*

2 : freedom of humans to make choices that are not determined by prior causes or by divine intervention

Now free will must be understood in two ways, the physical and the spiritual.

Physical - A person is free to choose what kind of car to buy, what to eat for lunch, what color clothes to put on, etc. These things are done with the intelligence which God gave the human race.

Spiritual - A person is not free to choose God because the human race was plunged into spiritual death and dead people can do nothing except be dead.

(Rom 6:17-18 KJV) But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. {18} Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

Let us look at the revealing condition of man both before and after salvation. Verse 17 teaches us that before salvation, that is, man in his unsaved state was a servant of sin. The word servant in both verses is the Greek word “doulos” which can also be translated as “slave.” So before salvation a person is a slave to sin. Now what will does a slave have? The slave has only the will of his master.

(Mat 20:25 KJV) But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

In Matthew 20:25, the word in the Greek for “dominion” is the word “katakuriouō” which carries with it the meaning of “to be master over or exercise lordship.” So the princes of the Gentiles, that is, the unbelievers are their masters and to disobey would mean death. So here is an example of what we find in Romans 6:17 concerning the slaves or servants of sin. The unbeliever is a slave of sin which means they serve sin.

Now in Romans 6:18, we read that when a person becomes saved, they are no longer a slave of sin, instead they are a servant or slave of righteousness.

(Rom 6:14 KJV) For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

The word “dominion” in the Greek is related to the word in Matthew 20:25. It is the word “kurieuō” which means “control, rule over, be lord over.” So sin shall not have dominion over the saved, and conversely, sin rules over the unsaved.

Now let us go back to the subject of a free will. What we have seen totally rejects the idea of a free will. First of all, those who are unsaved are enslaved to sin, and secondly, those who are saved are slaves or servants of righteousness. In either case, there is no freedom of the will. Man is not free because the sin of Adam and Eve plunged the whole human race into slavery to sin. Therefore, it is an absolute deception to believe a person has a free will since this cannot be proven by Scripture only imagined through the pride of man.

Now let us go back quickly to the second definition given by the 2003 Merriam Webster Dictionary.

2 : freedom of humans to make choices that are not determined by prior causes or by divine intervention

People look at salvation and believe they can make a decision for Christ. The second definition states that a choice can be made without prior cause or divine intervention. Let us see if that is true. What happened in the Garden of Eden? Adam and Eve sinned which caused the entire human race to be plunged into spiritual darkness or death by God. The reason that a person cannot make a decision for Christ is because the sin of Adam and Eve (prior cause) brought about judgment by God that the human race was now in spiritual death (divine intervention). So therefore, there is no such thing as free will. We are either slaves of sin or slaves of righteousness which means we serve the master to which we are presently bound.

### **First Summary**

We have come a distance and we have not twisted any Scripture nor have we fabricated any meanings. What we have discovered is that the unsaved person, who is in a state of spiritual death cannot make a decision for Christ.

1. Man is spiritually dead.
2. Man cannot seek God nor does he want to.
3. Man cannot understand their spiritual condition until they are saved.
4. Whosoever will does not mean any time or any place I choose to accept Christ.
5. Man is a slave to sin which means his will is also in bondage.
6. Free will is not taught in the Scriptures which means it is a created belief.

Since we have seen that man is totally incapable of making some type of decision for Christ, we can now safely conclude that according to the Scriptures, salvation is not by “acceptance.”

## Salvation Acceptance or Application?

### Part 2

We have discovered in part 1 that according to the Scriptures, an unsaved person is totally incapable of making a decision for Christ because of their dead spiritual condition. Now because of this situation, God has a salvation plan whereby He has and continues to save people every day. The Lord Jesus Christ came into the world for the purpose of dying for His people.

(Mat 1:21 KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

Matthew 1:21 gives the specific reason that Christ came into the world and that is to save His people. He did not come into the world to pay for the sins of every human being or else everyone in the world, past and present, would be saved. He came for a specific group of people and that was the Christians. Let us now look at God's biblical salvation plan and not an imagined one.

### Named Before the Foundation of the World

The Bible teaches us that before the foundation of the world, God had named those He planned on saving. Why He chose to save some and not others is a mystery and I will not even delve into any speculation on this subject. The fact is that God had named those He planned on saving.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

Twice in the book of Revelation we read that names were written in the Lamb's Book of Life and these will not worship the beast because they have been saved out of the Kingdom of Satan and worship God. Now about 65 years before Revelation was written, Jesus had spoken these words to His disciples.

(Luke 10:20 KJV) Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

Jesus gave them authority over the powers of evil but He told them not to rejoice in that fact, but to rejoice in the fact that their names were written in Heaven. This means that they were written in the Lamb's Book of Life. Now here is an interesting fact. Judas was one of the twelve and walked with Jesus for the three and a half years. Judas was the only one of the disciples who was unsaved. He was with Jesus day and night and even saw the miracles which He did, yet Jesus did not save him. Why didn't Jesus save him? The answer is that his name was not written in the Lamb's Book of Life, so Judas could not

have become saved. Now since we know that those whom God planned to save are named, this would mean that those who are not named cannot become saved because the book was completed before the foundation of the world, that is, before one person was created.

Now as we continue on in searching out God's biblical salvation plan, we are going to look at a number of words which deal directly with the salvation plan. The words are Predestinate, Called, Elect, Foreknowledge, and Chosen. These five words form the initial part of God's salvation plan. What we want to do is look at these words and see how they reveal aspects of God's salvation plan.

### **Foreknowledge**

I started out with foreknowledge because the foreknowledge of God is related to the fact that He wrote many names in the Lamb's Book of Life. So this would constitute foreknowledge as to those He is going to save.

(Rom 8:29 KJV) For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

The word "foreknow" is from the Greek word "proginosko" which means "to know beforehand." Salvation is not a random thing. God already knew the names of those He was going to save. This means that it is not left up to man who is going to accept Christ or not. As we saw in part 1, there is no way a spiritually dead person can accept Christ.

### **Predestinate**

The next word we are going to look at is "predestinate." That word is a forbidden word in the majority of churches. The word behind predestinate in the Greek is the word "proorizō" which means "appoint or determine beforehand."

(Rom 8:29-30 KJV) For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. {30} Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

Those whom God foreknew before the foundation of the world have been predestinated unto salvation. Now let us look at Romans 8:29. I have heard many free will preachers try to explain away the word "predestinate" by stating that we are predestinated to be conformed to the image of His Son. What they refuse to teach is the fact that before one can be conformed to the image of the Son, they must be saved first and then conformity takes place. There is such a fear among Christians over the biblical fact of predestination that it has become a reprehensible teaching to the majority.

(Eph 1:5 KJV) Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

In Ephesians 1:5, we read that the believer has been predestinated unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ. Adoption is being taken from one place and put in another. This

is exactly what happened to the believer. We were in the kingdom of Satan but God, through salvation, transplanted us into His Kingdom.

(Rom 8:15 KJV) For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

(Gal 4:4-5 KJV) But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, {5} To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Romans 8:15 and Galatians 4:5 confirm this transplant. Romans 8:15 states that we have received the Spirit of adoption. When we became saved, we were indwelt by the Holy Spirit and that indwelling took us from being spiritually dead, to being spiritually alive in the Kingdom of God. Galatians 4:4-5 speaks about Christ coming to this world, and remember he came to save His people, who redeemed us who were under the law and as a result of His salvation, we were adopted into the Kingdom of God. So in Ephesians 1:5, we are being told that we have been predestinated unto adoption, that is, when we became saved we were no longer citizens of Satan's kingdom but were transplanted into the Kingdom of God.

(Eph 1:10-11 KJV) That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him: {11} In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

Ephesians 1:10-11 teaches us that the believer was predestinated according to the will of God. It does not say according to the will of man but according to the will of God. This is further attested to in John 1:12-13.

(John 1:12-13 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

So the believer is predestined according to the will of God that they will be adopted into the Kingdom of God and then as the Holy Spirit indwells us, we will then be conformed to the image of His Son.

### **Called**

The word "called" has two different Greek words behind it.

Kaleo - Which means to "call, summon, name, or invite

Kletos - Which means to "invited, called out, chosen, or appointed

The first word is "kaleo" and we read that it means to invite, call, summon, or name. In the majority of usage, it is referring to believers and their call from God. The word in this form is a verb denoting an action.

(Rom 8:30 KJV) Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

(1 Pet 5:10 KJV) But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle *you*.

(Heb 5:4 KJV) And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.

The second word is “kletos” which means “invited, called out, chosen, or appointed.” This word is an adjective which modifies a noun. In the following four verses, it is definitely used as describing the believer as being the called of Jesus Christ. The word is used 12 times in the New Testament and ten times it refers to believers and the other two times, it is used as a call.

(Rom 1:6 KJV) Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ:

(Rom 8:28 KJV) And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose.

(1 Cor 1:2 KJV) Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours:

(Rev 17:14 KJV) These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him *are called*, and chosen, and faithful.

The only times “kletos” is used in the form of an invitation is in two verses in the entire New Testament. It must be noted that within the general call described by these two verses, the Elect of God are also being called because out of the groups in view, few will be chosen and those are the Elect.

(Mat 20:16 KJV) So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

(Mat 22:14 KJV) For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

These two verses are the key to understanding evangelism in the light of Election and being named by God. Since we do not know who the Elect of God are, we must send out the Gospel to as many as possible and those Elect who receive the Word of God will then be qualified by God to hear the Gospel and will then be saved. Many are called to church services, evangelistic services, and such but not everyone who attends will become saved because many are called but only a few are chosen. The word for “few” in both verse is the Greek word “oligos” which means “little, small, short, or few.” This means that out of the billions who have lived on this earth, it will only be a small amount who are going to be saved yet that number will be pretty big but in comparison to billions, it will be small.

Matthew 20:16 and 22:14 also reveal a great principle. Since those who are being called at any particular time will have the Elect of God among them, this would also mean that there will be no need for Gospel preaching where there is no Elect. If no one in a particular group is Elect of God, then there is no reason to bring the Gospel to those people since no one among them will become saved. This does not negate the command to send forth the Gospel. We send out the Gospel and leave the areas of reach to the Lord.

### **Chosen (Choose, Elect, Election)**

The fifth word is “chosen” and shares the Greek words behind them with “choose, elect, and election.”

Eklegomai (verb) - Which means “Choose, select, or elect”  
Eklektos (adjective) - Which means “Chosen, select, or elect”  
Ekloge (noun) - Which means “Selection, choice, or chosen”

The first word we are going to look at will be “eklegomai” which is a verb that shows action.

(John 15:16 KJV) Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

(Acts 1:2 KJV) Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen:

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Here is the verb showing action that the believers had been chosen by Christ Himself. John 15:16 speaks of the chosen disciples to go and bring fruit which will remain. The fruit which will remain is the Gospel they preach and those who become saved will remain forever. Then Acts 1:2 confirms that the Apostles had been chosen by Christ Himself. Then in Ephesians 1:4, the meaning widens in that not only were the Apostles chosen by Christ but here we are told that every believer has been chosen by God and because of the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ, we were placed in Him, even before the foundation of the world.

The next word is “eklektos” which is an adjective which modifies a noun.

(Mat 20:16 KJV) So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

(Mat 22:14 KJV) For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

(Mat 24:31 KJV) And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

(Rom 8:33 KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? *It is* God that justifieth.

(1 Tim 5:21 KJV) I charge *thee* before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

In Matthew 20:16 & 22:14, we saw previously that when the Gospel call goes out, that there will be the Elect of God within the hearing of that call. The word “chosen” in both verses bear this out that there will be Elect who will be saved within that call. Now when the Gospel call goes out and no one becomes saved at that time, does mean that the Gospel call went out to all non-elect? The answer is no because the principle of planting and watering takes effect. (1 Cor 3:6 KJV) I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. A person who is elect can hear the Gospel today and not get saved for a year. One plants the seed and another waters it and when their time has come, then God will save them.

Matthew 24:31 speaks about the last day when the elect will be gathered and brought to Heaven. Romans 8:33 speaks of God’s elect being justified by God Himself. Since in salvation God has removed all our sins from us, how then can anyone make an accusation that can stick if in Christ we are totally sinless? Both Matthew 24:31 and Romans 8:33 speak of the elect or those that are saved. Now an interesting verse in 1 Timothy 5:21. It speaks about the elect angels. Many angels went along with Satan’s rebellion in Heaven and therefore were cast out of Heaven. This verse speaks about certain angels who were elect and did not fall with Satan. So not only are the believers elect but also the angels which are now in Heaven are elect.

Now the last word is “ekloge” which is a noun and it means “selection, choice, or chosen.”

(Acts 9:15 KJV) But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel:

(Rom 9:11 KJV) (For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;)

(1 Th 1:4 KJV) Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.

In Acts 9:15, we are being told that the Apostle Paul was a chosen vessel unto the Lord Jesus Christ. On the road to Damascus, did the Lord Jesus from Heaven say to Paul, “Do you want to accept me as savior? If you do I am going to show you how much you are going to suffer for me?” Knowing this, why would the Apostle Paul accept Christ and then be the persecuted one instead of the persecutor? Paul did not accept Christ on the Road to Damascus. In Romans 9:11 we are told that Jacob was elect of God and Esau was not and that is why God chose Jacob over Esau. This verse also states that it is not of works but by Him that calls. In 1 Thessalonians 1:4, the Apostle Paul says to the

Thessalonians that they were elect or chosen of God. It doesn't say that He knew they accepted Christ but that they were chosen, just like every believer down through history.

### **Second Summary**

We have looked at five words which speak about the salvation of the believer. Nowhere did we find even one allusion to a person having the ability to accept Christ as Savior. All believers as recorded in Scripture came by election, even Jacob 1800 years before Calvary came by election. Now we are going to look at the process which God uses to bring the elect of God unto salvation. Now this does not mean that salvation is a process because salvation is instant and a one time event. It means that even the Elect are in a state of unbelief and must be brought to salvation.

## Salvation Acceptance or Application?

### Part 3

In this final part, we are going to actually see how salvation takes place in the believer, taking them from being an unbeliever to a believer.

(1 Cor 6:9-11 KJV) Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, {10} Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. {11} And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

1 Corinthians 6:9-11 is a resume about the condition of man and the manifestation of the dead condition of man. The Apostle Paul gives this list and then tells the Corinthians that some of them were partaking in the very things he listed. This resume could very well describe every believer before they became believers. Now we are going to see what God has to do to bring the Elect to salvation.

### Draw

When a person is unsaved, they are spiritually dead and we saw this in the beginning of this study. A person in this condition is unable to make any type of spiritual decision. So what has to happen, is when God begins to call a person to salvation, He literally has to draw them.

(John 6:44 KJV) No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

Now the word draw which is used in John 6:44 is the Greek word “hellkuô” which means to “drag, draw, or force.” It can also mean “persuade” but it is not used in that fashion in the 8 verses where it is used. Since no one is seeking God, then it is God who does the seeking for His sheep. We saw this in part 1, where God stated that He is the one who will seek out His sheep. Man is so steeped in sin that he wants nothing whatsoever to do with God. In fact, man hates God because in Romans 5:1, we are told that we are at enmity with God. (Eph 2:16 KJV) And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: Once we become saved that enmity is abolished. Now because of that enmity, God must come to us and gives us chance to accept His Son as Savior, right? No, we are such enemies of God that He must literally drag us or force us to come to the Lord Jesus Christ. It doesn't sound much like free will to me. Are we on the right path?

(Acts 21:30 KJV) And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were shut.

In Jerusalem, Paul had created another one of his uproars, as he did in Ephesus and Philippi. (Acts 16:19 KJV) And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew *them* into the marketplace unto the rulers, Any time you bring the truth of God, you will always be opposed. So in Acts 21:30, we see that Paul was asked nicely if he would accept leaving the temple. Oh no we don't, we see Paul being forcefully dragged out of the Temple. The word "drew" is the same word used in John 6:44. God's truth is the enemy of both unbelievers and religion. As Paul was dragged out of the Temple, the Elect is dragged out of unbelief.

(James 2:6 KJV) But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats?

Let us look at one more verse to see the use of the word "helkuô" and it is found in James 2:6. The rich men oppress the poor people and that is something which has not changed down through time. In James 2:6, they are "drawing" the poor people into the courts of that time. They are not inviting them or asking them, they are dragging them before the magistrates. When you receive a subpoena, you are not being asked to make a decision whether to come or not. You are being forced to appear in court, whether you like it or not. God saves us according to His will and not ours! The sooner we understand that, the sooner we will understand how blessed we are that we were written in the Lamb's Book of Life. God could have skipped your name and guess what your destination would be?

### **God Regenerates Our Soul**

One of the aspects of being an unregenerate person is the fact that we are spiritually dead. Since God is a living God, He requires that people who worship Him must be spiritually alive. (John 4:24 KJV) God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth. So those who are unsaved do not have the Holy Spirit indwelling them and therefore cannot worship God in spirit and truth. Since man is unable to regenerate his own soul, God has done that also.

(Rom 6:13 KJV) Neither yield ye your members *as* instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members *as* instruments of righteousness unto God.

Romans 6:13 teaches us that we are to yield ourselves unto God as those that are alive from the dead. Since we were dead in sins at one time, after salvation we are considered alive. In fact, Romans 6:4 speaks of it as "newness of life." (Rom 6:4 KJV) Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

In the New Testament, the Lord Jesus Christ had performed three physical resurrections. In Luke 7, He raised the son of the widow of Nain. In Luke 8, He raised the daughter of Jairus and in John 11, He raised Lazarus from the dead.

(Luke 7:14 KJV) And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.

(Luke 8:52 KJV) And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

(John 11:43-44 KJV) And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. {44} And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

All three of these resurrections have one major principle in common. None of these people raised themselves from the dead. They were dead and the only thing which awaited them was burial of their bodies. In fact, Lazarus had already been in the tomb four days. The Widow of Nain's son was about to be buried and the daughter of Jairus had just died. The principle they all had in common was that when they were resurrected from the dead, it was done from an outside source. In the case of these three, the source was the Lord Jesus Christ. These three people, who were dead, had no will of their own but were totally dead. This physical death is a picture of a person who is spiritually dead. Remember we saw the word for "dead" in Ephesians 2: 1 & 5 as "nekros" which means "lifeless, dead, or useless." When the Lord Jesus Christ came upon the scene, in all three cases, all He did was speak and they all arose from the dead.

These three resurrections show us that a person being dead is unable to raise themselves from that state of death. For a person to be raised from the dead, it requires a power which holds more power than death. The only ones who have that power over death is the Father, the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. Man does not have authority over death but is only subject to it. Have you ever known anyone who can will themselves one more day of life after they have died? I think you know the answer to that.

In the same manner, one cannot will themselves into Heaven from a state of having a dead spirit. They cannot even will the common cold out of their living bodies and they are going to will themselves into Heaven from the source of a dead spirit? The same situation must take place as it did for the physical resurrections. There must be a power greater than spiritual death who can bring about spiritual life. The spiritual resurrection must come from an outside source.

There are three verses which speak about being spiritually resurrected with Christ and they all show that it is the work of God who raises the believer from spiritual death to spiritual life. In each of these verses we find the word "sunegirô" which means "to rise or be raised up with another."

(Eph 2:5-6 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) {6} And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus:

In Ephesians 2:5, we saw that we were spiritually dead in sins but it does not end there. We read that God had quickened us (made us alive) together with Christ. That is, just as the Lord Jesus Christ was raised from the dead, according to verse 6, we have been spiritually raised from the dead, in fact, we were made to sit in heavenly places with Christ. In other words, we are still physically alive but something happened in our spirit

and that was the spiritual resurrection whereby we went from being dead to living. If you notice it was the work of God who took us from death to life.

(Col 2:12 KJV) Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

In Colossians 2:12, we read that we are raised with the Lord Jesus Christ in spiritual resurrection just as Christ was raised in the physical resurrection. The same operation or working of God who raised Christ from the dead, raised us from spiritual death. Again how could a spiritually dead person will themselves from death to life?

(Col 3:1 KJV) If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

Colossians 3:1 speaks about the believer “being risen with” Christ and now because we are made alive unto God, we no longer only seek what this world offers according to our flesh but we look beyond the flesh horizon and seek the things of Heaven. Why? Because we were raised spiritually from spiritual death to spiritual life which now allows us to seek the things of God. Remember in Romans 3, the Scripture states that no one seeks after God? That is because the world is in an unsaved state of spiritual death but once God makes us alive, we are now able to seek the things of God because we now desire those things above the world.

We have been raised with Christ from spiritual death to spiritual life. It is interesting to note that God makes Himself our Savior and we do not make Him our Savior. A spiritually dead person does not have the ability to communicate with another human being on a spiritual level, so how could some people believe so arrogantly that they, in their state of spiritual death, can make Christ their Savior? Since when does the creature dictate orders to the Creator?

### **The Holy Spirit**

After a person is raised from spiritual death to spiritual life, they are indwelt by the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit guides us into all truth and He becomes our guide in the Scriptures and for all of life.

(John 14:17 KJV) *Even* the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

John 14:17 teaches us that the Holy Spirit will dwell with us and He shall be within us, that is, indwell us as children of God. It is this indwelling which sets the Christian apart from all other people in the world.

(John 16:13 KJV) Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.

John 16:13 teaches us that the Holy Spirit is going to guide us into all truth, that is because He is God, the third person of the trinity.

### **Faith to Believe**

Not only does God draw us, He raises us up spiritually from death to life, causes the Holy Spirit to indwell us, and then He gives us faith to believe. One of the greatest misunderstandings is that a person can exercise faith and accept Christ as their Savior. Once again we must ask how can a spiritually dead person have faith to ask for anything? If a person is spiritually dead, then it would also follow that their faith would also be dead because faith is a spiritual thing and without faith there can be no belief in God.

(1 Cor 12:8-9 KJV) For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; {9} To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit;

In the early church, there were specific spiritual gifts given to individual believers. One of those gifts was the gift of faith. Now Paul had written the first Epistle to the Corinthians around 54 A.D.

(Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

Paul had written the Epistle to the Galatians between 58-60 A.D. We read in Galatians 5:22, that now faith was no longer a specific gift given to certain individuals. All those who are saved are given faith as a fruit of the Holy Spirit which means it is universal in the body of Christ.

Many free will people tell others that they need to exercise their faith to accept Christ. The problem with that teaching is the three verses we have just looked at. Faith, being a fruit of the Holy Spirit, means that a person must have the Holy Spirit before they can have faith. (Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. We do not receive the Holy Spirit by faith but we receive faith by the Holy Spirit. This means that a person must be saved before they can have faith, and further, it also means that a person cannot believe unless they have faith. So once again we see that salvation is a total act of God whereby a person receives salvation, then they are indwelt with the Holy Spirit and then they are given faith which means they can now believe. Faith is a noun which means it is a person, place or thing. Believe is a verb which means it denotes action. When a person has faith, they will be able to believe because that belief is built upon faith. If an unregenerate person thinks they have faith, then what is the basis of their faith since they are spiritually dead, this would mean their faith is dead and their beliefs are based upon a dead spirit. So the order is salvation first, then faith, and then the ability to act on that faith which is belief.

### **Summation**

The title of this study is Salvation: Acceptance or Application. We have found, with sufficient Scripture, the reality that an unsaved person is spiritually dead and that deadness precludes any living spiritual activity. This means that a person is absolutely

incapable of accepting Christ from a spiritually dead position. Dead is dead which we have seen. It is God who initiates our salvation and then maintains it with the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. Since God has to literally drag us from darkness to light, how then can that be an act of our will. In fact, our will resists God's will because we are in opposition to Him owing to our spiritual deadness. That spiritual deadness can only be removed from the believer by an outside source. Just as we read about Jesus raising three people from the dead. These dead people had no will of their own and when the Lord told them to arise, they did. Just as the believer is told to believe, we do because the shackles of darkness have been removed by God and not by our own voluntary will. Let me just end up this study with the following two verses which we have already seen.

(John 1:12-13 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

It is a shame that free will proponents always leave out verse 13, because it shows that salvation is not of man's will but of God's will. That is the reality and if you have read this monograph and still continue to believe and teach free will, then you are going against what the Bible teaches in all the verses that we saw. It is not my words that are important but the word of God, which in the case of the use of words like chosen, elect, called, predestinate, are self-explanatory. Man in his spiritually dead condition likes to puff himself up with the devil's pride and believe that he is in a position to make Christ His savior. My friend, you cannot make the God of this universe do anything. Admit you are the clay and He is the potter and He can mold you any way He desires even unto salvation. As I said in my testimony, I did not seek salvation but God gave it to me, and without my permission.

I really cringe when I hear Christians say, "Give God permission to work in your life." Are you kidding? Do you know who you are talking about? That statement is so loaded with self-absorbing pride it is definitely in the devil's vocabulary because it is not in the biblical vocabulary. I am glad God saved me because my prior life was nothing but a bridge to the future death in an eternal hell. Let us start teaching the truth and drop this satanically inspired "Calvinist Vs. Arminian" feud. What I gave here is not from Calvin but from the Bible. You will not read one quote from Calvin in this study. It is all taken from the King James Bible Cambridge Text. May the Lord open your eyes to the fact that you are the creature and He is the Creator!

(Acts 13:48 KJV) And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.

From what we have gleaned in this study, salvation is definitely by application and not acceptance. God applies it to those He named before the foundation of the world and within their life span, be it young or old, they will receive salvation by divine decree. When the last one is saved, then it is all over and we fly away. If God had to wait for a spiritually dead person to accept His Son as Savior, the end would never come and the return of Christ would never happen. This is why God rules over His salvation plan and not man. God saves according to His will and one day He will reach the last name and that will be the last day.

One last point. Many teach that if one accepts Christ, then we become the elect of God. If a person can accept Christ, then why does God have to elect? Think about it!

## Effectual Salvation

By Dr. Ken Matto

Acts 13:48 (KJV) And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.

In constructing a building, does the builder begin on the first floor or do they begin to start building the building from the second floor up? Of course, that is a ridiculous question. There is no way you can have a foundation, then empty space where the first floor should be and then the actual building begins on the second floor. What would happen is that the building would come tumbling down.

Yet, this is exactly the same formula that many Christians use when attempting to understand salvation. Instead of them starting where they should, they take a leap and completely ignore one of the most basic yet important Scriptural truths and that is the starting point in Scripture. What many believers do is tell people to become saved all they have to do is believe. *Romans 10:10 (KJV) For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.* They will take a verse like Romans 10:10 and then tell their hearers that all they need to do is believe and once they do that, they can become saved. This is a great error because they are actually jumping over the Bible's starting point and we will look at these points in order to understand how salvation becomes effectual in a person's life.

### 1.) You are spiritually Dead

Ephesians 2:1-5 (KJV) And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; {2} Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: {3} Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. {4} But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, {5} Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

The starting point that free will proponents completely ignore is the fact that before salvation a person is spiritually dead. In Ephesians 2:1 & 5, the word for "dead" is the Greek word "nekrous" which means "lifeless, useless, or dead." A person who is spiritually dead is one who cannot do anything toward their salvation. Just as a physically dead person cannot do anything to make themselves alive, the spiritually dead person is incapable of anything except being dead. Now is this borne out in other places in the Scriptures? The answer is a resounding yes.

### Nekrous - Lifeless, Useless, or Dead

Ephesians 5:14-15 (KJV) Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. {15} See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

Matthew 8:22 (KJV) But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury

their dead.

Luke 15:32 (KJV) It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

John 5:21 (KJV) For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

Colossians 2:13 (KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

### **Thnesko - Be Dead or Die**

1 Timothy 5:6 (KJV) But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth.

### **Thanatos - Death**

1 John 3:14 (KJV) We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

Here we have just looked at seven verses where God uses three different words to describe the condition of those who are not saved. The Bible teaches us here that the only condition that the unbeliever is in is a state of spiritual death. This applies to every person who has ever lived and goes back as far as the Garden of Eden.

Genesis 2:16-17 (KJV) And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: {17} But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

The Hebrew word for “die” is “mooth” which means “to die.” So we see that when Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, they entered into a state of spiritual death. It was not physical death at that moment because they had lived quite a number of years after their sin but because of their disobedience to God, they instantly went into a state of spiritual death. This spiritual death has been passed on to every human being down to the present. Physical death came at a later date.

Since the Bible covers this subject thoroughly, we cannot understand these verses to mean anything else but that the whole human race was plunged into spiritual death and remains there until a person becomes saved. Now that we know that people are spiritually dead, and reading the words for dead and death in the text, how can we come to any other conclusion than the fact that unsaved man is spiritually dead.

Now that we know that unsaved man is spiritually dead, then the question remains how could one believe by themselves or generate faith when they are dead? When Lazarus was in the tomb, did he have the ability to actually raise himself from the dead? The answer is a resounding no because he was physically dead plus his sister Martha stated that by now, a time of four days, he would stink because of decomposition. *John 11:39 (KJV) Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.* The reality is that when dealing with the subject of salvation, to reject the starting point of spiritual

death is to literally bypass a cardinal truth of the Scriptures. Free willers do not like to think of themselves as spiritually dead. They think that because you can put on a blue tie or buy a steak for lunch that is somehow exercising free will and they erroneously equate that type of choice with the ability to “accept Christ.” Nothing could be farther from the truth and more heretical because we have plainly seen from the Bible that a person, before salvation, is spiritually dead or lifeless which means at that point they are incapable of making any spiritual decisions from the state of being spiritually dead. You cannot even will the common cold from your body and you think you can will yourself into Heaven?

## **2) Spiritual Resurrection**

When one is physically dead, the only way to make them alive again is through resurrection. The same principle applies to the spiritually dead. The soul must be resurrected from the dead but since the dead person does not have the ability to resurrect themselves, it must be done from the outside inward.

Revelation 20:6 (KJV) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

In Revelation 20:6, we read about a resurrection on which the second death has no power over. The second death is to be sentenced to an eternity in Hell but because a person is resurrected from a state of spiritual death, the second death has no effect on that person. Why? Because they have now become saved eternally and the threat of Hell is now removed forever. This is not speaking of a future physical resurrection because of the language in the rest of the verse. It states that those who are partakers in the first resurrection will be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Christ a thousand years. The thousand years is symbolic of the time period between the first and second coming which means during that time period as millions of Christians are called by God, they shall all reign with Christ.

Romans 6:4 (KJV) Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

One of the most open verses about a person becoming born again from the dead is Romans 6:4 where it speaks about Christ being raised from the dead by God the Father, it goes on to state that we, being raised, like Christ should walk in newness of life. The words “even so” in the Greek text carries with it the meaning of “in this way or after this manner.” Now that we have been resurrected from the dead, we now take on a new life and new purpose and in Christ we are to walk in that manner.

## **3) Holy Spirit Indwelling**

John 14:17 (KJV) Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

Now that a person has been resurrected from spiritual death, where there was once a void

in their soul is now filled with the Holy Spirit. He is called the Spirit of truth in John 14:17 and He now indwells the believer. It is the indwelling of the Holy Spirit that allows the Christian to function in the spiritual realm. It is through His power that the Christian will be able to perform the duties of Christianity and to perform their assigned ministry, which every Christian has. Let us now attend to what the Holy Spirit brings the Christian in the way of primary abilities. He doesn't indwell us in dormancy but gives the Christian their spiritual abilities.

#### **4) Faith**

Before a person is saved, they are spiritually dead and that makes it impossible for them to generate believing faith. The free willers always talk about exercising faith to believe in Christ yet not one of them has ever stated where the faith comes from. It cannot come from one who is spiritually dead just as physical life cannot be generated out of one who is physically dead such as Lazarus or the son of the widow of Nain. Luke 7:12 (KJV) Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

So then the question remains, if the faith a person needs to believe is not generated from the person, where does it come from? The answer is simple and found in Scripture.

Galatians 5:22 (KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

Faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit and one can only have faith if they are already indwelled with the Holy Spirit, which means one can only have faith after they have become saved and not before. The spiritually dead person does not have the Holy Spirit indwelling them which means that only the one that the Holy Spirit indwells will have the fruits of the Spirit. Now that a Christian has faith as a fruit of the Holy Spirit, he or she is able to do something else which the spiritually dead person cannot do.

#### **5) Believe**

Now that one has a bedrock of faith given to them by the Holy Spirit, they may now believe the things of God. The word "believe" in the Greek text is "pisteuo" which is a verb denoting a work. If a person could believe in Christ without having the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, it would mean they have performed a work and that would mean they have worked for their salvation which is totally against what the Bible teaches in many places. *Ephesians 2:8-9 (KJV) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: {9} Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

So then the question might be raised, if after the moment of salvation, we do a work, does that count against us as if we are trying to work for salvation? A group of people had asked Jesus what they could do to work the works of God and His response was very simple.

John 6:28-29 (KJV) Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? {29} Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

So we see in this verse that the work of God is to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. Now this is not the same as one who tries to believe without being regenerated. A person can believe because they now have the faith which can be exercised to believe. Why is this? Simply because they now believe by building on the faith they have been given from the Holy Spirit who indwells them when their souls were resurrected to newness of life from being spiritually dead. In other words, the Bible is teaching us that we cannot believe the things of God unless we have already become saved.

1 Corinthians 2:14 (KJV) But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

1 Corinthians 2:14 tells us plainly that the natural or unsaved man cannot receive or understand the things of God because they are spiritually dead and this means that a person cannot believe from a state of spiritual death. They must be indwelt by the Holy Spirit as a result of salvation.

Romans 10:9 (KJV) That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

Romans 10:9 is a verse which teaches us that we must believe in our hearts that God raised Jesus from the dead and that we must confess it with our mouths. The word for “confess” in the Greek text is the word “homologeō” which literally means “to say the same thing.” In other words our testimony must be in line with the Word of God. That principle is found back in Amos. *Amos 3:3 (KJV) Can two walk together, except they be agreed?* To be agreed is to agree with the Word of God. Before salvation, the Bible was a book we were unable to understand and our lives were in opposition to the Bible but once we became saved, we are in agreement with the Scriptures.

Then we are to believe in our heart that God raised Jesus from the dead but with the old heart we were at enmity with God. However, when God saves us and resurrects our souls, He also gives us a new heart which would be able to ingest the things of God. *Ezekiel 36:26 (KJV) A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.* Now Romans 10:9 tells us to confess and believe. If we did these things from a state of spiritual death, it would be an attempted work for salvation but because God has already saved us and then given us spiritual abilities, they would be considered exercising the faith that we have and it would not be a work for salvation but a work in salvation which is what the believer is to be engaged in.

Ephesians 2:10 (KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

### Summary

We have plainly seen, without any verse manipulation, that before a person is saved they are spiritually dead and dead means dead. They do not have the ability to generate faith, to believe, or will themselves into salvation. We have also seen that a person must be

saved prior, and it could be just a few seconds, to believing by means of faith which is given as a fruit of the Holy Spirit who indwells the believer and then gives them the ability to believe the things of God, simply because regeneration has already taken place. So let me just list the order of effectual salvation it is from Spiritual death to Spiritual resurrection to receiving the Holy Spirit to be given faith as a fruit to be able to believe the things of God. No unsaved person can will themselves into spiritual resurrection. It must be performed by God or the person stays spiritually dead. It is that simple.

## Salvation Is Forever

by Dr. Ken Matto

(Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

One of the strangest things I have been running into lately by many Christians is their misunderstanding of salvation. It seems that many Christians feel they can lose their salvation. In fact, some of the attitudes I have heard concerning this subject is that they are proud of the belief that they can lose their salvation. Why do so many Christians want to go to Hell? When we read the Scriptures and find within them the terror of an eternal Hell, you would think that Christians would be joyous in the fact that once God has saved a person, there is no way that their salvation can be lost. In fact, there are some questions which need to be posed to those people who believe this lie:

- 1) What works will cause you to lose your salvation?
- 2) How many works does it take to lose salvation?
- 3) How do you know you have lost your salvation?
- 4) How many works will it take to regain your salvation?
- 5) What type of works will it take to regain your salvation?

If a person believes they can lose their salvation, there is only way to regain salvation and that is through works. If you believe that you can lose your salvation, then the following verse must be taken into account.

(Heb 10:26 KJV) For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

Many Christians bank on this verse that if they lose their salvation, then they cannot get it back. However, the above verse is not dealing with loss of salvation. If you notice the wording in this verse, you will see that those who received the “knowledge” of the truth and still continue sinning, will face the fact that there is no more sacrifice for sin. This is because the sacrifice of Christ established two truths: 1) He died for His Elect and they are sealed forever; 2) He did not die for everyone in the whole world, which means those who are outside the Elect, have no more sacrifice for sin, as we see in the above verse. Many unbelievers receive the knowledge of the truth when they hear the preaching of the Gospel. (*Mat 22:14 KJV*) *For many are called, but few are chosen.*

We see many who are called to hear the Gospel but only a few of those called are chosen for salvation. The chosen not only receive the knowledge of the truth but they also have that truth of the Gospel implanted in them and applied to them. This is the great difference between those who have received only the knowledge of salvation and those that have received actual salvation. An Evangelist may be preaching to a large crowd and out of that crowd maybe only a few become truly saved.

One of the great lies that accompanies the loss of salvation theory is that the sacrifice of Christ was insufficient for eternal salvation and inefficient in keeping the children of God

saved. This, of course, is ludicrous because there is nothing in Scripture which teaches that any true child of God can ever be lost and I will post some of those verses at the end. Those who believe they can lose their salvation are also under the false impression that they are sufficient enough in themselves to complete their salvation. I say that in all honesty, because if Christ cannot complete their salvation, then it must be up to them to keep it. Again, I go back to the list of five questions. There is nothing in Scripture which gives any indication of the amount of works or what we are to do to keep our salvation.

One of the pet verses which the loss of salvation crowd clings to is Matthew 10:22:

(Mat 10:22 KJV) And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

They believe it is up to them, in their own strength, to endure to the end of their lives and then hopefully they will have done enough good works to get into Heaven. The truth of this verse is that only those who are saved and have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit will be able to endure all the persecutions and hard times they will face. In Scripture we see false Christians like Demas who loved this world and forsook the Christian faith.

(Col 4:14 KJV) Luke, the beloved physician, **and Demas, greet you.**

(2 Tim 4:10 KJV) For **Demas hath forsaken me**, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

The difference between Demas and Paul was that Paul was a true Christian and endured to the end because of his salvation. Demas went back into the world and forsook the brethren simply because he was not a true believer, which means he was void of salvation. Without salvation to under gird a person, they will turn from the true Gospel and will not endure any persecution or hard times. This is the evidence that those who endure to the end, do so, because they are saved. Paul endured the Christian life and was taken to the chopping block but Demas ran away because he did not have salvation to propel him on. (2 Cor 5:14 KJV) *For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:* The word “constraineth” in this verse means “to hold, secure, or keep together.” Without the love of Christ constraining us we will then leave and it will seem like we have lost salvation, when in essence, we never had it to begin with. Now in conclusion I want to give a few verses which straightforwardly teach that a true Christian cannot lose their salvation. I also want to give the URL for an article I wrote on the security of the believer. It is called “Safe in the Arms of Jesus” [www.scionofzion.com/safe.htm](http://www.scionofzion.com/safe.htm)

(John 6:39 KJV) And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me **I should lose nothing**, but should raise it up again at the last day.

(John 10:29 KJV) My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; **and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand.**

(Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby **ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.**

(John 3:15 KJV) That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but **have eternal life**.

(John 10:28 KJV) **And I give unto them eternal life**; and they shall never perish, **neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand**.

(Rom 6:23 KJV) For the wages of sin is death; but **the gift of God is eternal life** through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Notice the last three verses! It says that the true believer is given eternal life. If you could lose your salvation, then it would be temporal life. Have you noticed what is absent in Scripture? It is some type of formula to regain salvation after loss. It simply does not exist. The next time someone precedes their statement on this subject with "I take the position of" or "I see it this way" then just shut them off, because they are using themselves as the final authority. These same people claim you can walk away from salvation. How can you walk away if Christ is securing you as we saw in 2 Corinthians 5:14. How about this one?

(1 Pet 1:5 KJV) **Who are kept by the power of God** through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Loss of salvation theory just calumniates the truths of the effects of the sacrifice of Christ on behalf of His Elect and it calls God, the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit liars and weaklings. Don't allow others to do your thinking for you. Believe the truths in your King James Bible and you will stand firm and endure to the end. (6/25/04)

## The Cross: Payment for Sin or Demonstration? And How Many Times Did Christ Die?

By Dr. Ken Matto

**From Harold Camping's book "To God be the Glory" - "Thus when Jesus went to the cross, He was not there to pay for our sins" - Page 34**

**May 2, 2009 - Treasures from the Bible - Campingite show Saturday Mornings on Family Radio aimed at children - They stated "that the cross of Christ was a "show n tell" like in school."**

One of the new teachings spawned by Harold Camping dovetails his other teaching that Christ died for our sins before the foundation of the world and then later came into time and died on Calvary. However, Camping claims that Christ did not come into the world to die for our sins but instead it was only a demonstration of how He suffered before the foundation of the world. We turned to the Bible to successfully refute the idea that Christ died twice. We saw that the Bible emphatically declares that Christ went to the cross once to pay for the sins of His people. This study is going to reveal to us what the Bible teaches about the cross and whether it was a demonstration or the actual payment for the sins of the Elect.

*(Psa 16:10 KJV) For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.* According to Camping, he believes that the reason that Christ's body did not see any corruption was because when He went to the cross, He was not laden with the sins of the Elect. However, this theory does not hold water. Psalm 16:10 tells us that Christ was to be raised from the dead before His body would see corruption from death. He was raised the third day after His death. Now we have all been to funerals and right before the body is closed in the casket, it looks just like it was when it was first placed in the casket. What I mean by that is, for example, my father died on a Thursday and his funeral was the following Tuesday, which means there was 5 days between his death and his burial. On that Tuesday, the day of the funeral, my father's body did not show signs of corruption as of yet. So Camping's idea that Christ's body did not corrupt because He did not have the sins of the Elect on Him does not hold any truth. Psalm 16:10 teaches us that Christ would be raised quickly because His sacrifice was completed on Calvary and accepted by the Father.

### Payment for Sin?

First of all, let us look at a very revealing verse concerning the Lord Jesus Christ before the foundation of the world.

*(1 Pet 1:19-20 KJV) But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: {20} Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,*

He was foreordained before the foundation of the world and was manifested to us in the last times. In eternity past, Christ was foreordained to be the Lamb slain for the sins of the Elect. The Bible does not say that He was slain before the foundation of the world,

instead it states that He was foreordained in eternity past to be the sinless Lamb of God who would be manifested in the last days by giving His life for the sins of His people. The term foreordain means to “know beforehand, to appoint before, pre-ordain, or predetermine.”

*Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.*

Revelation 13:8 reveals to us that Christ was foreknown before the foundation of the world and what was really foreknown was the fact that He was the Lamb slain before the foundation of the world. Before the foundation of the world He was slain in principle but in the last days He has been revealed to us. The word “manifest” in 1 Peter 1:20 is in the Aorist tense which means that Christ was revealed at some time in the past but that revelation continues today. The Aorist tense denotes some type of past action without a set completion time. So the last days commenced from the cross, in fact, Peter calls it the final or extreme end of days (last times). Yet, we are told with the word “times: in 1 Peter 3:20, that there will be plural or many revelations of Jesus Christ. This does not mean in a dream or vision, it means when Jesus is preached and someone becomes saved, Jesus is revealed in their life. The veil has been removed and they now see Jesus clearly. (2 Cor 3:16 KJV) *Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.* This means there has been many millions of revelations of Jesus since the time of the cross.

When we see the word “from” it speaks of “from the time of creation.” When we see the word “before” in conjunction with “foundation” it speaks about “in eternity.” In principle, the Lord Jesus Christ was slain from the foundation of the world for the sins of His people. Christ’s sacrifice was planned back in eternity but did not become effective until Adam and Eve sinned, and then the sacrifice of Christ, even though in principle at that time, was now able to cover every one that God had named in the Lamb’s Book of Life for salvation. Then at a future time Christ came on the scene and became sin laden with the sins of His people on Calvary, thus completing God’s salvation plan and now the only thing left till the end of time is to bring all the Elect to salvation.

*(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:*

*(John 17:24 KJV) Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*

Ephesians 1:4 teaches us that we were chosen in Christ before the foundation of the world (eternity). John 17:24 teaches us that God the Father and God the Son had an intimate relationship of love. Camping and his followers still deny the eternal Sonship of Christ and claims that Christ became the Son of God at His resurrection, but here in John 17:24, we are seeing the Father and Son relationship. Jesus calls God, Father, and He could not do that unless He was the Son back in eternity.

When we look at the Scriptures concerning the cross, we can find evidence of only one description of the cross, not two. There is no way that Christ went to the cross to pay for

our sins and then on the other hand He did not pay for our sins. We can only find one path in the Scriptures and that is that the physical cross was the payment for the sins of the Elect and there is no straight Biblical evidence that Christ died in body and soul before the foundation of the world. In fact, there is not even an intimation that Christ paid for the sins of the Elect before the foundation of the world. The payment for the sins of the Elect was planned before the foundation of the world but was executed in time. Let us now search the Scriptures and see what we can find concerning the cross of Christ. Since the entire Bible is about the Lord Jesus Christ (and not about timelines) there are many Scriptures that teach about the cross which we will be unable to include but I hope to sufficiently cover the subject.

### **Blood**

*(1 Pet 1:18-19 KJV) Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; {19} But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:*

*(1 John 1:7 KJV) But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*

If Christ died before the foundation of the world for actual sins, then how could Christ, being Spirit, have blood to shed for our sins? According to Camping, He went to the physical cross as a demonstration without the sins of the Elect on Him. The problem for the Campingites is that the blood was shed for sins on this earth from the physical body of Christ according to the Scriptures and not in His spiritual body before the foundation of the world, which would have no blood. If there was no blood to shed, then how can the blood of Christ cleanse us from all sin?

*(Heb 10:19 KJV) Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,*

When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross, His blood allowed us to enter the holy of holies, that is, into the presence of God Himself. The entire Mosaic system in the Old Testament was centered around blood and it was all looking forward to the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ. If it was looking backward into eternity, then there would be no reason for the animal sacrifices for sin since the shedding of blood would then not fit the type.

*(Luke 24:39 KJV) Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.*

When the Lord Jesus Christ was resurrected from the dead and was on the shore, He asked for something to eat. They gave Him a piece of broiled fish and a honeycomb. Then He makes the statement found in Luke 24:39 that it was really Him as He showed them His hands and feet. He told them that a spirit does not have flesh and bones. Along with flesh and bones, blood is needed for the completion of the body. So if Christ died in His spiritual essence before the foundation of the world, no blood could have been shed.

*(Heb 9:22 KJV) And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.*

This verse is probably the most preeminent verse on the subject. Here the Bible straightly teaches that without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin. If Christ died before the foundation of the world in His spirit essence, then there would have been no shedding of any blood and therefore, based upon the above verse, could not have paid for the sins of the Elect until He came into the world and died on the cross in 33 A.D. When He became flesh and blood, then He was able to pay for the sins of His people but not before the incarnation.

### **Evangelism**

*(Luke 24:49 KJV) And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.*

After the Lord Jesus Christ was resurrected, He told the disciples to wait in Jerusalem and they would receive the promise of the Father which was the giving of the Holy Spirit. If Christ died and was resurrected before the foundation of the world, then the giving of the Holy Spirit should have happened the moment that creation happened. This, of course, did not happen until Christ went to the physical cross at Calvary.

### **Christ and the Cross**

In this section I want to look at some verses which do teach directly that Christ died for the sins of His people on Calvary, in time and not eternity. Since there are many verses on this subject, we will be unable to hit every verse but will try and look at the most direct verses.

*(Mat 1:21 KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.*

Here at the outset Mary is carrying the Lord Jesus and Joseph receives in a dream that the baby was conceived of the Holy Ghost. In the above verse we read why the Lord Jesus is coming into the world. He is going to save His people from their sin, that is, He is going to fulfill the task of dying for His people. Now it is interesting to note that the words “shall save” is in the Future tense in the Greek. This means, that if Christ already died for the sins of His people, then those words should be in the past tense. However, since it is in the future tense, it means that it has not happened yet and is determined for a future date.

*(John 19:30 KJV) When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.*

If Jesus had paid for the sins of His people before the foundation of the world, then the salvation plan should have been finished at that time. Here in John 19:30, Jesus is stating “It is finished” just before he died on the cross. This verse teaches us plainly that God’s salvation plan was completed on the cross in time and not in eternity past.

*(Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;*

Here is a verse which teaches that all the transgressions which we have committed have been forgiven. That is, because when Christ went to the cross, He took all our sins and iniquities, plus all the ordinances of the law which we failed to keep and nailed them to His cross. This means that we have been freed from the penalty of the law because of Him taking our sins and nailing them to the cross. There were no nails or wood before the foundation of the world because God had not yet created them.

*(Heb 1:1-3 KJV) God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, {2} Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; {3} Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;*

Here we read that Christ had purged our sins by Himself. Christ was the sacrifice for sins and after He had successfully cleansed the Elect of sins, He went back to Heaven and sat down on the right hand of God the Father. If Christ would have purged our sins before the foundation of the world, then this Scripture would make no sense because how could He go back to Heaven when He was already up there? This verse teaches us plainly that Christ went back to Heaven after His resurrection and now He sits on the right hand of God the Father. *(Mark 14:62 KJV) And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.* Jesus sits on the right Hand of God ruling, reigning, and interceding until the time appointed when He will return to earth to bring all His children home to glory and then begin the final judgment of the unsaved.

*(Gen 3:15 KJV) And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.*

Here is a verse which prophesies the death of Christ. If you notice, God states that He will put enmity between the woman and Satan. Now if this took place before the foundation of the world, where did the woman come from? Adam and Eve were not yet created. So Genesis 3:15 is a future prophecy and not a fulfillment of a past event.

*(1 Cor 15:3-4 KJV) For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; {4} And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:*

Here is another premier set of verses as it speaks of Christ dying for our sins, according to the Scriptures. The Scriptures were not yet written until the time of Moses when he wrote the Pentateuch under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Then over the next thousand years, others penned the rest of the Scriptures under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Then these Scriptures state that He was buried and rose again on the third day

according to the Scriptures. *(Psa 16:10 KJV) For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. (Hosea 6:2 KJV) After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight.* Now in Heaven, there is no time, just eternity. So there would be no days in Heaven, so how could Christ rise on the third day according to the Scriptures when there was no days until God created the world? These verses are speaking of the time when Christ went to the physical cross in 33 A.D and not before the foundation of the world because the scenario would not fit making these verses have no meaning.

*(Mat 20:28 KJV) Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.*

The Lord Jesus Himself states that He came not to be ministered unto, but He came to minister and to give His life a ransom for many. If the penalty for sin had been paid before the foundation of the world, then why would He still have to give His life as a ransom for many, that is, He still had to pay the penalty for the sins of His people. This was not accomplished before the foundation of the world but as of the timing of this Scripture, it was still a future event. The Scriptures states plainly that He came into this world for the purpose of dying for His people. If this would have been accomplished before the foundation of the world, then He would not have had to die for their sins again because it would have been already accomplished.

*(1 Pet 2:23-24 KJV) Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: {24} Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.*

Here is another premier set of verses which teach us that Christ bore our sins on the cross at Calvary and not before the foundations of the world. Camping states that when Christ went to the cross, He was not there to pay for our sins. However, these verses in 1 Peter state exactly the opposite that Christ bore our sins on the cross and coupled with that by His stripes we were healed, that is, we receive spiritual healing for our dead souls. He made them alive. The scourging and the crucifixion were one cohesive event which brought about the salvation of the Elect and that was done on the cross on Calvary, in time and not eternity. In light of these verses, how could Camping make a heretical statement that Christ did not go to the cross to pay for our sins when the verse is so plain that He bore our sins on the cross? The word "body" in verse 24 in the Greek is "soma" which describes an actual physical body and not a spiritual body. The last part of verse 24 speaks about being healed by his stripes. Which one of the angels whipped Jesus in Heaven?

*(Heb 10:5 KJV) Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me: (Heb 10:10 KJV) By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.*

These two verses teach us that God had prepared a physical body for the Lord Jesus Christ when He came into the world. Then in verse 10, the Scripture teaches us that it was through the offering of this body of Jesus Christ on Calvary, that the Elect of God are

sanctified, that is, they are saved, because sanctified and holy are the same word in the Greek. *(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:* So these verses in Hebrews plainly teach us that we have become saved through the body of Christ who physically died on Calvary in 33 A.D, and not before the foundation of the world. Once again there is no intimation at all that the sins of the Elect were paid for before the foundation of the world. Everything in the Bible points to Calvary!

*(1 Pet 3:18 KJV) For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:*

Here is another plain verse which teaches us that Christ was physically put to death on Calvary. It states plainly He was in a body of flesh and the result of this would be salvation for the Elect. The verse stresses that Christ suffered only once for this sins of the Elect and that was while He was in His physical body on earth.

### **The Great Biblical Principle**

Here is a great biblical principle which is rejected by the Campingites in favor of walking by sight.

*(Romans 4:17 KJV) (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.*

This principle is best illustrated in the book of Isaiah.

*(Isa 44:28 KJV) That saith of Cyrus, He is my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid.*

*(Isa 45:1 KJV) Thus saith the LORD to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him; and I will loose the loins of kings, to open before him the two leaved gates; and the gates shall not be shut;*

Let us continue on and see another example of God calling something that was not yet as though it was. In Isaiah 45:1, we read that the Lord is revealing through Isaiah a man named Cyrus and calling him his anointed. Isaiah prophesied during the reigns of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah. This puts the ministry of Isaiah at about 750-700 BC. Now here we have Cyrus who was the king and founder of the Persian Empire who was born about 600 B.C. Isn't it interesting that God calls Cyrus His anointed and yet Cyrus would not be born for at least 150 years. Isaiah 45:1 does not say that Cyrus will be the anointed but God is speaking to Cyrus as His anointed. Here is a fantastic example of the Lord calling what is not yet as if it was. Do you see the principle at work? Time is not a factor but the faithfulness of God is, just like with Abraham. No time frame was given from the promise to the birth. In this verse no time frame is given to Isaiah as to when Cyrus will reign over Persia, in fact, Isaiah would not have even known who he was. Babylon was still the major power at this time and Persia did not exist. So God was calling King Cyrus as though he was when he was not yet.

*(Eph 2:6-7 KJV) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: {7} That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.*

Let us look at another example of God calling something that is not as though it was. In Ephesians 2:6, we read that God has raised us up together and made us sit in heavenly places. In verses 1-5, the discussion is about the fact that we are spiritually dead before salvation and God then quickens us and raises us up. You who are reading this, where are you right now? Are you sitting in a heavenly place in Christ Jesus? Nope! God sees us already up there seated with Christ. Notice in verse 7, it speaks of “ages to come” which is speaking of eternity where He will show the church as His redeemed by His Grace. We are not yet in Heaven because the last day has not come and there are still Elect to be saved. Yet, since God already sees us in Heaven, seated with Christ, He is calling what is not yet as though it was.

The great principle is that God already sees everything as happened and He speaks of it in that language. This is why when He states that Christ was slain from the foundation of the world, He is stating that it is as good as done. Did not Cyrus rule and reign about 250 years later? He sure did and that is why we must look for these verses which give understanding to these issues. If God speaks something, it is as good as if it was done already. It is called “walking by faith and not by sight.” So we see the principle from Romans 4:17 as being very active in both the Old and New Testaments. God is outside of time so when He makes declarations like we have seen, it behooves us to accept them by faith.

### **Summary**

As we have plainly seen, the penalty for the sins of the Elect were not paid before the foundation of the world. What we saw was that the death of Christ was already planned as He was foreordained or appointed beforehand for this task. We looked at ten sets of single and multiple verses and plainly saw that the atonement for the sins of God’s people was planned back in eternity but fulfilled in time. The idea that the physical cross was only a demonstration is a ludicrous assumption because the Bible no where tells us or even intimates that the cross was only a demonstration of how Christ suffered before the foundation of the world. Christ bore the full wrath of God on Calvary for the sins of the Elect and this we saw in the verses that we read and we did not even have to over-explain or allegorize them because they were basically self-explanatory. So once again, Harold Camping has created another teaching which does not exist in Scripture and therefore must be rejected if we are to remain faithful to the Scriptures.

## The End Of Salvation

by Dr. Ken Matto

(John 19:30 KJV) When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **It is finished**: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

(Heb 10:18 KJV) Now where remission of these is, there is **no more offering for sin**.

No it's not what you are thinking! God continues to save His elect today and until He saves the very last one He intends to save, it will remain the day of grace. When the last one becomes saved, then that will usher in the Day of the Lord or Judgment day when all the unbelievers will stand before the Lord and give an account for their lives and then be cast into an eternal hell for payment for their sins.

The end of salvation that I have in view is stated in our two opening verses. When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross and before He died, He stated that God's majestic salvation plan was complete. Hebrews 10:18 states that there is no more offering for sin. Why? When the Lord Jesus went to the cross, He effectively paid for the sins of all His elect which resulted in the fact that no more sacrifice for salvation will be needed. Every sin of His elect was now atoned for. Christ did not offer salvation to the whole world because of His sacrifice rather He died for a specific group of people, namely, His elect.

(John 17:12 KJV) While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: **those that thou gavest me I have kept**, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

(Mat 1:21 KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: **for he shall save his people from their sins**.

Since all the sins of His elect were now paid for, there is no reason for any more sacrifice to take place since it was complete.

(Heb 10:12 KJV) But this man, after he had offered **one sacrifice for sins for ever**, sat down on the right hand of God;

The only part of God's salvation plan which is to be completed is the part of the actual saving of the elect until the final one on the last day. God has committed Himself to save every last one. As we see in the following verse that all will come to repentance which is a synonym for salvation, since a person cannot repent before salvation, they must be saved first, then cometh salvation.

(2 Pet 3:9 KJV) The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; **but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**.

The "any" in the above verse are those who were predestined for salvation from the foundations of the earth. As I was pondering these things in anticipation of preaching this message at my home church, the Lord opened up some other Scriptures which Christians may value concerning the end of other things. Not only was the penalty for sin for God's elect paid for but because of Calvary there were other major benefits for the believer and I want to give you ten great "ends" which the believer can count on.

### **1. Romans 10:4 - The End of the Law for His elect**

(Rom 10:4 KJV) For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

No believer ever has to worry about keeping the tenets of the law for salvation. Christ completely and successfully met the demands of God's Holy Law on Calvary. The believer's heritage is to rest in Calvary and never worry about keeping the law. No human can ever keep God's law in its entirety and since Christ has done it for His elect, we now rest. No Christian will ever be judged for any sin, since it is all gone.

(Heb 4:9-10 KJV) There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God. {10} For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

(Heb 8:12 KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

### **2. 2 Cor 11:15 - The End of Satan**

(2 Cor 11:15 KJV) Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

Another great end the believer can look forward to is the end of Satan. Right now we face many trials and hindrances in our Christian walk because of evil but there is going to come a day when all this evil shall be ended. However, while we are on this earth we may enjoy a little of that life to come by not falling for his temptations. Satan is a defeated foe and he has absolutely no authority over the true Christian. There is no reason to go around and start rebuking the devil at every turn. He was totally defeated at Calvary. He still has power over the unbeliever but has none over the Christian.

(John 14:30 KJV) Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

Jesus is stating in this verse that Satan cannot find any sin or can make any true accusation against Christ. What about the believer, can we make that claim? YUP!

(Rom 8:33 KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? **It is God that justifieth.**

God Himself is the one that justifies (declares not guilty) His elect. How could God do that? Do you remember in the first part of this study we saw that Christ had completely fulfilled the demands of God's righteous law and those who are in Christ have to themselves imputed, by God, the same position of having fulfilled the law. This is why Satan cannot lay any rightful charges or accusations against us. He could not do it against Job because Job was saved and therefore his sins were gone also because in principle Christ was slain before the foundation of the world.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the **Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.**

### **3. 1 Cor. 1:8 - The End of Judgment for the Believer**

(1 Cor 1:8 KJV) Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

There are two judgment days written in Scripture. The first one is already completed. The first judgment was when all the children of God were judged and this was at Calvary. The second one is on the last day when all the unbelievers will be judged and cast into hell for their sins.

(2 Cor 5:10 KJV) For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

(Rom 14:10 KJV) But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

One of the major teachings in the church designed to bring Christians back into spiritual bondage is the idea that we are going to receive rewards for our Christian duties or life. This idea stems from 2 Corinthians 5:10 where it is commonly taught that there will be a judgment of the Christian's works and it will be at that point when we will receive rewards or loss of rewards. These rewards that people say we will receive are crowns and then someday we will cast those crowns at the feet of Jesus. Let us briefly see if this scenario is correct.

(James 4:17 KJV) Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

Let us look at the above verse and ask the question, "Should I witness to everyone I meet?" Let us say I witnessed to 10,000 people in my life but there were a few I did not witness to. Since being a witness to the world is the command of Christ in the Great Commission and I did not witness to some then I knew what good to do and did it not, therefore according to James 4:17 it is sin. Now if I have sinned according to the rewards preachers, I have lost my rewards BUT the Bible teaches in Colossians 2:13-14:

(Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, **having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;**

The Scriptures teach that I have been forgiven for **all** my sins. Why? Because as a believer I was already judged for my sins at Calvary and am now found not guilty before God. So if I stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ with the sin of not witnessing then I will not be there for loss of rewards but I will be there for sin and if I am to be judged for sin, then I will be cast into Hell which means I was never saved. Now the rewards preachers say but the believers have already been judged for their sins and now their works must be judged.

I would like to know where in Scripture it states that the penalty for sin is loss of rewards and not eternal damnation. If the believer has already been judged for sin and then must stand again for sin, then the atonement of Christ was incomplete and this is taught nowhere in the Bible. The Believer has already stood before God and the Lord Jesus Christ and was judged and declared not guilty AKA justified because the sacrifice of Christ was accepted by God the Father for payment for the sins of the elect. (Rev 14:5 KJV) And in their mouth was found no guile: **for they are without fault before the throne of God.** Since we are without fault before the throne of God, then why must we be judged at the throne of God? It doesn't make sense logically or biblically. This idea of a judgment for rewards is as bogus as the Age of Accountability and the literal 1,000 year reign of Christ.

#### **4. Romans 6:22 - The End of Temporal Living**

(Rom 6:22 KJV) But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

It seems life is so temporal. Temporal being a word to describe time in relation to eternity. Everything is so tied to the clock, but the believer, although tied to the same time constraints as the rest of the world has a different view of life. We view things with the eyes of eternity since we are heaven bound. The unsaved will never look at things with an eternal perspective because their whole being is tied to this earth and that is all they look for.

(Eccl 3:11 KJV) He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set **the world** in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.

The words "the world" is the Hebrew word "ethhaolam" which means "the eternity." God has set eternity in the hearts of every human being but only the believer, because of a regenerated spirit, will live in the light of its reality. The unbeliever has shrouded eternity

because if they acknowledge there is an eternity, then they will know there is a God which they will have to be accountable to.

(2 Cor 4:15-18 KJV) For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God. {16} For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. {17} **For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;** {18} While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

### **5. Amos 3:15 - The end of inequality**

(Amos 3:15 KJV) And I will smite the winter house with the summer house; and the houses of ivory shall perish, and the great houses shall have an end, saith the LORD.

There are many rich people in the world today who think that because they are living in the lap of luxury, believe everything is going to be okay. The truth is that they too are going to face the same judgment that the unsaved poor people are going to face and there will be no partiality. God will judge every social class according to their works and no one will escape.

(James 5:1-5 KJV) Go to now, **ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.** {2} Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are motheaten. {3} Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days. {4} Behold, the hire of the labourers who have reaped down your fields, **which is of you kept back by fraud,** crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth. {5} **Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.**

(1 Sam 2:7 KJV) The LORD maketh poor, and maketh rich: he bringeth low, and lifteth up.

One of the biggest mistakes that rich people make is the belief they are self-made and that their own wisdom and business savvy has gotten them to their lofty position. They believe they are financially secure and need nothing, especially God. The verse tells us that God is the giver of riches and that He can raise up the riches and take them away. There is nothing inherently wrong about being wealthy. It is only when you glorify yourself and arrogantly display your wealth to the world and to those who have less. Who really NEEDS a Lincoln Navigator, a Lexus SUV or a Mercedes SUV? It is basically to show the others on the road you have money. The super rich in this world, those who start wars and bankrupt nations with debt will also be judged for their sins against God and mankind.

## **6. Daniel 9:24 - The End of Sin**

(Dan 9:24 KJV) Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.

One of the most beautiful passages in the Bible concerning the end of sin is this passage located in Daniel. This is a prophecy of the first coming of the Lord Jesus Christ who came to die for His people (Matt. 1:21). This time frame goes from the time of Ezra to the crucifixion of Christ. It is a total time span of 490 years. (458 BC-33 AD) We see in this passage that it is dripping with the gospel message and we can know this for sure since this passage speaks of "everlasting righteousness" which is a synonym for the gospel. When the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross He fully atoned for all the ones He intended on saving. This means that God no longer sees the sins of the believer because they have been removed and this is why God can look at us as righteous. We see in this passage that the term "end of sins" is used. This means that the believer will have no more judgment for sin since they are all atoned for. Sin for the believer is ended. This does not mean each and every true believer will not sin but it means the sins they commit have been atoned for in their entirety.

Then we see the term "make reconciliation." (Rom 5:10 KJV) "For if, when we were enemies, **we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son**, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life." We see that the Lord Jesus Christ also reconciled us unto God through His atonement. The Lord Jesus Christ made an end to the transgression of God's law by His elect by fulfilling the demands of the law, and imputing to us, that same status of having fulfilled the law through the atonement of Christ and thus we have the term "vicarious atonement."

Then God talks about the Holy City. Before the crucifixion of Christ the Holy City was Jerusalem:

(Neh 11:1 KJV) And the rulers of the people dwelt at Jerusalem: the rest of the people also cast lots, to bring one of ten to dwell in **Jerusalem the holy city**, and nine parts to dwell in other cities.

After the crucifixion and resurrection of Christ, the Holy City was no longer considered a physical city but rather the body of believers.

(Rev 21:2 KJV) And I John saw **the holy city, new Jerusalem**, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

(Mat 27:51-53 KJV) And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; {52} And the graves were

opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, {53} And came out of the graves after his resurrection, **and went into the holy city**, and appeared unto many.

Here we see a picture of what the Last Day is going to be like. All the bodies of the Saints will arise and then go into the Holy City with all the other believers (the many) and will then live with Christ forever in the new heaven and new earth. It will be a place of righteousness forever. It will truly be a holy city since only holiness will reign.

### **7. Job 26:10 - The End of vain living**

(Job 26:10 KJV) He hath compassed the waters with bounds, until the day and night come to an end.

No longer does the believer have to view life as a pool of vanity because we now have purpose in our life and even the most mundane tasks can be done to the glory of God. (1 Cor 10:31 KJV) "Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God." The greatest place for our light to shine is in the workplace where others can gain a blessing from our work and from our spiritual insights. If we walk in to our jobs with the same attitude the world does, then we have no thankfulness in our hearts for what God has provided. Let us gain a new spiritual perspective on things as Christians. There is no such thing as a secular place for wherever the Christian goes, then that place automatically becomes a spiritual territory. This is why the Bible tells us to let our light shine, not only on Sunday, but on Monday. Do you realize that you spend 14.29% of your life on Monday? So then why do you despise it so much? Remember, this is the day the Lord hath made and that does not refer to Sunday specifically. Think about it!

### **8. Psalm 37:37 - The End of Turmoil**

(Psa 37:37 KJV) Mark the perfect man, and behold the upright: for the end of that man is peace.

Oh yes, there are going to be times in our lives when everything is going to seem like it is upside down and it is at these times when we can manifest the peace of God in our lives. God is in control of every situation in our lives and many times things happen where we cannot control anything and those are the times we rest in the peace of God. (Isa 26:3 KJV) Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee.

The times we become disheveled in our lives are the times our eyes are focusing on the situation and not on the Lord. There are many verses in Scripture which teach us to wait on the Lord. Waiting on God is not a waste of time but it is an investment. If we could learn to focus on the Lord and not on the problems, we could harness the key to personal peace. This does not mean we don't do our part. If you are working outside and you sweat up a great deal and are thirsty, we will not look to heaven and say "Oh Lord make me unthirsty," instead we will go to the tap and drink a lot of water to replenish what we have lost. The same principle holds true with any situation you are caught in, you do what you can while simultaneously trusting and waiting on the Lord. For example, if you lose

your job, you are not going to go home and just sleep all day and tell the Lord to find you another job. The key is to go job hunting and leave the results to God.

### **9. Psalm 46:9 - The End of War (With God)**

(Psa 46:9 KJV) He maketh wars to cease unto the end of the earth; he breaketh the bow, and cutteth the spear in sunder; he burneth the chariot in the fire.

Here is another great salvation verse telling us who does the saving. The believer is no longer at war with God because of the atonement of Christ. We see in this verse that it is God who does the saving because He is the one who causes the war to cease between Him and an individual He saves. (Rom 5:1 KJV) "Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:" We have peace with God because the war between us is over and it was God who did it, not us of our mythical free will. God destroys all the weapons of war which we may try to use against Him and makes us an ally where we once were enemies.

### **10. The End of Desolation**

(Isa 62:4 KJV) Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.

No longer will the believer ever have to face being forsaken or abandoned. God promises that He will be married to us. That is the meaning of the word "Beulah" and that is the reason that so many songs have been written about it. Since we are married to God and He will never divorce us, all fear of abandonment is gone. The word "Hephzibah" means "my delight is in her" and since we are the body of Christ, God has placed His delight on the body. Things may happen in this world which may seem like Heaven is silent when we pray but we can be assured that we are never forsaken nor abandoned.

(Jer 31:3 KJV) The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.

## THE FULLNESS OF THE ATONEMENT

by Dr. Ken Matto

When we speak of the vicarious or substitutionary atonement of Christ, what are we really speaking of? Is it the fact of eternal security or is that a derivative of the atonement? In other words, why do we receive eternal salvation? What really happened when the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross for those He planned to save? I guess if you ask 3 preachers you would probably receive 4 answers. I want to delve into four aspects of the atonement which will give us a good understanding of some verses which when juxtaposed seem to contradict each other. Let me assure you, there are no contradictions in the Bible. The seeming contradictions are there to confound the wise.

I wish to explore the following four elements of the atonement which were bestowed upon the child of God:

- .. Christ made us alive!
- .. Christ destroyed all my sin!
- .. Christ gave us a new spirit whereby we do not sin!
- .. The Preparation for Heaven!

There are no doubt many more but these (especially the second and third) have been somewhat a mystery to the believer. My goal is to open up some of the more difficult passages and show the reader the fullness of the atonement of Christ, that it is more than just the method of entrance into heaven. It is the believer's qualification for eternal life and it is all a gift. What is the qualification for eternal life? It is purity of spirit on the believer's part. This is not the doctrine of entire sanctification which Wesley taught. That doctrine is erroneous since how can sinful man expunge his own sins to the point of canceling original sin? Living a holy life to expurgate sin from our life is a work and is unacceptable in God's sight. Our holiness is a result of what Christ did, not what we do. This we will see when we study the portion on receiving a new Spirit whereby we "cannot" sin. We will see that all has been taken care of by Christ.

### BLESSING 1

#### *CHRIST MADE US ALIVE!*

(Eph 2:1-6 KJV) And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: {2} Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: {3} Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. {4} But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, {5} Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) {6} And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

As you can see by these verses we were spiritually dead, that is, we were alive unto the things of the world and dead toward the things of God. In other words, we were enemies of God as all the rest of the unbelievers are in this world. We wanted nothing to do with God or "religion." Verse 4 tells us that God rich in mercy made us alive together with Christ. In other words, a resurrection took place. Now what type of resurrection? When

you became saved, did your physical body die and was raised from the dead? Of course not!

Something else was raised and that was your dead spirit as we read in Ephesians 2:1-6. Do we have other biblical evidence to support this? Let's take a quick look at Revelation 20:5-6:

(Rev 20:5-6 KJV) But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. {6} Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Notice this verse teaches that the second death has no power over the first resurrection. Why? The first resurrection was when we received our resurrected souls. We were dead and now we were made alive. It is at the moment of salvation that God's elect receives their resurrected soul and all spiritual blessings which accompany it.

(Eph 1:3 KJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

Proponents of the universal atonement theory will have a problem with Eph. 1:3 and the following verses from Romans. Christ did not die for the sins of every person on earth, He died only for those He planned to save. If you notice the Bible uses the word "us" to describe whom Christ died for. This means it is a select group of people on earth and not the entire earth's population.

(Rom 5:8-11 KJV) But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. {9} Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. {10} For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. {11} And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

This is biblical evidence that Christ died for a specific group of people and as a result of His death we receive the following benefits of the atonement:

Vs 8 - God's love is focused on us

Vs 9 - Justified by His blood

Vs 9 - Saved from wrath

Vs 10 - Reconciled to God

Vs 11- Joy in God

Vs 11 - We received the atonement

We have been given great things as a result of the atonement of Christ. He made us alive whereas before we were dead.

(Rom 6:11-13 KJV) Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. {12} Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. {13} Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

The atonement of Christ made His people alive unto the things of God. This is the first magnificent blessing from the atonement.

## **BLESSING 2**

### ***CHRIST DESTROYED ALL MY SIN***

(1 John 3:5-8 KJV) And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin. {6} Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. {7} Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous. {8} He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

In this section and the one following I wish to open up some passages which seem to hold heavy contradiction and confusion until we really get into the biblical method of hermeneutics which is found in 1 Corinthians 2:13, "Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual." If we are to understand Scripture, it must be interpreted with Scripture. This is God's method of giving us understanding. Commentary based interpretation is dangerous as all interpretations made outside of Scripture.

(Heb 2:14 KJV) Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

This passage is a gateway to the understanding of the fullness of the atonement. It tells us that Christ, through His death, destroyed Satan. If Satan is destroyed then why do we see so much sin in the world and why is it escalating? We must look at this passage in two ways, futuristic and contemporary. First, Satan has been defeated at the cross and has been sentenced to eternal damnation when the Lord returns on the last day. Secondly, Satan has no power over the Christian. When we sin it is purely voluntary because we still have bodies that lust after sin. We can blame others or even Satan for our sin but the real blame is always to be laid at our door step. The power of death which has been defeated is the power of the second death over which the believer is victorious because of Christ. John 14:30 states: (KJV) *Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.*

The Lord Jesus Christ is giving a great principle of the Christian life. If Satan had nothing in Christ, as Children of God, he has nothing in us either which means he has no authority over us. We must never think for a moment that we were translated out of the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of God with God still allowing Satan to have any authority over us. We are ruled by Christ and not Satan. Satan can work from a base of a sinful, dead spirit, because there is nothing to hinder his work. We are alive unto God and dead to sin as Romans 6 tells us. Christ destroyed my sin and now I am able to live unto God in an unhindered fashion.

(Heb 10:16-17 KJV) This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; {17} And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

One of the great aspects of the covenant is that God has forgiven and forgotten my sins. All my sins were expunged because of Christ. This verse must be skipped by those who

advocate you can lose your salvation because if God has forgiven all our sins and forgotten them, then what can God hold against us?

(Isa 43:25 KJV) I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

This is not a promise to national Israel, it is a promise to the Israel of God. Only the sin of the Christian is completely blotted out. Is this borne out in other passages of Scripture? Yes, indeed it is!

(Heb 10:18 KJV) Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

God continues His thoughts on the heels of those two great verses which state He forgave and forgot our sins that there is no more offering for sin. Why is there no more offering for sin? There is no more offering for sin because there is no more sin in the believer's life to be atoned for. But I sin every day and will till I die or the Lord returns, why do I do this if my sins have been destroyed? The better question to ask is when were my sins atoned for? When were they removed? Was it at the cross? What saith the Scripture?

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Here we see a mighty truth revealed concerning the election of the believer. Before there was a world or universe, God already chose His children. Does this apply to the believer? It sure does! Let us look at the following verses which continue this marvelous thought.

(Eph 1:5-7 KJV) Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, {6} To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. {7} In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

Did you see what Verse 4 stated?

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Did you see that? God chose His children to be holy and blameless before the foundation of the world. This means that before you were even born, your sins were paid for already in principle.

(Rev 14:1-5 KJV) And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. {2} And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: {3} And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. {4} These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. {5} And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

The 144,000 is a figurative number which is a representation of all the true believers on earth. These verses speak of the Christians in heaven before the lamb and notice their

condition: redeemed, no guile in their mouth, without fault, they follow the Lamb, not defiled by false religion (women), we are chaste virgins. Ephesians 1:4 has given us insight into the character of the believer before birth. If we are made holy and blameless before God, then there is only one way this can be accomplished, and that is if our sins were paid for before the foundations of the world. Do we have Biblical evidence for such a statement? We sure do!

(Heb 4:3 KJV) For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

In principle Christ was already slain before the foundation of the world, which means that God saw me as sinless from the moment of my birth because the salvation plan was already completed in eternity. We have a saying in Christianity, "Christ died for my sins." Do you remember what He said while still on the cross with breath in his body?

(John 19:30 KJV) When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

Jesus said, "It is finished." Then He died. God's salvation plan was completed in principle before the foundation of the world and in essence at Calvary. Yes, Christ did die for my sins, but the salvation plan was completed before he died. The complete atonement for my sins were made in eternity, yet completed on earth. This atonement plan is so thorough yet there are those who feel they can lose their salvation. The sad fact is they live a miserable existence trying to work for something already paid for. Instead of seeing God as a compassionate, joyful Father, they view Him as a cruel taskmaster making us work for our portion of the salvation plan. Perish the thought that we can do anything to add or complete an already completed salvation plan. It is the height of arrogance to believe one can add anything to God's perfect plan.

Now the question remains, if I am sinless in God's sight, where is all the sin that I am performing coming from? The answer is simple. All the sins which I am committing in my life are the sins which were paid for in eternity by Christ. Let us look at 1 John 1:10: (KJV) "If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us."

Even though God views us as sinless, the truth remains that I am a part of the human race which means I still sin. The sins that I commit are atoned for and this is why God can look upon me as sinless. If I say I have no sin I would be saying that Christ died in vain since I was sinlessly perfect to begin with, therefore able to save myself. The essence of 1 John 1:10 is that even though Christ died for me, I will commit sin but they have been forgiven. Christ died for the sins I would commit from the time of my birth to the time of my home going. This is why the Bible says in Hebrews 10:18 there is no more offering for sin, because atonement was a one time event lasting for eternity. Those who are covered are saved, those who are not are unsaved and will remain unsaved. There is no

"you can lose your salvation" doctrine taught in Scripture. There are only two camps on earth, saved and unsaved.

(1 John 2:19 KJV) They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

This verse reveals that those who go out from the camp of the Lord did not lose salvation, they were never saved to begin with. We must never build into Scripture more than God has put there. We can happily see that Christ destroyed all my sins and they will never be held against me, for they are forgiven and forgotten. Pity the person who thinks God's plan is incomplete without their works. Error!

### **BLESSING 3**

#### ***CHRIST GAVE US A SPIRIT WHEREBY WE DO NOT SIN***

What a statement to make! Don't we Christians sin after salvation? Well, remember we tackled the sin problem in the last section and found out that we are committing all the sins which Christ already atoned for. In 1 John 3:9, we have a very peculiar verse to reckon with.

(1 John 3:9 KJV) Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

Notice the wording in a portion of this verse, "and he cannot sin." Is God saying that we cannot sin if we belong to Him. The word "cannot" is a word of ability and not a word of permission. In essence if we belong to God we cannot sin. How then is this possible? Let us look at two more verses:

(1 John 3:8 KJV) He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

(1 John 3:10 KJV) In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

As we look at these two verses we plainly see that whosoever sins is of the devil and that sin reveals a distinction between the children of God and the children of Satan. As Christians that sin every day, I think we need to dig deeper as to what God is saying here so we do not arrive at an erroneous conclusion concerning our standing with God. To understand the verses in 1 John, we need to expand our study to Romans 7:15-22.

(Rom 7:15 KJV) For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

In verse 15 we see Paul surfacing the spirit-flesh struggle. As long as we remain in these earthly tabernacles we will always have this struggle. We want to do good but yet we will do the very things we hate. It is a spiritual war to fight against the flesh.

(Rom 7:16 KJV) If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.

The Bible is teaching us that we are unable to keep the law and the law of God has a good handle on human beings. We may have a desire to do good but because of sin, the

working out of that desire may result in some sinful acts. In other words, God is correct when He says we cannot keep the law.

(Rom 7:17 KJV) Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

A major principle unfolds for us in understanding the sin problem in the Christian's life. Paul states that when he sins it is no longer he that does it but sin that dwells in him. How could that be when he performs the sin, how could it not be him? The sin principle remains in the believer after salvation and the next verse tells us how.

(Rom 7:18 KJV) For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.

Here is the culprit that causes the Christian to sin. THE FLESH! Paul says that he wills to do good but that he cannot because sin abides in his flesh. Paul makes sure he emphasizes the fact that the no good thing is what dwells in his flesh not his spirit. Romans 6:12 says, "Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof." Do you see where the sin abides? It is in the flesh and not the spirit. There is a war waging between the mortal body and the eternal body which is our spirit essence.

(Rom 7:19 KJV) For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

In verse 19 we see the struggle between spirit and flesh continue. It will never cease until we are freed from our earthly bodies.

(Rom 7:20 KJV) Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

Paul reiterates that sin is the culprit and not "I."

(Rom 7:21 KJV) I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. Good is always hounded by evil.

(Rom 7:22 KJV) For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

Here is the verse that we need to look at as it ties together 1 John and Romans. The law of God after the inward man is a synonym for salvation, it is the regenerated spirit, in contrast to the outward man which is corrupted flesh. The reason Paul says that it is not "I" doing the sin is because he was given the same spirit that "cannot" sin as all believers are. The reason we have such a struggle between spirit and flesh is because we have a pure spirit given to us by God which is incapable of sinning and we have flesh that is corrupt and highly capable of sinning. As the war continues between a pure spirit and corrupt flesh we will always feel bad when we sin. This is how we grieve the Holy Spirit and sin should grieve us too. So to sum up this teaching we may conclude that the passages in 1 John are teaching us that because we are born again of the Holy Spirit and since the Holy Spirit is eternal God, we, in our spirit essence cannot sin but since we live in the flesh that pure spirit is surrounded by corruptible flesh which continually seeks to sin. This why we always have a spirit-flesh struggle.

Now let us pose a question at this point. Are there any examples of this in Scripture? There sure is and it is found in John 1:47!

(John 1:47 KJV) Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!

Isn't this an interesting verse where the creator of the universe calls a sinful human being an "Israelite indeed in whom is no guile!" How could this be? The Bible teaches that every human being created on earth is a sinner, so how could there be one in which is no guile? The word "guile" may also be translated "deceit or craftiness." There is a little deceit and craftiness in all of us, so why not Nathanael? Let us look further at John 1:49. (KJV) Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.

Here is a testimony of a saved man. So this would mean that Nathanael would have a proper understanding of who Christ is. Now back to verse 47 for a moment. When Christ describes Nathanael as an "Israelite" he was not only describing him as belonging to the physical nation of Israel but Nathanael was a member of the "Israel of God." Christ saw him as a redeemed man and could say he had no guile because Christ knew that Nathanael's sin was removed before the foundation of the world.

Christ calls his sheep by name. There is no greater example of this in Scripture than the calling of Lazarus from the dead. Christ knew him and called him by name. So we see clearly that Christ was looking at Nathanael in the spirit and not the flesh. If Christ saw him according to the flesh, He would have seen only sin and corruption.

(2 Cor 5:16-17 KJV) Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more. {17} Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

These two verses give us the insight we need to know how Christ viewed Nathanael. He saw him according to his renewed spirit and not according to the old flesh. It is a shame that so many biblically illiterate pastors and theologians use verse 17 to approve divorce and remarriage. Verse 17 tells us that the old things (dead spirit toward God) have passed away and all things (a living Holy Spirit toward God) are become new. Our flesh was not saved only the inward man. When I hear a pastor abuse this verse to approve carnal behavior I grieve because the next generation of Christians will carry on that error. This entire study deals with what was made new and what was not. It is the spirit not the flesh. If the flesh and its deeds were made new, why do we need cemeteries? The reason why Christians obey the Bible is because our spirit rules the flesh and directs its operation, even though imperfectly because we get in the way of our own obedience.

#### **BLESSING 4**

##### ***THE RESULT IS PREPARATION FOR HEAVEN***

(2 Pet 1:11 KJV) For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Here is the simple result of the first three blessings. The result of being alive unto God, Christ destroying all my sin, and giving me a spirit whereby I do not sin qualifies me for Heaven. Something I did? No, something God did in eternity. It is called His salvation plan. Do you see how full the atonement of Christ was? He left nothing undone, all was completed. This is why if you are a truly saved Christian, you can never lose your salvation. Rebuke those who attempt to seduce you into believing you can lose your salvation. Maybe you can lose "your" salvation but you will never lose God's. He who has ears to hear!

## The Glorious Aspects of God's Salvation Program

by Dr. Ken Matto

(Psa 16:11 KJV) Thou wilt show me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.

(Psa 35:9 KJV) And my soul shall be joyful in the LORD: it shall rejoice in his salvation.

(Psa 62:7 KJV) In God is my salvation and my glory: the rock of my strength, and my refuge, is in God.

In these three verses above we capture the reality that salvation is a joyous thing. However, many Christians I know and many I converse with treat their salvation almost like a disease. This is simply because the majority of Christians really do not understand what has transpired in their lives when they became saved. I am preparing this treatise with the hopes that those who read it will understand the greatness of God's salvation plan. He did more than just save us for heaven and it is not arrogance or pride to assert these truths. Do you know that nowhere in the Bible does God ever refer to His children as sinners? Why? Because we have been totally redeemed by the Lord Jesus Christ! I will further expound on that in the study.

Unstudied clergy should read their Bibles more carefully and stop calling God's children sinners.

(Acts 10:15 KJV) And the voice spake unto him again the second time, **What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.**

(Acts 11:9 KJV) But the voice answered me again from heaven, **What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.**

(1 Cor 6:11 KJV) And such **were** some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Christ did not go to the cross to make us sinners. The term "sinners" in the Bible is synonymous with having the wrath of God abiding on you. The Child of God does not have the wrath of God on them. It was removed because of the vicarious atonement of Christ on behalf of His elect. If Christ removed all but one sin, then I am still reprobate and heading for Hell but this is not the case. Either Christ paid it all or nothing at all. (James 2:10 KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet **offend in one point, he is guilty of all.** Let us begin to look at some of the beautiful aspects of God's splendid salvation program.

### IN THE PAST

One of the greatest mysteries which keep theologians writing books is the question, did God know that Adam and Eve would sin? The answer of course is yes. Since God knows the beginning from the end, He knew that sin would enter the world. God was also well aware that as soon as sin entered into the human race, spiritual death would reign.

Acts 15:18 (KJV) Known unto God are **all his works** from the beginning of the world.  
Eph 2:1 (KJV) And you hath he quickened, **who were dead in trespasses and sins**:  
Eph 2:5 (KJV) Even **when we were dead in sins**, hath quickened us together with Christ,  
(by grace ye are saved;)  
Col 2:13 (KJV) And you, **being dead in your sins** and the uncircumcision of your flesh,  
hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

As we see in these three verses, sin plunged the entire human race into a condition of spiritual death. God knew that death was a condition which would be unalterable by man, He already named those He planned to save even before the world and universe existed.

Eph 1:4 (KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him **before the foundation of the world**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

2 Tim 1:9 (KJV) **Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling**, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which **was given us** in Christ Jesus **before the world began**,  
Heb 4:3 (KJV) For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: **although the works were finished from the foundation of the world**.

God's salvation plan would transfer His elect out of spiritual death into spiritual life. God had every right to allow the human race to just go to Hell by attrition rather than intervening with His merciful plan of salvation. He knew that no amount of good works or ritual or man's will could ever bring a person to salvation. Only those whom God named before the foundation of the world will come to Him because God Himself would open their spiritual eyes and ears.

John 1:12-13 (KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, **not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man**, but of God.

### **IN THE PRESENT**

During the course of our lifetime, at a moment which God had foreordained in eternity past, we would come to the saving knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ. Someone would hand us a tract, or we would hear the true gospel in some fashion and because that moment was appointed by God for the starting point of our salvation on earth, we would become born again by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit. We are now alive unto God but dead unto the things of the world. This salvation comes to God's elect at any age He determines. Sometimes He saves someone in the early years or He might save someone in their later years but nevertheless, if God named a person to be saved before the foundation of the world, that person will become saved during the course of their earthly sojourn, whether it be one minute after birth or one minute before death.

Acts 13:48 (KJV) And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: **and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.**

### **Transformation Not Reformation**

Another great aspect of God's salvation plan is the fact that He did not reform us, He transformed us. In the Christian life reformation takes place after transformation but reformation can never lead to transformation. A good verse which demonstrates the limits of reformation is found in Luke 11:24-26:

(Luke 11:24-26 KJV) When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, **I will return unto my house whence I came out.** {25} And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished. {26} Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; **and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first.**

These verses give us a great insight of those who try to clean up their life on their own merit. It is akin to someone who tries to sober up by means of a secular counseling program or retreat and then finally licks the alcohol for a while but since there is no underlying source of strength, the person gives in to the weakness and lust of the flesh and goes back to his old habit of drinking again. The same is with someone who gives up cigarette smoking with a patch and has victory for a while but then goes into a place where there is much smoking and all of a sudden he has a fleshly urge to smoke and restarts his habit. Reformation cannot completely claim victory over anything in the flesh, especially sin.

This is the marvel of God's salvation program because in the process of transformation, He kills the old and creates the new.

(2 Cor 5:17 KJV) Therefore if any man be in Christ, **he is a new creature:** old things are passed away; behold, **all things are become new.**

(Luke 5:37-38 KJV) And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. {38} **But new wine must be put into new bottles;** and both are preserved.

(Rom 6:2 KJV) God forbid. How shall we, **that are dead to sin,** live any longer therein?

(Rom 6:13 KJV) Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: **but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead,** and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

Notice the great principles in these verses. God tells us that those who are in Christ are new creatures not improved versions of what we once were. The Lord Jesus uses the analogy of new wine being placed in new wine skins or else the old will burst. Of course, here He speaks of Grace being given to His elect and as a result they are made new so the new wine will fit perfectly in their vessels. The old of course being the law which could

not bring a person to salvation mixed with grace (old in new wineskins) but when a person is saved by grace alone, they become new creations in the Kingdom of God.

Notice also in the above verses God uses the term "dead" in relationship to salvation. First, when a person becomes saved they become dead to sin, which means sin no longer has the drawing effect it had before salvation. Secondly, God uses this term in reference to serving Him by those that are "alive from the dead." This not only speaks of transformation of the believer but it speaks of the resurrection of our souls which I will touch on in the next section.

(Rom 12:2 KJV) And be not conformed to this world: but be ye **transformed** by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

The word "transformed" in this verse is the same word which described the Lord Jesus Christ on the Mount of Transfiguration. It means "to change shape or form." Paul uses this word to exhort us to be formed or transformed in Christ's image which is the goal of every Christian. So we see that God did not change us in the superficial sense but literally killed us, resurrected us, and transformed us.

### **Our Resurrected Soul**

Another great aspect of God's salvation program is He gave us a resurrected soul. We have already read that before salvation we were dead in our sins resulting in the inability to do anything to achieve salvation on our own. So what did God do to those He planned to save? The Bible teaches in Romans 10:17 that faith comes by hearing the Word of God. Now everybody has physical ears which can hear sounds and many of those physical ears come under the hearing of the Word of God, yet those still in spiritual death will be unable to respond to God's calling. So for God's elect to be able to respond to His calling they must be qualified to hear the gospel in a manner beyond the physical realm. The way God accomplished this is by the resurrection of the dead soul. When a person receives their resurrected soul, they are then alive unto God.

Do you remember the resurrection of Lazarus in John 11? Lazarus was as dead as could be, in fact the Biblical narrative even tells us his body stunk from decay after being in the grave 4 days. Our dead souls were akin to that same condition, they were dead. So Christ comes to the tomb and yells out to Lazarus to come forth, and Lazarus was resurrected to life once again. When God calls out our name for salvation, He resurrects our soul so we may be able to hear his calling, hence the biblical term, "He who has ears to hear."

(Rev 20:5-6 KJV) But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. **This is the first resurrection.** {6} Blessed and holy is he that hath part in **the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power**, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

These two verses give us an excellent understanding of the first resurrection or the resurrection of the soul. Notice the result of those who partake in the first resurrection,

the second death has no power over them. The second death being eternal damnation. When a person becomes born again, they are passed from death unto life.

(John 5:24 KJV) Verily, verily, I say unto you, **He that heareth my word**, and believeth on him that sent me, **hath everlasting life**, and shall not come into condemnation; **but is passed from death unto life**.

Notice how the Lord is saying that those who HEAR His word and believes and the only way a dead person can believe is to be made alive or resurrected like Lazarus. As Lazarus was passive in his resurrection, so are the children of God passive in their resurrection also. It is all of God! Did Lazarus have anything to do with his resurrection except receiving it? No! How can a dead man raise himself? So you see, you are still in the flesh until the Lord returns or comes for us individually but now because of your resurrected soul, you serve God instead of sin. Sin no longer has dominion over us but now we serve a new master.

(Rom 6:16 KJV) Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, **or of obedience unto righteousness?**

### **God Describes His Elect**

As we look into this section, we will find God's description of His elect a far cry from the pulpit pounders who continually beat their sheep week after week with the teaching that they are nothing but sinners. It is true we do sin after salvation but nowhere in the Bible does God call His redeemed "sinners." A sinner, according to Scripture, is one who has the wrath of God abiding on them. The elect of God, according to Scripture, are those who never have to face the wrath of God because all our sins were atoned for. I do not want to get into a discussion on the atonement here but click on my study "**The Fullness of the Atonement**" and read that study then come back and continue in this section. Go ahead, we will wait. Since there are so many different descriptions of the elect in Scripture, we will not cover every description but just enough to show how marvelously God views His elect

### **Kings**

(Rev 1:6 KJV) **And hath made us kings** and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

Here God is telling us that in addition to salvation, He has made us kings. Now to what we rule over in the present is a mystery. (Rev 20:6 KJV) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall **reign with him a thousand years**. The thousand years is a figure which represents the whole New Testament period.

### **Priests**

(1 Pet 2:9 KJV) But ye are a chosen generation, **a royal priesthood**, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

(Rev 20:6 KJV) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they **shall be priests of God and of Christ**, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Here God describes His elect as priests. If you study the Aaronic priesthood you will see the great responsibility God has given. As those who were the spiritual leaders of the nation of Israel, we are the spiritual leaders of the whole human race. It sounds strange but do we offer up spiritual sacrifices on behalf of others? Do we bring people, needs, and wants before the High Priest? Do we also have the only true "religion" on earth? Do we carry forth the Ark of the Lord Jesus Christ to the nations? Do we make spiritual judgments based on the true Word of God? Do we offer ourselves on the altar of sacrifice for the Kingdom of God? Do we preach the forgiveness of sins through Christ?

We are also the priests to the body of Christ. Has anyone asked you to pray for them? They asked you to invoke your priestly office. Did you ask anyone to pray for you? Then you asked them to invoke their priestly office.

### Saints

(Eph 1:18 KJV) The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of **the glory of his inheritance in the saints**,

(1 Cor 6:11 KJV) And such were some of you: but ye are washed, **but ye are sanctified**, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

(1 Cor 3:17 KJV) If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is **holy**, which temple ye are.

I wanted to give three divine descriptions of the believer because all three of these words come from the same root word in the Greek. It is the word "hagios" which means "set apart, consecrated, pure, upright." Here God speaks of His children in three different yet related terms. He calls us Saints which is a term not relegated to any denomination. It applies to every true born again believer. He also calls us sanctified which carries a general meaning of being set apart and in this case set apart unto God. The next related term is "holy," a term which generally relates to purity of heart. One can only become holy if they are regenerated by the Holy Spirit. Holiness is not dressing in religious regalia or beating yourself with a whip or a fast. Holiness emanates from within to without not the opposite way.

### Without Blame

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and **without blame** before him in love:

"Without blame" means "without blemish of sin, disgrace or unblamable." In God's sight all of His children are totally pure and are not blamable before Him since all their sins have been completely atoned for. (Heb 2:11 KJV) "For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren," God does bring any blame against His children since their sins have been expunged completely. (Rev 14:5 KJV) "And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are **without fault before the throne of God.**"

### Beulah

(Isa 62:4 KJV) Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, **and thy land Beulah**: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy **land shall be married.**

The term "Beulah" means "married." We, as the body of Christ, are also the bride of Christ which means we are married forever. Since the Bible forbids divorce, we can never be divorced from Christ when we sin. We are married forever.

### Everlasting Love

(Jer 31:3 KJV) The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, **I have loved thee with an everlasting love**: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.

God loves His children eternally in contrast to hating the unbeliever who will spend eternity in hell. God's love is eternal which means our lives will be eternal.

### The Place of God's Throne

(Ezek 43:7 KJV) And he said unto me, Son of man, **the place of my throne**, and the place of the soles of my feet, **where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever**, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places.

Here God states that He will dwell in the middle of the Children of Israel forever. He is speaking of the body of Christ as is portrayed in (Rev 21:3 KJV) "And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, **and they shall be his people**, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God."

### The City of Truth

(Zec 8:3 KJV) Thus saith the LORD; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: **and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth**; and the mountain of the LORD of hosts the holy mountain.

The New Jerusalem which the Lord Jesus Christ created by His sacrifice shall be called the city of truth. Why this term? First, the believers are God's redeemed; and secondly,

the true body of believers disseminates the true gospel throughout the world and only through the teaching of Scripture can evangelism be performed.

### Pearl of Great Price

(Mat 13:45-46 KJV) Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: {46} Who, when he had found **one pearl of great price**, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Here the body of believers is referred to as "one pearl of great price" and you notice the merchant gave all to buy it. This refers to the Lord Jesus Christ who gave His life on Gologtha to buy the entire body of believers, the one pearl of great price in its entirety, from the first redeemed believer to the last one.

### Pillar and Ground of Truth

(1 Tim 3:15 KJV) But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, **the pillar and ground of the truth**.

Here we see that God has typed the church as the pillar which is a support, like a great column. It focuses more on the support function of the column rather than the decorative capitals of the ancient buildings. The ground of truth refers here to the support or bulwark which would support the building and the truth is the true gospel itself.

-----  
I wanted to include these descriptions of the body of Christ by GOD Himself to show that in the present life that God holds a very high view of His church. The next time your pastor pounds the pulpit and calls your congregation sinners, bring these verses to his attention. Keep in mind though that those in the congregation who are not saved are still sinners but also keep in mind that God does not refer to His children as sinners since He has forgotten all our sins and iniquities.

(Isa 43:25 KJV) I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, **and will not remember thy sins**.

(Heb 8:12 KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, **and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more**.

(Heb 10:17 KJV) **And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more**.

The bottom line is if more pastors would preach to their congregations as the congregation of Saints, there would probably be more spiritual growth in the church rather than people not knowing what their stance is before God. Constantly pounding the pulpit and calling Christians sinners, does not engender spiritual growth. As Christians, we all once had the wrath of God abiding upon us but when we became saved, our

relationship to God changed radically and God wants us grow in the faith. If we keep hearing the same messages, after salvation, Sunday after Sunday, then it is like a college senior still reading on the first grade level. He has grown up but his reading level remained the same. Let us now progress to the final part of this study.

### IN THE FUTURE

Not only does God include in His salvation plan past and present aspects, He also includes in Scripture the future for the believer which is amazingly glorious. If a believer physically dies before the Lord returns on the last day, they go immediately into the presence of the Lord. (2 Cor 5:8 KJV) "We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord." This is in contrast to the unbeliever who goes to a place of silence and awaits the resurrection at the last day to be judged for their sins. (Psa 115:17 KJV) "The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence."

### No Judgment

(John 5:24 KJV) Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, **hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation;** but is passed from death unto life.

Another great aspect which the believer can look forward to is the great fact that they will never be judged for their sins. Since the Lord Jesus Christ took all of the sins of the elect on Himself in His atoning sacrifice, there is nothing left to be judged. (Mat 1:21 KJV) "And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: **for he shall save his people from their sins.**"

Christ paid for every sin of His people. The believers simply go on and receive their glorified spiritual bodies and then will be qualified for eternity. There are two judgment days, one is passed the other is yet to come. All the believers were found guilty before God for their sins but Christ having taken our sins to the cross with Him, canceled all of them out. (Col 2:13-14 KJV) "And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, **having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;**" The Crucifixion of Christ was the first judgment day where the believers were atoned for. The second judgment day is the Great White Throne judgment where all the unsaved will stand for their sins and be judged. Praise our merciful God for His marvelous salvation plan. Some believers still feel that they will have to pay for the sins they will commit in the future but they forget when God named those who were to be saved even before the foundation of the world, all their sins were in the future and all of them were atoned for. This is why we pass from death into life and are not condemned as the Scripture states. Let me remind you that we must take our understanding from the Scriptures and not fatalistic theology.

### Partakers in Future Judgment

(1 Cor 6:2-3 KJV) Do ye not know that **the saints shall judge the world?** and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? {3} Know ye not **that we shall judge angels?** how much more things that pertain to this life?

Here are two verses which tell us what is going to happen but no details as to how it will happen. We can be sure of one thing though that the believers will have some function concerning the judgment of the unsaved. The ultimate judge is Christ Himself but these verses tell us that we will do some of the judging. Now when God winds this world up after He saves the last one He intends to save, this will usher in the last day or Judgment Day. All the believers will be raised to eternal life and the unbelievers for judgment.

Some of you are probably wondering about unsaved relatives in your own house which you witnessed to but were not God's elect. You feel in your heart that you cannot judge your own children or your parents. At the White Throne Judgment your relationship to relatives and friends will be absent because you will have a different authority and position as a Saint but God also calls us something else. Kings!

(Gen 17:6 KJV) And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, **and kings shall come out of thee.**

(Rev 1:5-6 KJV) And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and **the prince of the kings of the earth.** Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, {6} **And hath made us kings** and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

In Genesis 17:6 we read a part of the Abrahamic Covenant in which Sarah was going to give birth to a line of Kings. Was God speaking in the physical realm? Absolutely not as we see in Revelation 1:5, here we read that Christ is the prince of the kings of the earth and verse 6 goes on to clarify who the kings are. The kings are the redeemed of God. In the context of 1 Corinthians 6:2, when we read that the believers are going to judge the world, we will be doing it with the rank of king. Does not a king of a country have the right to judge and pass sentence? He sure does. Let me reiterate that once we get to Heaven, we will have a different relationship to our relatives. There will only be two classes of people there, and that will be believers and unbelievers, which will result in the believers making a judgment according to the Word of God and not an emotional or sorrowful judgment.

### No Remembrance of Former Things

(Isa 65:17 KJV) For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: **and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.**

(Rev 21:4 KJV) And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: **for the former things are passed away.**

The big question, "If I have an unsaved relative which went to hell, will I have knowledge of their suffering in heaven?" The answer is no because then you would also have a knowledge of sin, which would be the reason they went to hell. Heaven is going to be a place where righteousness will reign and there will be no sin or even the thought of it. (2 Pet 3:13 KJV) "Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, **wherein dwelleth righteousness.**" I deeply believe we will not even have memories of our existence on earth because then we must once again have a knowledge of sin so we know what we were redeemed from. It is going to be a great blessing that all the former things which we associate with on this earth will not even be a memory. We will have a pure existence with God and the Lord Jesus Christ throughout eternity. Remember we cannot think nor associate earth with the things of heaven. They are diametrically opposed to each other. Heaven is a spiritual place and earth is a physical place.

#### We Will Work in Heaven

(Rev 7:14-15 KJV) And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. {15} Therefore are they before the throne of God, **and serve him day and night in his temple:** and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

Now what we will be doing in Heaven is a mystery at this point. I do not believe we are going to be in robes and just singing in a heavenly choir. It is obvious that God has something planned for His children in the area of service. There is no physical temple in Heaven so God may be speaking of the body of believers and we will be working as the temple or body of Christ doing whatever we are assigned. This verse negates the teaching of the Jehovah's Witnesses who teach, according to their picture books, that we are just going to be playing with animals on earth throughout eternity.

#### Rest

(Heb 4:9 KJV) There remaineth therefore **a rest** to the people of God.

(Rev 14:13 KJV) And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that **they may rest from their labours;** and their works do follow them.

One of the greatest aspects of God's salvation plan is that the believers will have eternal rest. I remember when my Grandmother died in 1961 I was 8 years old and saw my first memorial card where it said "Mary Czok entered into eternal rest." That saying has always stayed with me all my life. It became more valuable to me since I became a

believer way back when. God gives His children an eternal rest, even though we will be working, but we will be resting in heaven and not having to do any more work in conjunction with salvation. Our work and rest will be of a glorious nature. What kind of rest or work? I haven't a clue but know it will be marvelous.

### **FINAL THOUGHTS**

The first thing I must say in ending this article is I could not possibly hit every aspect of God's salvation plan. After all, I am finite whereas God is infinite. I wanted to write this article with the desire to get your spiritual thinking away from the "pulpit pounding fools" who still refer to God's children as sinners. We were sinners, but now God views us as His redeemed children. Let me end up with a passage of Scripture which I quoted at the beginning.

(Acts 10:15 KJV) And the voice spake unto him again the second time, **What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.**

That Means You Preacher!

Probably the Greatest Aspect of Salvation is Salvation!!!

## How were the Old Testament Saints Saved?

By Dr. Ken Matto

(Deu 33:1-3 KJV) And this is the blessing, wherewith Moses the man of God blessed the children of Israel before his death. {2} And he said, The LORD came from Sinai, and rose up from Seir unto them; he shined forth from mount Paran, and he came **with ten thousands of saints**: from his right hand went a fiery law for them. {3} Yea, he loved the people; **all his saints** are in thy hand: and they sat down at thy feet; every one shall receive of thy words.

One of the seemingly big discussion topics among Christians is that Christ went to the cross about 33 AD and afterward when He returned to Heaven, He sent the promise of the Holy Spirit upon all the Elect of God. Now it is easily gathered from the New Testament the way the New Testament Saint was saved but the big question is, how was the Old Testament Saint saved? Was the Old Testament Saint saved through the animal sacrifices? It seems many Christians believe that the animal sacrifices played a part in the salvation of the Old Testament Saints. When we look at the three verses from Deuteronomy we see the word “Saints” being used. This is the first usage of the word “Saints” in the entire Bible. The word “Saints” in Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “holy.” In verse 2 it is the popular word “qodhesh” which is used throughout the Old Testament for “holy and holiness.” In verse 3 it is the adjective “qadhosh” which is translated “holy.” Now the first two questions that we must ask is, did the animal sacrifices take away sin? Could they make a person holy?

### The Animal Sacrifices

In the Old Testament, under the Law, the Lord instituted different sacrifices for different occasions. In the Hebrew Scriptures we find the sin offering, peace offering, trespass offering, cereal offering which was the oblation, etc. Each Israelite was responsible to offer a sacrifice for whatever violation of the law they did. Now it is interesting to note here that the word “sacrifice” in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning and idea of “draw near or approach.” So the basic idea of sacrifice was to be able to draw near or approach God.

When God gave the instructions for the sacrificial system to Moses on Sinai, it was to be instituted under the specific instructions that God gave. In other words, they could not substitute their own way of doing things, it was to be done “to the letter of the law.” In Leviticus 1, we read about the Burnt Offering. In Leviticus 2, we read about the Meal Offering. In Leviticus 3, we read about the Peace Offering. In Leviticus 4, we read about the Sin Offering. In Leviticus 5, we read about the Restitution Offering. Now when we look at these offerings, we must ask the question, do these offerings make anyone holy? In addition to the specific offerings, there were also Feasts that was established under the Law, such as the Feast of Tabernacles, Unleavened Bread, etc.

Now the overriding question is that if a person kept the feasts, the sacrifices, the sabbath, and anything else required under the law, would that make them holy? When we speak of holy people, is the Bible speaking of a person who dresses holy, or who does holy things like those who worked in the Tabernacle and the Temple? Does working with holy things or observing holy things, make a person holy? Whenever we look at holy people in the Bible, what group are we looking at? The only group of people in the Bible that are considered holy are those who are the redeemed of God. Now did the required animal

sacrifices redeem the nation of Israel? The answer to that question is found in the New Testament.

(Heb 9:8-9 KJV) The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: {9} Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience;

These verses answer the question as to whether a person working with holy things can be made holy. The Priests who offered the offerings and those who gave the offerings were by no means made holy because these things were a shadow of things to come. Shadows cannot save a person. Notice in verse 8 what the Scripture is teaching. Those who believe the Holy Spirit was not active during that time should really study this verse as it teaches that the Holy Spirit was signifying that the way to true salvation was not yet manifested at that time. The Scripture is not saying that the way was absent but it teaches that the way was there even though it was not the Lord's timing to reveal it. Who is the Holiest of all and how do we find the way to Him? Well, the Tabernacle and Temple were all symbolic of coming to God the Father through the Lord Jesus Christ. No one can come to the Father except they come through the Lord Jesus Christ. *(John 14:6 KJV) Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

(Heb 10:1-4 KJV) For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. {2} For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. {3} But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. {4} For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

As we see in these verses that the Law had only a shadow of things to come. The sacrifices which were offered under that system were not of a permanent nature but only of a temporary nature. They were also only representations of what was to come. This is very important to keep in mind when trying to understand the nature of those sacrifices. The sacrificial system was not designed to remove sins from the person bringing the offering. It was a temporary foreshadow of the permanent atonement which would come through the Lord Jesus Christ on Calvary on behalf of His Elect. We read in verse 4 that it is not possible for the blood of animals to make atonement and remove sins from anyone. Only the blood of the Lord Jesus Christ had the ability to remove sins forever, once and for all, from the people that God would choose for salvation.

(Heb 10:6 KJV) In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure.

In this verse we are told that God did not delight in those burnt offerings because they did not remove sin from God's Elect. God the Father takes pleasure in the atonement of His Son, because with that atonement, came the removal of sins from millions of people.

(Isa 42:1 KJV) Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles.

(Mat 12:17-18 KJV) That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, {18} Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the Gentiles.

(Mat 17:5 KJV) While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

### **The Great Day Of Atonement**

(Lev 16:30-31 KJV) For on that day shall the priest make an atonement for you, to cleanse you, that ye may be clean from all your sins before the LORD. {31} It shall be a sabbath of rest unto you, and ye shall afflict your souls, by a statute for ever.

In Leviticus 16, we read about the Great Day of Atonement. It was a time when two goats were chosen, one was to carry the sins of Israel into the Desert and the other was to be sacrificed as a burnt offering for the sins of Israel. After this ceremony, the people were to follow up with a day of fasting. This is the only time in the Mosaic Law that fasting was commanded. Now it looks like the Great Day of Atonement was the way that Israel was given forgiveness for their sins. However, as we keep in mind what we read previously, that the blood of bulls and goats cannot take away sin. A goat cannot atone for the sin of any human being. If they could, then anyone can buy a goat and after a life of sin, kill the goat and get to Heaven. However, that cannot be, so this means that God has another reason for devising this ceremony. The reason is that this day too is looking forward to the Great Day of Atonement. The one in Leviticus was only a temporary foreshadow of the Great Day of the Atonement which the Lord Jesus accomplished on Calvary for His Elect.

### **Why the Law if it could not save a soul?**

In order for God to show the human race how wicked they were, He gave us the Law to show us that we could not keep it. Cruel? Absolutely not! God did this out of compassion because if there was no law to compare our actions to, then there could be no standard by which to compare our lives to. God allowed the Law to come into existence to show that we needed a Savior. No human being alive could ever please God with enough good works because every good work we do is still tainted by sin.

(Gal 3:24-25 KJV) Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. {25} But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

The Apostle Paul gives an excellent summary of why God gave the Law. It was given to the world to drive the Elect to Christ whereby they would receive Grace but the unbeliever who is not justified through Grace will still be culpable to the demands of God's righteous Law. We read that after a person becomes saved, they are no longer under the Law. This does not mean we live a lawless life but what it means is that since Christ fulfilled the requirements of the law through His atonement on Calvary, the Christian is no longer accountable for their sins. They have been washed clean for all eternity. This is the essence of salvation. It is this great truth that many Christians have a hard time with simply because they do not really know what happened at Calvary and the real significance of their salvation in Christ.

### **Quick summary up to this point**

1. The Blood of Bulls and Goats cannot remove sins.
2. The Sacrificial System was only a foreshadow of the sacrifice of Christ.
3. The Law was written to drive the Elect to Christ.
4. The Great Day of Atonement was only a foreshadow of Christ's day on Calvary.
5. The term "Saint" is used in the Hebrew Scriptures, not just the New Testament.

### **God has one salvation plan**

(Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

In the New Testament it is very easy to see that a person becomes saved and on the moment they become saved the Holy Spirit indwells them for all eternity. *(Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.* The indwelling of the Holy Spirit is not a separate event but is accomplished at the moment of salvation. *(Eph 4:30 KJV) And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.*

Throughout the entire Bible, we see there is only one salvation plan. We already have seen that the animal sacrifices were not actual atonements but they were only foreshadows leading up to the sacrifice of Christ. Now if there is only one salvation program in the Bible, then it must also apply to those who were born before the cross. To better understand the continuity of Scripture, it is never a wise practice of breaking up the Bible into two separate sections. The Old Testament and the New Testament are intimately entwined in each other. In essence, one cannot be removed from the other and then to expect a proper understanding of Scripture. The Bible is one cohesive book. There is much salvation Scripture in the Old Testament. These verses sound very New Testament in Nature, yet were written hundreds of years before the Cross.

(Isa 43:25 KJV) I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

(Jer 31:34 KJV) And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

(Heb 8:12 KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

(Heb 10:16-17 KJV) This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; {17} And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

If you will notice in both Old Testament Scriptures, we see a great tenet of Grace in that God will not remember our sins anymore. This is also repeated in the New Testament. So here is a great example of Grace in the Old Testament. When God spoke of blotting out the sins for His own sake, He was speaking to the Elect within ancient Israel. Those who became saved in the Old Testament were saved through the blood of Christ and we will see that in a few seconds. I want to offer some more Scriptures which teach Grace from the Old Testament.

(Gen 6:8 KJV) But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD.

(Exo 33:17 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken: for thou hast found grace in my sight, and I know thee by name.

(Ezra 9:8 KJV) And now for a little space grace hath been showed from the LORD our God, to leave us a remnant to escape, and to give us a nail in his holy place, that our God may lighten our eyes, and give us a little reviving in our bondage.

(Psa 84:11 KJV) For the LORD God is a sun and shield: the LORD will give grace and glory: no good thing will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.

(Prov 3:34 KJV) Surely he scorneth the scorners: but he giveth grace unto the lowly.

(Zec 4:7 KJV) Who art thou, O great mountain? before Zerubbabel thou shalt become a plain: and he shall bring forth the headstone thereof with shoutings, crying, Grace, grace unto it.

(Zec 12:10 KJV) And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

We have seen in these seven verses that Grace is not a foreign idea in the Old Testament. After all, God has only one salvation plan and that is Grace. Remember what we read in Hebrews 9:8?

(Heb 9:8 KJV) The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

While the Tabernacle and Temple systems were in place, it was not God's timing to fully manifest Grace at that time. Always keep in mind that God reveals things fully in His own time. *(Gal 4:4 KJV) But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.* God had a timetable in the sending forth of the Lord Jesus Christ and that timetable would also be used when it was time to manifest fully, Grace as God's salvation plan. So now if the Lord Jesus Christ was crucified approximately 477 years after the book of Malachi was written, then how were the Saints in the Old Testament Saved?

### **Old Testament Salvation**

For many years I was taught that the Old Testament Saints were looking forward to the cross and the New Testament Saints looked back at the cross. Well I have come to the point of abandoning that thought. As New Testament Christians we surely look back to the cross but in reality, did the Old Testament Saints really look forward to the cross? No they did not because they did not understand such a concept.

(1 Pet 1:10-12 KJV) Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, **who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you:** {11} Searching what, or what manner of time **the Spirit of Christ which was in them** did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. {12} **Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves**, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

Here we read in these verses that the Old Testament prophets prophesied Grace, they had taught it but did not understand it, simply because it was not the time to be revealed yet. Remember Hebrews 9:8, because that is an important verse. We see the revelation of these things was to happen after the resurrection of Christ. Once Christ was resurrected and God's salvation plan was now finished, then came the time of the revealing of the salvation program of God which was Grace. All well and good, but how were the Old

Testament Saints saved? Let us see the simplicity whereby God gives us the answer to this.

### **It Is Written**

Some of the most neglected verse in the Bible are the very ones that hold the answer to our question of how were the Old Testament Saints Saved? In John 19:30, the Lord Jesus Christ in His agony on the cross said, "It is Finished." This meant that the salvation program of God was now completed for His Elect. Okay, we see the completion but when did it begin? Did it start when Christ came on the scene? So then the question remains, how did the blood become applied in the Old Testament, when Christ died about 477 years after the last stroke of Malachi? Let us see!

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb **slain from the foundation of the world.**

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, **whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world**, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

These two verses we will clump together since they both proclaim the very same message. There is going to come a time on Earth when Christianity is going to be so neutralized, that many will basically wonder if anyone is saved. Here we see that those whom God had planned to save were written in the Lamb's Book of Life from before the foundation of the world or before the world existed. So here we have major insight into when God named those He was planning to save. We are also seeing the beginning of His salvation plan. The Lord Jesus Christ was already crucified for the Elect, in principle, before the foundation of the world.

(Heb 4:3 KJV) For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: **although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.**

Here is another verse which gives major insight and corroboration that the Lord Jesus Christ was, in principle, crucified for the Elect before the founding of the world. The reason that many ignore these verses is because they believe in a free will gospel which saves people by the hand of man and not God. That crowd does not know how to handle these plain verses so they ignore them or they explain it away by saying, "God looked down the corridors of time and knew who was going to accept His Son." Nonsense! Like my friend Dennis Collins says, "If God knew who was going to accept Christ, then why did He have to Elect them?" Touché

(Mat 25:34 KJV) Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you **from the foundation of the world:**

Here we read another revealing verse that all the Saints of God are standing before the throne and the Lord is telling them to enter the Kingdom that was prepared for them when? Before the foundation of the world!

(John 14:1-2 KJV) Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. {2} In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

Now we have this verse in John which looks like Jesus is saying that He is going to prepare a place for the disciples now. It almost looks like it is a contradiction to the fact the Kingdom was already completed before the foundation of the world. That is, because when many look at this verse, they immediately interpret it as Jesus going back to Heaven to prepare a place for them. The phrase, "I go to prepare a place for you" should be understood in the context of the approaching crucifixion. This is how Christ is preparing a place for us. He is going to be crucified so He can complete God's salvation program guaranteeing those who are His Elect will have their place in heaven which has already been reserved. (1 Peter 1:4)

Now this is the beginning of the Upper Room Discourse where Jesus is speaking to His Disciples. The Last Supper had ended and Jesus was now beginning to teach them. Now Judas had already left to betray him (John 13:26-29) Jesus then began to teach that he will go and prepare a place for His Disciples. Judas had to be out of the room since he already had a place prepared for him. (*Mat 25:41 KJV*) *Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:* Therefore, Judas could not be part of the promise that Christ was making to His other Disciples because Judas was not among those who were going to be saved, so Christ could not say He was going to be crucified for Judas as one of the saved disciples. Remember we spoke of the timing of God? Judas had to be out of the room before Christ gave that beautiful discourse. If Judas was still in that room when Christ made that statement, then Judas would have had to become saved if Christ was promising him that He was going to die for him! We are getting into some deep theology here aren't we?

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Here we see another verse which openly teaches the timing of the choosing of the believers that God planned to save. If you notice, there is not a hint in this verse that it only applies to those who became saved after the cross. The foundation of the world indicates plainly that all the believers from the creation of the world to the end of the world were chosen before the world was created. This means those believers in the Old Testament were also named before the foundation of the world, because the creation of the world came before the Old Testament.

(Heb 9:25-26 KJV) Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; {26} For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

Here we see Jesus being compared to the High Priest who served in the Temple and Tabernacle service. However, these verse give us a different insight. They are showing the difference between the two. They point out the superiority of Jesus the High Priest in that if He was like the human High Priest, then He would have had to suffer from the foundations of the world. This is a very interesting insight. When the believers were named before the foundation of the world, then if the Priesthood of Jesus was similar to the earthly Priesthood, then He would have had to suffer separation from His Heavenly Father on a regular basis similar to that of the yearly entrance of the earthly High Priest into the Holy of Holies. Since Christ was superior in His office, and His sacrifice was going to be the final one for the sins of His Elect, He was only going to be sacrificed once

and that was in God's timing. Christ's sacrifice was the completion of God's salvation plan which began in eternity. This is why the believer's were first named which was the beginning of God's salvation plan and when Christ was crucified, it signified the end of the salvation plan.

Now I want to state something which may sound heretical but it is not. We have all heard that Christ was the final sacrifice for sin. That statement and ones like it are an open ended statement. Christ was not the final sacrifice for sin but Christ was the final sacrifice for the sins of the Elect alone! The unbeliever will be the final sacrifice when they are judged and cast into Hell at the Great White Throne Judgment. The unbelievers have no Savior and that is why they must pay for their own sins. Since Christ already died and sealed His Elect, the only group left is the unbelievers who must pay for their own sins. When death and Hell are cast into the Lake of Fire with the unbelievers, then that will have been the final sacrifice for sin because then sin will be no more. That is very powerful because it sets a major distinction between the Elect of God and the non-elect. Now the following verses will become clearer when we apply that distinction. The unbeliever will continue to sin after receiving the knowledge of Christ but because they are non-elect, they have no substitutionary sacrifice for their sins, this is why it says there is no more sacrifice for sins. They must stand for their own sins without a mediator.

(Heb 10:26-27 KJV) For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, {27} But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

(1 Pet 1:18-20 KJV) Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; {19} But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: {20} Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,

Here we read some potent verses which teach us that the sacrifice was foreordained before the world existed. I don't think there could be a question in anyone's mind after reading the Scriptures we have that God knew Adam and Eve would sin. Some people, in their free-willism, try to get us to believe that God didn't know Adam and Eve would sin and tested them and waited for the outcome. When we read these verses of God's salvation program being instituted before the foundation of the world, it is total evidence that God was well aware of Adam and Eve's coming fall. This is why His salvation program was already in operation. These verses teach us that Christ and His sacrifice for His Elect was from before the foundation of the world but it was manifested in the last times according to God's timing.

### **Brief Summary**

We have conclusively looked at some Scriptures which openly teach that God's salvation program began before the foundation of the world, which means it pre-dated the times of the Old Testament. There is no hint anywhere in Scripture that anyone in the Old Testament was saved in any different manner than those on the New Testament side of the cross. We read that the Holy Spirit was operational in the Tabernacle and Temple service but it was not the timing for Grace to be revealed, although Grace was fully operational during that time.

### **Temporary Spirit**

There are many who like to use the idea that the Holy Spirit did not indwell people in the Old Testament but rather He temporarily abode on certain people. Whenever we accept a doctrine or teaching like that we must see if it has a basis. Based on what we read concerning God's timing it behooves us to repeat the verse which deals with this subject:

(Heb 9:8 KJV) The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

We have seen that Grace was fully operational in the Old Testament and if it was, then the method of salvation was no different for them as it was for us. This means those who were saved before the cross were indwelled with the Holy Spirit as we are or else they were not saved. I want to name some Saints in the Old Testament who were absolutely saved and there is nothing written in conjunction with the theory that the Holy Spirit only abode on them and not indwelled them.

### **Abraham**

If the Holy Spirit did not indwell Abraham, then from what point did faith have to work from? If the Holy Spirit does not indwell a person, this means they are still spiritually dead and no spiritually dead person can have any faith toward God because they are spiritually dead. (Rom 4:3 KJV) *For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.* No unbeliever can ever be righteous without salvation. The phrase "and by faith Abraham..." is used twice in Hebrews. Could a man be spiritually dead and sacrifice his only son of promise on God's commands?

### **Moses**

(Exo 33:17 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, I will do this thing also that thou hast spoken: for thou hast found grace in my sight, and I know thee by name.

When we look at the life of Moses, can one honestly say the Holy Spirit came and went instead of indwelling him? Moses found Grace in God's sight plus He knew him by name. Do we see a parallel in the following verse?

(John 10:14 KJV) I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

### **David**

(Acts 13:22 KJV) And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil all my will.

How many unbelievers does God say are after His own heart?

### **Joseph**

(Gen 41:38 KJV) And Pharaoh said unto his servants, Can we find such a one as this is, a man in whom the Spirit of God is?

Here was Joseph and the Bible tells us that the Spirit of God was "in" him.

### **Bezaleel**

(Exo 31:2-3 KJV) See, I have called by name Bezaleel the son of Uri, the son of Hur, of the tribe of Judah: {3} And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship,

## **THE SPIRIT CAME UPON**

In many places in the Old Testament we will find phrases like “the spirit came upon” or “the spirit rested upon,” or a phrase similar to these two. It seems they convey an idea that the Holy Spirit had come upon them but in these instances did not indwell them. We are going to look at quite a number of Scriptures and as we look at them we are going to see that when the Holy Spirit came upon someone, even a believer like Moses, it was for a different purpose than salvation. When the Holy Spirit came upon or rested on someone, there was always some type of task in view which required the intervention of the Lord to accomplish. (*John 15:5 KJV*) *I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.*

In the above verse we read that no Christian can bring forth fruit, or help save anyone, without the Lord Jesus Christ doing the saving. As humans we are totally helpless in this arena. Now we can carry that principle of spiritual inability over to the other realms of life. Let us ask some question which pertain to some of the people in the Bible involved in spiritual activity. Let us look at some in the Old Testament first:

Moses - Without Christ could he have created the 10 plagues and divided the Red Sea?

Elijah - Could he make fire come down from heaven without Christ?

Joshua - Could he have made the sun stand still all day without Christ?

Gideon - Could he have created a dry fleece in the midst of heavy dew without Christ?

Elisha - Could he have raised the dead man upon touching him after he was dead without Christ doing the resurrection?

Let us look at two examples in the New Testament:

Peter - Could he have raised the crippled man at the temple gate without Christ?

Paul - Could he have raised Eutychus from the dead without Christ?

We have looked at seven examples of physical miracles which is totally beyond the realm of any human being on Earth. We must also factor in that the Holy Spirit was totally active in creation.

(Gen 1:2 KJV) And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

By these revealing verses, we see that the Holy Spirit was not only active in spiritual regeneration AKA salvation, but He was also active in physical creation. This is very important to keep in mind when dealing with this subject. Physical creation is totally different than salvific re-creation. Looking at these examples gives us insight into the fact that the Holy Spirit had a two-fold ministry, which was both spiritual and physical. I just want to say at this juncture that I am not advocating the signs and wonders movement with this study. Let us begin to look at some of the passages of Scripture.

### **1 Samuel 10:6**

(1 Sam 10:6 KJV) And the spirit of the LORD will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man.

Here we read the account of the anointing of Saul. Knowing the life that Saul led and the fact that he was unsaved brings us to the correct conclusion that the action of the Holy Spirit in this verse is not one of salvation but of empowerment in the life of Saul. If you notice what the Scripture is saying that after the Holy Spirit will come upon Saul, he will

be turned into another man. What God has in view here is the fact that Saul was being fashioned into the leader of Israel as their king. Salvation is not in view because almost immediately after Saul was anointed King, he was already sinning against God and the way was being paved for David to become King of Israel.

### **Numbers 11:16-17 & 25**

(Num 11:16-17 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, Gather unto me seventy men of the elders of Israel, whom thou knowest to be the elders of the people, and officers over them; and bring them unto the tabernacle of the congregation, that they may stand there with thee. {17} And I will come down and talk with thee there: and I will take of the spirit which is upon thee, and will put it upon them; and they shall bear the burden of the people with thee, that thou bear it not thyself alone.

(Num 11:25 KJV) And the LORD came down in a cloud, and spake unto him, and took of the spirit that was upon him, and gave it unto the seventy elders: and it came to pass, that, when the spirit rested upon them, they prophesied, and did not cease.

Here we read in these verses that Moses was to appoint seventy elders to help rule Israel. When we look at these verse we read again that these seventy elders of Israel were being prepared to rule the nation of Israel with Moses. Salvation is not in view here either as we see that the Holy Spirit was getting ready to empower seventy elders for the task of ruling. When God gave these seventy elders to Moses to help him rule, it came on the tail end of another episode of rebellion against God concerning the Manna. We read that the seventy received of the same Spirit that Moses had. Remember that Moses was humbled and prepared for forty years as a shepherd before he was given this task to lead the people out of Israel. However, Moses was saved and we can safely conclude this because he appeared on the Mount of Transfiguration with the Lord Jesus Christ which meant he was in Heaven at the time. The Spirit that these seventy elders were given was for the purpose of ruling.

(Mat 17:1-3 KJV) And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, {2} And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. {3} And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

(Num 11:26-29 KJV) But there remained two of the men in the camp, the name of the one was Eldad, and the name of the other Medad: and the spirit rested upon them; and they were of them that were written, but went not out unto the tabernacle: and they prophesied in the camp. {27} And there ran a young man, and told Moses, and said, Eldad and Medad do prophesy in the camp. {28} And Joshua the son of Nun, the servant of Moses, one of his young men, answered and said, My lord Moses, forbid them. {29} And Moses said unto him, Enviest thou for my sake? would God that all the LORD'S people were prophets, and that the LORD would put his spirit upon them!

Eldad and Medad were two of the seventy which were chosen by Moses to help rule Israel. The fact that they were prophesying in the camp meant that God was showing the people that these two men were also part of the seventy which were approved by God to help rule in the camp. We do not know why they remained in the camp among the people, maybe it was due to the fact that they were humbled at their appointment or maybe there was a ceremonial defilement of some type. This is the only place in Scripture they are mentioned. It could also be a prophetic type of the believer that when the going forth of the Gospel commences at Pentecost, there will be many believers who

will not be in the church in an official capacity, teaching and preaching, but will be out among the people.

### **Numbers 14:24**

(Num 14:24 KJV) But my servant Caleb, because he had another spirit with him, and hath followed me fully, him will I bring into the land whereinto he went; and his seed shall possess it.

Here we read about Caleb, who I believe was saved, had another spirit with him. The difference between Caleb and the unbelieving Israelites was that Caleb believed God and trusted Him fully. Caleb had the spirit of belief while the many held the spirit of unbelief. *(Rom 11:20 KJV) Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:* We saw that when he was one of the spies and they disbelieved him. Here too, the fact of salvation is not in view but the fact that Caleb followed the Lord and was rewarded by going into the Promised Land.

### **Numbers 24:2**

(Num 24:2 KJV) And Balaam lifted up his eyes, and he saw Israel abiding in his tents according to their tribes; and the spirit of God came upon him.

Balaam was a false prophet and was hired by the king of Moab to curse the children of Israel but God had different plans for him. So Balaam would not curse Israel, the Spirit of God came upon him and told him what he was to say. Balaam was not a saved man. Here we see the Spirit coming on him to empower him to do a specific job. Balaam was killed by the very people he was paid to curse. *(Josh 13:22 KJV) Balaam also the son of Beor, the soothsayer, did the children of Israel slay with the sword among them that were slain by them.*

### **Numbers 27:18**

(Num 27:18 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, Take thee Joshua the son of Nun, a man in whom is the spirit, and lay thine hand upon him;

Here we read about the commissioning of Joshua but we learn an interesting fact about Joshua. The Lord is saying that the Spirit of God is in him. This is another evidence that the Holy Spirit did indeed dwell inside believers in the Old Testament. Joshua was now being prepared and called into leadership.

### **Judges 3:9-10**

(Judg 3:9-10 KJV) And when the children of Israel cried unto the LORD, the LORD raised up a deliverer to the children of Israel, who delivered them, even Othniel the son of Kenaz, Caleb's younger brother. {10} And the spirit of the LORD came upon him, and he judged Israel, and went out to war: and the LORD delivered Chushanrishathaim king of Mesopotamia into his hand; and his hand prevailed against Chushanrishathaim.

Here we see the Spirit of the Lord coming upon Othniel, who was Caleb's younger brother. We also see that as soon as the Spirit came upon him, he was now judging Israel and went out to war. You just don't get chosen to lead your country on Tuesday and then Wednesday you are ready to be a military leader, unless the Lord brings wisdom into a person's life. Here we see an empowerment to judge Israel and be their military leader.

### **Judges 6:34**

(Judg 6:34 KJV) But the spirit of the LORD came upon Gideon, and he blew a trumpet; and Abiezer was gathered after him.

Remember how timid Gideon was? Yet the angel of the Lord called him a “mighty man of valor.” Now a person can be saved and be a terrible leader, but here we see the Spirit of the Lord coming on Gideon and after that we see him becoming a mighty leader in Israel. So in Gideon we can see that he was a saved man because the Lord knew him by name, remember John 10:3, but he also needed to be made into a man of confidence to be able to do the job that God had planned for him to do, which was to route the Midianites out of Israel. So he had the Spirit of God in him for salvation and the Spirit of God came upon him for strength.

### **Judges 11:29-30**

(Judg 11:29-30 KJV) Then the spirit of the LORD came upon Jephthah, and he passed over Gilead, and Manasseh, and passed over Mizpeh of Gilead, and from Mizpeh of Gilead he passed over unto the children of Ammon. {30} And Jephthah vowed a vow unto the LORD, and said, If thou shalt without fail deliver the children of Ammon into mine hands,

Here we read about Jephthah who was an outcast from Israel and then when they needed him, asked him to defend Israel. The Spirit of the Lord was upon him and he then went and defeated the Ammonites. Jephthah is mentioned in Faith’s Hall of Fame in Hebrews 11 so he must have become saved at some time in his life because you cannot have faith without becoming saved first. Faith is a product of salvation and not the other way around as is commonly taught.

### **Judges 14:5-6**

(Judg 14:5-6 KJV) Then went Samson down, and his father and his mother, to Timnath, and came to the vineyards of Timnath: and, behold, a young lion roared against him. {6} And the spirit of the LORD came mightily upon him, and he rent him as he would have rent a kid, and he had nothing in his hand: but he told not his father or his mother what he had done.

Here we read of Samson in that he encountered a lion and the Spirit of the Lord came upon him and gave him power to be able to tear a lion in half. Samson is also mentioned in Faith’s Hall of Fame but here we see the Spirit of God coming on Samson for a specific purpose other than salvation. As a Christian, the Holy Spirit indwells me but that does not mean I have the strength to tear a lion in half. Sometimes I don’t have strength to open a bottle of pickles.

### **1 Samuel 10:11**

(1 Sam 10:10-11 KJV) And when they came thither to the hill, behold, a company of prophets met him; and the spirit of God came upon him, and he prophesied among them. {11} And it came to pass, when all that knew him beforetime saw that, behold, he prophesied among the prophets, then the people said one to another, What is this that is come unto the son of Kish? Is Saul also among the prophets?

Here we read that Saul was prophesying with the prophets of God but only after the Spirit of God came upon him. We know that Saul was not a saved man so the Spirit of God was empowering him to do something temporary.

### **1 Samuel 11:6-7**

(1 Sam 11:6-7 KJV) And the spirit of God came upon Saul when he heard those tidings, and his anger was kindled greatly. {7} And he took a yoke of oxen, and hewed them in pieces, and sent them throughout all the coasts of Israel by the hands of messengers,

saying, Whosoever cometh not forth after Saul and after Samuel, so shall it be done unto his oxen. And the fear of the LORD fell on the people, and they came out with one consent.

Here we read that the Spirit came upon Saul as he sent out the hewn yoke as a warning to all those who did not come after them to war against the Ammonites. If you notice, Saul joins his name with Samuel because Saul knew that his popularity as king was waning. Nevertheless, the Spirit of God came upon him to war against the Ammonites and Saul's act of sending the yoke evoked the fear of God in the people of Israel.

### **1 Samuel 16:13-14**

(1 Sam 16:13-14 KJV) Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the spirit of the LORD came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to Ramah. {14} But the spirit of the LORD departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the LORD troubled him.

Here we see that David, after he was anointed King, had the Spirit of God come upon him and according to this Scripture, the Spirit of God never departed from him. Now this is not speaking of salvation because in verse 14, we see that as David received the Spirit of the Lord, simultaneously the Spirit departed from Saul and then an evil spirit troubled him from that day. The Spirit of the Lord never again came upon Saul to empower him to do anything mighty for Israel. He was now plagued by demons and his wisdom was now darkened by them.

### **2 Samuel 23:1-2**

(2 Sam 23:1-2 KJV) Now these be the last words of David. David the son of Jesse said, and the man who was raised up on high, the anointed of the God of Jacob, and the sweet psalmist of Israel, said, {2} The spirit of the LORD spake by me, and his word was in my tongue.

Here we read that the Holy Spirit gave David many words to speak and write. His word was in his mouth which means that David was saved and spoke the words of God to the people. We see this in the Psalms and no way could anyone write like that and not be saved or indwelt by the Holy Spirit.

(Psa 34:1 KJV) I will bless the LORD at all times: his praise shall continually be in my mouth.

(Psa 40:3 KJV) And he hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the LORD.

### **1 Chronicles 12:18**

(1 Chr 12:18 KJV) Then the spirit came upon Amasai, who was chief of the captains, and he said, Thine are we, David, and on thy side, thou son of Jesse: peace, peace be unto thee, and peace be to thine helpers; for thy God helpeth thee. Then David received them, and made them captains of the band.

Here we read about a man named Amasai who when the Spirit of God came on him, spoke peace and concord with David. I believe one reason why the Spirit of God came on different people, so the people of God were able to recognize their enemies and their friends. David did not know this person was a friend until they began to speak the words the Lord gave them.

**(2 Chr 15:1-2 KJV)** And the Spirit of God came upon Azariah the son of Oded: {2} And he went out to meet Asa, and said unto him, Hear ye me, Asa, and all Judah and Benjamin; The LORD is with you, while ye be with him; and if ye seek him, he will be found of you; but if ye forsake him, he will forsake you.

**(2 Chr 20:14-15 KJV)** Then upon Jahaziel the son of Zechariah, the son of Benaiah, the son of Jeiel, the son of Mattaniah, a Levite of the sons of Asaph, came the Spirit of the LORD in the midst of the congregation; {15} And he said, Hearken ye, all Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem, and thou king Jehoshaphat, Thus saith the LORD unto you, Be not afraid nor dismayed by reason of this great multitude; for the battle is not yours, but God's.

**(2 Chr 24:20 KJV)** And the Spirit of God came upon Zechariah the son of Jehoiada the priest, which stood above the people, and said unto them, Thus saith God, Why transgress ye the commandments of the LORD, that ye cannot prosper? because ye have forsaken the LORD, he hath also forsaken you.

**(Ezek 11:5 KJV)** And the Spirit of the LORD fell upon me, and said unto me, Speak; Thus saith the LORD; Thus have ye said, O house of Israel: for I know the things that come into your mind, every one of them.

In the five verses above we see the same scenario. The Spirit of the Lord came upon different people for the purpose of prophesying some event. It is telling us that the messages that were being spoken were from the Lord and not from the mind of those who did the speaking. God is definitely making that fact known that everything these people spoke was from the Lord.

### **Summary**

We have come a long way and we have seen that the Holy Spirit not only indwells a person upon salvation but He also comes upon a person to empower them to do a certain job or perform a function like Saul did in his early years in office as King. Eventually God removed all contact with His Spirit from Saul and a demon then became his guide. The Holy Spirit, as we have seen, was active in the physical creation of the world and universe, as well as being involved in the individual lives of people that were empowered to do certain things, such as the 70 elders which were given the spirit of leadership. We have also seen that no one can become saved outside of the indwelling of the Holy Spirit and those who became saved during the Old Testament were saved in the same manner as those after the cross. That is because the works of the Lord Jesus were, in principle, finished from before the foundation of the world. Since the Bible reveals this truth, it is very simple for us to see that God has only one salvation plan running through the entire Bible, and every saved person has become saved in the same manner, through Christ, whether before the cross or after the cross, simply because they were named before the foundation of the world, before one person was created.

## Faith: Where Does It Originate? God or Us?

By Dr. Ken Matto

(Mat 17:20 KJV) And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

(Rom 1:8 KJV) First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

One of the most confusing issues of our day is the subject of the origin of faith. On one hand in the above verses we read that one group had such great faith that it was spoken about by others and on the other hand another group of Jesus' followers did not even have the faith the size of a grain of Mustard Seed. How come one group had such great faith and the other had none?

First of all we must look at the words used in the Greek for faith, faithfulness, and believe. This is important because we must know how God uses the terms in Scripture. This will alleviate much confusion over the words.

**Faith** - “**pistis**” (pistis) - It is a noun which means it names a person, place or thing. The word “faith” in the New Testament is always translated as a noun.

(Phil 2:17 KJV) Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of your **faith**, I joy, and rejoice with you all.

**Faithfulness** - “**pistos**” (pistos) - It is an adjective which modifies a noun showing the quality of the thing named or to specify something as distinct from something else.

(1 Cor 1:9 KJV) God *is* **faithful**, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord. The adjective points to God as being faithful.

**Believe** - “**pisteu**” (pisteuo) - It is a verb which denotes an action. The word “believe, believed, and believer in Acts 5:14” in the New Testament is always translated as a verb.

(Acts 8:13 KJV) Then Simon himself **believed** also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

### Where does Faith originate?

Many feel that a person must exercise faith to become saved because we read in many places in the Bible where it teaches we are saved through faith. (Eph 2:8 KJV) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: (Luke 18:42 KJV) And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee. Here are two verses which seem to indicate that our faith is the one that saves us and heals us. The question is not whether salvation or healing can come by faith, the question is where

does the faith come from to believe. Faith is manifested in two ways and that is belief and action on that belief (James 2:14-26). These two methods show that a person does have faith but it still does not tell us the origin of our faith and that is what is at the heart of this article.

If we are going to understand faith we must first look at the condition of man before salvation. (Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) Man in his unsaved state is dead. The word “dead” in Ephesians 2:5 is the word “nekrous” which means “dead, lifeless, or useless.” The next question which must be posed is what can generate from a person who is dead? The answer obviously is nothing because a dead person just continues to decay until they finally become bones and ashes. Just like a physically dead person, a spiritually dead person cannot generate anything either. When Lazarus was dead in the tomb was he able to bring himself back to life? The answer is no, the Lord Jesus Christ had to resurrect him to life before he could once again function as a human being. The raising of Lazarus was an example of the spiritual raising of the believer. We are spiritually dead as Lazarus was physically dead and after Christ saves us we are then spiritually alive as Lazarus was physically alive. Now, since man is spiritually dead, there is no way that faith can be generated from a dead person. That is just a stark reality.

Now we come to the part where we can find where faith originates. In the early church after the giving of the Holy Spirit, God had made faith one of the gifts. (1 Cor 12:9 KJV) To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; In 1 Corinthians 12:9, God had included the gift of faith as one of the spiritual gifts but then later on as the provisional gifts started to wane, God had made sure the gift of faith continued. At first, there were only some who had the gift of faith but then God made the gift of faith a fruit of the Spirit. (Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Now faith, being a fruit of the Spirit, is given to every believer when they become saved and are indwelt by the Holy Spirit.

So now that we have seen that the Bible is clear that faith is now a fruit of the Spirit and given to those who become saved. This means that there is an order: First, salvation, then faith, then belief which is built upon that faith, then as we continue to believe and act we become faithful. So a person who is unsaved does not have the Holy Spirit living in them, which means they cannot have any faith because they are spiritually dead and are of the world. (Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. **Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.** Another clear verse is Romans 8:9 which teaches us plainly that if a person does not have the Holy Spirit, then they are not of Christ, and they would then be void of all the fruits of the Spirit. The only way a person can have faith, is when they become saved first and are then given faith through the Holy Spirit. Remember Ephesians 2:8? (Eph 2:8 KJV) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God: Ephesians 2:8 is one of the most plainly written verses and the most ignored on this subject. We are saved by the grace of God which is not of ourselves, that is, we do not initiate salvation because we are spiritually dead and we cannot initiate the faith through which salvation comes because it too is a gift of God. It all comes in one package at one time, at the moment of salvation, and it all comes from God as He regenerates us.

### **Summary**

We have clearly seen that faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit and only those who are indwelt by the Holy Spirit can have faith. This means that no unsaved person can ever have believing faith before they are saved. Spiritually dead people cannot generate anything spiritually, just as a physically dead person cannot generate anything pertaining to physical life. So it is important that we know that salvation, faith, and belief are part and parcel of the Christian walk. It is always salvation first, never faith first!

## Free Willism is a A False Gospel

By Dr. Ken Matto

I would probably estimate that 95% of all churches and Christians believe in free will because it somehow makes them believe that it is they who control salvation and not God. Have you ever heard sayings such as the following coming from free will proponents?

I made a decision for Christ...  
I gave God permission to work in my life..  
God will do things in your life if you let him...  
You need to accept Christ...  
It is up to you to choose, Heaven or hell....  
Anybody else.....(incessant calls after a message)  
Give yourself to Christ....

All of these pet sayings fall under the umbrella of free will. The problem is that there is not one passage of Scripture anywhere from Genesis to Revelation which confirms the above statements. Now in the King James Bible the word “freewill” appears 17 times.

I make a decree, that all they of the people of Israel, and of his priests and Levites, in my realm, which are minded of their own freewill to go up to Jerusalem, go with thee. (Ezra 7:13)

And all the silver and gold that thou canst find in all the province of Babylon, with the freewill offering of the people, and of the priests, offering willingly for the house of their God which is in Jerusalem: (Ezra 7:16)

In these two verses in Ezra the word “freewill” is an Aramaic Word “n<sup>o</sup>dhav” which means “voluntary.”

Leviticus 22:18; 22:21; 22:23; 23:38  
Numbers 15:3; 29:39  
Deuteronomy 12:6; 12:17; 16:10; 23:23  
2 Chronicles 31:14  
Ezra 1:4; 3:5; 8:28  
Psalm 119:108

The word “freewill” in these 15 verses is the word “n<sup>o</sup>dhāvāh” which carries with the meaning of “freewill offering” which denotes gifts given to build the Tabernacle or the second temple. A sample of the usage is found below in Psalm 119:108.

Accept, I beseech thee, the freewill offerings of my mouth, O LORD, and teach me thy judgments. (Psalm 119:108)

In all 15 usages of this word it is attached to monetary donations which has nothing whatsoever to do with salvation and the two other verses in Ezra denote “voluntary”

which also has nothing to do with salvation. These words are used only in connection with the physical and not the spiritual. Wait you say! A person giving themselves is volunteering to come to Christ by their own free will. Now let us compare scripture with scripture and see if that is possible.

There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. (Romans 3:11)

{1} The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. {2} The LORD looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. {3} They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy: there is none that doeth good, no, not one. (Psalm 14:1-3)

{1} The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good. {2} God looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, that did seek God. {3} Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one. (Psalm 53:1-3)

So there is no possible way that anyone can volunteer themselves into salvation. The only way a person comes to Christ is in the following manner.

All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. (John 6:37)

No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:44)

As we read previously that all the references to free will were found in the Old Testament and they all had to do with physical things not with spiritual things. In Psalm 14:1-3 and Psalm 53:1-3 we read plainly that there is none that seeks after God because they have all gone aside or gone back to their evil ways. One will probably say, “yeah but that is talking about ancient Israel.” Okay then how do you deal with Romans 3:11 where it says plainly that there is none that seeketh after God? The reason that no one seeks after God is because man before salvation is spiritually dead. One becomes saved by the Father giving the believer to the Lord Jesus Christ. See what it says? “Shall come to me” not might or maybe or after they make a decision. This is called Irresistible grace. Those whom the Father has named before the foundation of the world unto salvation are being handpicked and given to the Lord Jesus Christ. No man can come to the Lord Jesus Christ unless the Father does the drawing. The Father draws the believer and gives them to Jesus and the believer will come to Jesus. No free will is involved because how can a spiritually dead person come to God on their own? They can’t and that is why they have to be drawn.

Free Willers do not believe that Christ was dead in the Tomb!

If there is one belief that free willers share it is that they do not believe that Christ was dead in tomb after his crucifixion. How can I say that? It is very simple. It goes back to the major problem within the free will camp and that is “eclectic” word meanings. The

word “eclectic” means “to choose or select.” This is exactly what the free will movement does with the Bible and that is why I state unequivocally that Free Willism is a false gospel like Mormonism, Roman Catholicism, Jehovah’s Witnesses, or Judaism. Each religion picks and chooses what they want to believe just like free willers and let me prove that statement.

The verses below show that Christ was dead in the tomb without question:

Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. (Matthew 27:64)

And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you. (Matthew 28:7)

And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: (Luke 24:46)

For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. (John 20:9)

This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead. (John 21:14)

And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. (Acts 3:15)

And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: (Romans 1:4)

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, (Ephesians 1:20)

And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. (Colossians 1:18)

These nine verses are representative of the many verses in scripture which speak about the fact that Christ was indeed dead when he was taken from the cross and placed in the tomb. The word behind “the dead” in all these verses is the word “nekros” which means “lifeless, dead, useless and literally a corpse.” It speaks to the fact that a person is definitely dead without question.

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; (Ephesians 2:1)

Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) (Ephesians 2:5)

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; (Colossians 2:13)

In these three verses the Greek word behind “dead” is also “nekros” which means “lifeless, useless, dead.” So now the free willer is in a quandary. The question I have for them is simple. If the word “nekros” means “dead and literally a corpse” when it is pertaining to the crucifixion of Christ, then why does it not mean “dead” when speaking about the spiritual condition of people before salvation? It is the same word with the same meaning. The free willer believes that a person can understand the gospel because he has enough light dwelling within him. This is what Jacob Arminius taught who was declared a heretic by the Synod of Dort in 1618-19.

And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. (Matthew 14:2)

And king Herod heard of him; (for his name was spread abroad:) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. (Mark 6:14)

Here are two passages from two different writers of the gospels showing that John the Baptist was indeed dead because he was beheaded by Herod and Herod now feared that John the Baptist had risen from the dead (nekros).

Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. (Luke 9:60)

Here is an interesting passage which you will never hear free willers preach on. Jesus is making a statement about the dead (nekros) burying their dead (nekros). Was this a bunch of corpses burying other corpses? Of course not, Jesus was pointing out in no uncertain terms that the dead who were doing the burying were those who were spiritually dead burying others who were physically dead. It is also not beyond the scope of this passage to be referring to the fact that those doing the burying were burying those who died without salvation making them spiritually dead when they died. It is like unbelievers in a false church who bury their unbelievers in a cemetery.

Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. (John 12:1)

Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. (John 12:9)

The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. (John 12:17)

Here are three verses which state in no uncertain terms that Lazarus was indeed physically dead (nekros). Did Lazarus come out of the tomb by his own free will or did Christ stand at the tomb and call him by name and then he came forth? In other words, Lazarus experienced a resurrection before he came out of the tomb.

Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband. (Acts 5:10)

When Ananias and Sapphira sold a parcel of land and lied about how much they got for it, they were both killed by the Lord for they lied to the Holy Ghost. In Acts 5:10, we read that Sapphira was killed because she was in league with her husband to perpetuate his lie. She did not know that her husband had died for his part in the lie and here we read that Sapphira was also killed and that she was dead (nekros).

To make a claim that a person has enough light to see his or her need for the gospel is to completely destroy the meaning of these verses in favor of emotional and personal bias. If they have enough light to see the gospel with the usage of the word “nekros” in the three passages then we might as well say the Bible is in error because Christ had a little life in him in the tomb and was not dead. Then we could say John the Baptist, Lazarus, Sapphira also did not die but had enough life in them. You see the principle must be transferred properly if a belief system is to be biblically based. Question, how would John the Baptist, who was beheaded have any life in him?

Free Willism is another gospel because it is not based upon scripture but on emotions and personal beliefs. We saw plainly that all these people were dead because the Greek word behind it teaches it openly. We did not have to twist any verses or over justify any beliefs to make it fit this article. Jesus plainly states “let the dead bury the dead” is probably the most open statement in scripture concerning the spiritual condition of man prior to salvation.

Free willers never start where they are supposed to and that is with the spiritual condition of people which is spiritually dead. This is why God has to resurrect the soul of the believer so they are able to believe and begin their Christian walk. Lazarus lived again when Christ raised him from the dead. The only way a person can begin the Christian life is when God draws that person and gives them to the Lord Jesus Christ with their resurrected souls.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. (John 5:25)

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:6)

In John 5:25 we have two great events happening to the believers. First, Jesus is stating that the hour is coming when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear shall live. The first thing is that the spiritually dead who were chosen by God will hear the voice of the Son of God. The word “hear” which is used twice in that verse comes from the Greek word “akouw” which means “hearing with understanding.” They are not just physically hearing the word but they are understanding it which means they have their spiritual ears because they have become saved. Secondly, because they hear and understand the gospel, they will live eternally because of salvation. Notice verse 24

right before 25. *Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. (John 5:24)* The life spoken of in John 5:25 is everlasting life.

Revelation 20:6 completes the thought of John 5:25. The first resurrection guarantees that the second death has no effect upon those who receive it. The first resurrection is the resurrection of the soul from being spiritually dead to spiritually alive. The second death is eternal damnation and those who have become saved will never have to concern themselves with the second death. The believer has been elevated to the position of priests. *And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. (Revelation 5:10)* Not only priests but also kings. Nobody's free will can accomplish that because it is all of the LORD.

*Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (Hebrews 12:2)* I wish to focus in on the first part of this verse and that is the fact that Jesus is both the author and finisher of our faith. The word "author" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "originator or creator" of our faith. Not only is he the author of our faith but the finisher. Remember what he said on the cross right before he died? *When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost. (John 19:30)* Here we read that Jesus finished God's salvation plan on the cross. We must not believe that we are the ones who finish God's salvation plan by "accepting it." God's plan of salvation was completed on the cross and that means it was done and it is not an open salvation whereby anyone can "accept Christ" because when he said "it is finished" it was the final sealing of all the believers named from the foundation of the world.

{21} Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; {22} Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. (2 Corinthians 1:21-22)

In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, (Ephesians 1:13)

And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. (Ephesians 4:30)

Here the Bible gives us three verses which emphasize the fact that the believer has been sealed and that final sealing was accomplished on Calvary as Christ stated "it is finished." The Greek word behind "it is finished" is also the same word behind "finisher" in Hebrews 12:2. It is the word "teleiōs" (teleos) which carries a major meaning of "completed." This means that God's salvation plan was completed on Calvary and now all he does is apply it to those named before the foundation of the world. Since the salvation plan was completed, there is no way a person can re-complete it by "accepting Christ" in an act of anyone's will. Look at the verses below>>Whose will?

{12} But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. (John 1:12-13)

### Summary

Those who believe and teach free will are doing from a base of nothing but emotions and personal preferences. They have created God in their own image and expect him to act according to their dictates as we read in some of their statements stemming from their minds. We have looked at the word “nekros” and saw that the word is used to describe the physically dead and spiritually dead. We cannot pick and choose how we want to apply the word. It means “dead, lifeless, useless and literally a corpse.” How much life is left in a corpse? 10%? 5%? 3%? Absolutely none, dead is dead! So let us give God the glory for our salvation and take it out of the hands of the prideful and arrogant free willers who are only teaching a lie. By the way salvation was never in their hands anyway. Satan has placed that belief there because it appeases the pride of man believing they can command God and that God is at their beckoning call. *But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay that that I have vowed. Salvation is of the LORD.* (Jonah 2:9)

**Free Willism like Dispensationalism is unsupported by Scripture and relies totally on the forcing of false beliefs on certain Scriptures!**

**John 3:16**  
**An Offer of the Gospel or a Declaration of the Gospel?**

By Dr. Ken Matto

John 3:16 (KJV) For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

I have heard free will preachers and adherents, when questioned about free will, rely on John 3:16 as some type of proof text which undeniably proves free will because it contains the word “whosoever.” In John 3:16, the Greek word “pas” for “whosoever” is singular and not plural which means it is speaking of individuals and not groups of people.

The 1828 Webster’s Dictionary defines “whosoever” as “anyone or any person whatever.”

The 1913 Webster's Dictionary defines "whosoever" as "Whatsoever person; any person whatever that; whoever."

The 2003 Merriam Webster Dictionary defines “whosoever” as “whatever person or any person whatever that.”

The dictionary definitions match up perfectly with the meaning of the Greek word.

The word “whosoever” in the New Testament is the Greek word “pas” which is used over 1,200 times. It carries with it the meaning of “all, everyone, every, each, or everything.” It is translated “whosoever” in the New Testament 110 Times in 93 verses. The translation of this word depends upon the context of the passage where the word is used. As you can see in the four examples below, that if you were to use “all or everyone” in place of whosoever, you would come to the same understanding of the passages. If you used the same meaning the free will preachers give it, it would totally destroy the meaning of the passages. John 3:16 is not an offer of the Gospel but it is a declaration that those who are saved, will never perish but are given everlasting life.

*(John 3:16 KJV) For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **whosoever** believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.*

*(Gal 5:4 KJV) Christ is become of no effect unto you, **whosoever** of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.*

*(1 John 3:6 KJV) **Whosoever** abideth in him sinneth not: **whosoever** sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.*

*1 John 3:9 (KJV) **Whosoever** is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.*

Now there is one verse which seems to be saying that a person can be willing to come to

the Lord Jesus Christ. It is Revelation 22:17 where “pas” is not used.

*(Rev 22:17 KJV) And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And **whosoever will**, let him take the water of life freely.*

The Greek word behind “whosoever will” is the word “thelo” which means, “desire, to wish to have, to be willing, or to purpose to do.” So it does sound like there is a verse which is teaching that a person can come in their free will. Right? Well, not really. Look carefully at this passage and you will see the word “heareth.” It is the word “akouw” (akouw) in the Greek which carries with it the meaning of “hearing with understanding.” *Luke 24:45 (KJV) Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,*

The unsaved will not understand but only the saved will understand. Look at the first part of the verse in Rev. 22:17. Who is calling the people to come? It is the Spirit of God who is doing the calling along with the bride, who is the body of believers. Who are the ones who hear? It is the believers. Who are the ones who are athirst for God? It is the believers because the unbelievers do not understand and in their spiritual deadness only walk according to the course of this world. *(Eph 2:2 KJV) Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:* This is what the believer had been saved out of. Rev. 22:17 is a verse which is evangelism based. The Holy Spirit indwelling the believer gives them the Gospel message to send out and only those who have been qualified by God to hear and understand, that is, having their spiritual ears opened, will come to God. Only those who are saved will thirst for God and take the water of life freely, which is the Gospel. *(John 4:14 KJV) But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.* So Revelation 22:17 cannot be used as a proof text for the free will Gospel simply because it is not teaching that, yet, free will preachers use it without really knowing what it means. The scary thing is that these free will preachers do this to the whole Bible just to bring it under a biased system of beliefs instead of allowing the Bible to speak for itself.

### **Offer?**

The word “offer” is used 17 times in the New Testament in 16 verses and not once is it used in reference to the offering of the Gospel. If one is going to use a correct term, the term would be calling, call, or called. The call of the Gospel goes out to the world. *Matthew 22:14 (KJV) For many are called, but few are chosen.* The call of the Gospel goes out to the world and within the calling is the choosing of the elect found within the hearing of the Gospel.

Romans 1:6 (KJV) Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ:

Romans 8:28 (KJV) And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

Romans 8:30 (KJV) Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom

he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

1 Corinthians 1:9 (KJV) God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

1 Thessalonians 2:12 (KJV) That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

2 Thessalonians 2:14 (KJV) Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Peter 2:9 (KJV) But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

The biblical term for Gospel proclamation is calling and not offering.

### Summary

John 3:16 has been intentionally misused as a proof text for something which does not exist, namely free will in accepting the Gospel. John 3:16 is a declaration that all those in Christ, “whosoever,” will never perish but have everlasting life. Can John 3:16 be used in preaching evangelism? Of course, because it is Scripture but it must be used properly by showing the hearers the great promise that it holds for the true believer. If John 3:16 has not been intentionally misused, then I feel sorry for all those PhDs and ThDs who do not know how to read or research a simple word. John 3:16 is a post-salvation verse and not a pre-salvation verse because it gives information about those who are already in Christ.

## Last Will and Testament of Christ

By Dr. Ken Matto

*Hebrews 9:16 (KJV) For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.*

In Hebrews 9, we read in verses 14-17, the subject of a will. A will is a legal document which allows the lawyer of the deceased or testator to divide their estate according to their wishes while they were still alive. While the testator lives, the will may be changed but once that person dies, there can be no more changes to that will because it now is in force. The testator is a person who makes or leaves a testament or will to give instruction on how to divide up their estate to those named in that will after their death and not before. This is another section of Scripture which puts the death knell to the myth of free will.

In Hebrews 9:14-17, we read about the last will and testament of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Hebrews 9:14 (KJV) How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?* The word “your” in this verse is a pronoun, second person plural and in the genitive case (case of possession) which means that the author is speaking to a certain group of people. If you notice that this verse is dripping with the words of salvation. It speaks about a person who is having their conscience purged from dead works to serve the living God. This means that a person has become saved because they go from dead works to serve the living God. If you notice, the verse is also stating that it was the blood of Christ, through the eternal Spirit that has done the purging. It is not done by the will of man but by the Holy Spirit in conjunction with the blood of Christ.

*Hebrews 9:15 (KJV) And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.* Verse 15 builds upon the teaching of verse 14. It speaks about Christ being the mediator. The mediator is one who comes between two parties, especially in a legal situation. *1 Timothy 2:5 (KJV) For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;* The Bible is very clear that Christ is the mediator between God and man. *John 14:6 (KJV) Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* It is clear that no one comes to the Father except through Christ making Him the only mediator of salvation. The first testament was the law of Sinai which no one would be able to keep. Salvation was unattainable by means of the Law. Hebrews 9:15 then speaks about those who are called that may receive the promise of eternal inheritance. It sounds like those who are called unto salvation may not receive it. This is easily explainable by the following passage. *Matthew 22:14 (KJV) For many are called, but few are chosen.* Many are called by means of the Gospel proclamation but not everyone will become saved. Only those who are chosen unto salvation will receive the promise. *Ephesians 1:4 (KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:* According to Ephesians 1:4, only a certain group of people were chosen before the

foundation of the earth and that is the Elect of God. *1 Peter 1:2 (KJV) Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.* We are elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father. Notice that in this verse also the blood of Christ is working in conjunction with the Holy Spirit.

Back to Hebrews 9:15. We read that it was the death of Christ that was made for the redemption of His elect from their transgressions made under the first covenant or the Law. Every person in this world that is unsaved at the time of death will be judged according to the Law. If therefore any transgression of the law be found in an individual, it will be like they have broken the entire law and will be sentenced to eternal damnation. *James 2:10 (KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.* Therefore since Christ died for His Elect, they will no longer be held guilty for the transgression of the law because Christ fulfilled all the requirements of the Law by means of His sacrifice. Since the believer is in Christ, it is like they too have kept every tenet of the Law. *Colossians 3:3 (KJV) For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. Since we are hidden in Christ, no accusation of the law can ever touch us.*

*Hebrews 9:16 (KJV) For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.* Now comes the legal, binding part of the testament. The testament is changeable only while the testator lives and has no legal or binding authority but once the testator is dead, the testament now goes into force and has legal authority and cannot be changed anymore. The testament is to remain as is at the point of the death of the testator. Christ was the testator of the New Testament or Covenant and His death at Calvary sealed the contents of His Testament or will. Just as a person makes a will, it can be changed any time the person is still alive but once they are dead, the will is now sealed and no more changes are to take place.

*Hebrews 9:17 (KJV) For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.* A will is a dead document and carries no legal authority until the death of the testator occurs. It is not like a power of attorney which a person has over another which is a document that is in force as long as the person it is designed to protect is still alive. Once that person passes away, then the power of attorney is null and void and at that time the will or testament is activated and the final wishes of the testator are then carried out.

Now here is the part which puts another death knell into the myth of free will. Once the Lord Jesus Christ died, then all those who were named before the foundation of the world unto salvation were now sealed. *2 Corinthians 1:22 (KJV) Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.* Then until the last one is saved, the call goes out to the world but only the elect will be chosen unto salvation. Only those whose names who were written in the Lamb's Book of Life will become saved. *Revelation 21:27 (KJV) And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.* The place in Heaven was already prepared for the believer from the foundation of the world. *Matthew 25:34 (KJV) Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the*

*world:*

Now here is the boot to free will. Have you ever been to the reading of a will? If not let me make up a typical scenario.

John Jones had died and now his family has come to the Lawyer's office for the reading of the will. Now John Jones was worth One million dollars so the reading of the will is important.

The Lawyer now reads the will which John made ten years ago and for the purpose of better understanding, we will say that his wife had predeceased him and only the children are now in the will.

“To my three children I hereby bequeath my entire estate which is to be divided up equally. My three children being Abigail, Jane, and Deborah. Now the will has been executed and the estate has been legally divided up.

**BUT WAIT!**

Before the session is over, a neighbor comes in and says to the Lawyer, add my name to that list and divide up the estate four ways.

The lawyer tells the man, “I am sorry but you cannot just add your name to the will because once a person dies, the will is in force and cannot be changed.”

Neighbor says, “Yes, but I choose to be part of that estate.”

Lawyer says, “I am sorry but you cannot add your name to a document which has been sealed and is now in force.”

Neighbor says, “But I will myself to be part of that estate.”

Lawyer says, “Sorry, but you cannot add your name to a will already in force and with all the named inheritors now please leave because ‘we never knew you.’”

And so it is with those who think that they can add their names to Christ's last will and testament. He died for His people, the Elect of God, and those were named before the foundation of the world and only those who are named will become saved and because the testament is in force, no other names can be added to it. No amount of free will, will ever get anyone into Heaven, simply because no one can add their names to the will. This is why on the last day, Jesus will say to the unbelievers. *Matthew 7:23 (KJV) And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.* This is why Jesus says to the unbelievers that He never knew them because they were not named in His will and therefore He did not die for them. So no matter who thinks or preaches that a person has free will and can “accept Christ” they are teaching a rank heresy and need to study their Bibles. Christ died for a specific group, namely His Elect.

*Matthew 1:21 (KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name*

*JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.*

*John 13:1 (KJV) Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.*

*John 17:9 (KJV) I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.*

Notice in these three verses, we read that Christ is only praying for and saving His people, which are the Elect of God and not the whole world. Now just one more section and that is back to legal talk. Remember in a will the beneficiaries receive an inheritance and that is exactly the language which God uses in describing what the believers receive.

*Acts 20:32 (KJV) And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.*

*Ephesians 1:11 (KJV) In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:*

*Ephesians 1:14 (KJV) Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.*

*Ephesians 1:18 (KJV) The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,*

*Hebrews 9:15 (KJV) And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.*

*1 Peter 1:4 (KJV) To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,*

The word “inheritance” is used 203 times in the Bible and the word “inherit” is used 61 times. These are legal terms with only specifically named people in view, just as the six verses above show us.

### **Summary**

To summarize this article, we have learned that a will, when the testator is still alive can be changed but once the testator dies, the will is now in force and nothing can be added or changed anymore. What makes us think that the Last Will and Testament of Christ is any different? No one of their own “supposed” free will can add their name to a document which is now in force, especially since Christ was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. *Revelation 13:8 (KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the*

*foundation of the world.* This means that in principle Christ was already slain before the first man was formed and that means the last will and testament of Christ was already in force when the world was created. The mythical free will of man is an affront to God when He already has everything worked out since the dawn of time. *Hebrews 4:3 (KJV)* *For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.* Free will is the feeble attempt of man to usurp the authority of God by believing he can add his name to a finished document and then believe that God is obligated to save him. Those who are to be saved have already been named, whether the free willer accepts it or not.

## Man the Sovereign and God the Beggar

By Dr. Ken Matto

(2 Cor 5:20 KJV) Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech *you* by us: we pray *you* in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

The most prevalent teaching in the extreme majority of churches today is that it is possible for one to “accept Christ” as their savior at any time. They believe that God is begging you to accept His Son and that you are the Sovereign determining the final decision as to whether to accept or not.

This is based on the belief that man has free will giving him or her the ability to understand the Gospel and to accept Christ. This stems from the belief that Christ died for every sinner in the world and not just for a certain number. It is normally based upon the complete misunderstanding of verses like 1 John 2:2.

(1 John 2:2 KJV) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins* of the whole world.

Propitiation - Expiation or sin offering

It is a sad thing that this verse is very misused by those who advocate free will. If you will notice in the beginning of this verse it talks about the Lord Jesus being the sin offering for the believer. The word “our” is in the genitive or possessive case which means it belongs to us. So what is in view here is that the Lord Jesus Christ was the sin bearer for all the believers. Now the second part of this verse could trip a person up if they do not connect what the rest of the Bible teaches on this. It is a given fact in Scripture that not every person in the world is going to be saved, in fact, there is only going to be a small remnant saved out of all the billions in population.

The second part of this verse is not teaching universal atonement because that is simply not true based upon the Scriptures and what we see in life. We can see unbelievers all around us who die in that state. What this verse is simply teaching, based upon all the collateral biblical evidence, is that the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ was not only sufficient for the believers in John’s time, but that sufficiency will extend to the end of time to all the Elect all around the world. It in no way implies universal atonement, in that Christ paid for the sins of every person in the world and all they have to do is “accept Christ” and the atonement will be applied. This is taught nowhere in Scripture because saying a few words does not apply the forgiveness of God.

God Himself is the one who chooses who He is going to save and applies the sacrifice of Christ to that person and then indwells them with the Holy Spirit. Man has no part whatsoever except to receive it. If Christ paid for every sin of every human being on earth, then what will the unbeliever be cast into hell for at the Great White Throne Judgment? It is for their sins because they had no savior for their sins. Many state that Christ was the final sacrifice for sins but that is not true. He was the first sacrifice for sins and He died to pay for the sins of all the Elect. All the animal sacrifices done under the Mosaic Law were only foreshadows and could not take away sins. (Heb 10:4 KJV) For *it*

is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Christ was the only one was able to take away sins by His sacrifice on Calvary. The unbeliever who dies will stand at the Great White Throne Judgment on the last day and without Christ as their Savior, will now be forced to pay for their sins eternally in hell. In essence, they are their own sacrifice for sins and this sacrifice never ends as it is eternal. This would make the unbeliever the final sacrifice for sin but only for their own sin and not the sins of another. The sacrifice of Christ removed the sins from the Elect and gave them eternal life. The sacrifice of the unbeliever gives them eternal damnation and no separation from their sin.

I want to look at some teachings of the free will movement concerning salvation which have absolutely no basis in Scripture. It is born out of the minds of men who wish to make themselves sovereign and make God the beggar. As we look at some very plain scriptures, we will see that free will, in reference to salvation is a total fallacy and needs to be abandoned so a better understanding of Scripture will follow.

### **Spiritual Condition Before Salvation**

(Eph 2:1 KJV) And you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins:

(Eph 2:5 KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

It is very important to know our pre-salvation condition. The Bible is very clear that before salvation, a person is spiritually dead. The word “dead” in both verses carries with it the meaning of “lifeless.” This means that our spirit and soul were dead yet we are still physically alive. This means that this verse is stating that a person can be physically alive while being spiritually dead. This is very important to understand.

This is why we are able to buy the car we want, wear the clothes we want, or are able to drive from one place to another. We have physical life and are able to make decisions which pertain to the physical. Many free willers make the erroneous comparison that because they can do certain things in the flesh, they can accept Christ. As we see above, the spirit of unsaved man is dead and salvation does not take place in the physical body but takes place in the spirit. If the spirit is dead, then it has absolutely no way of knowing it is dead and no way of regeneration on its own. Like Lazarus, if spiritual regeneration is to come to a person, then it must be initiated by an outside source which of course is God. So unsaved man being dead, must be regenerated from the outside in, not from the inside out. This is shown in the following verses:

(John 1:12-13 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

How many times have we heard John 1:12 given as proof that we can accept Christ and if we do, we then become sons of God. Let us briefly look at that verse. First of all it speaks about “receiving him.” It does not state that you can accept Him, but it states that “you receive.” That word for “receive” in the Greek means just that. First, a person receives Christ, which means a person is passive in their salvation and all they do is receive it. Then the verse goes on to say that “He” gave power to become the sons of God. First a

person receives the Lord and then they have power to become the sons of God, and then there is ability to believe, once they are saved and I will cover faith in the next section. Now connect this plain understanding to verse 13 where we read that a person is not born of the will of the flesh (because remember salvation does not take place in the flesh) nor of the will of man which is still only pertains to the physical before salvation, but they are born again by the Will of God. How much clearer can God make it that being born again is totally separate from the physical and not according to man's will, which is flesh driven before salvation, but by God's Will. Here we plainly see that man does not initiate salvation, God does and He does it according to His will.

### **You Must Exercise Saving Faith**

How many times have you heard some free will preacher make a plea for salvation and telling you that you must exercise faith in Christ to accept Him as savior? I am sure we all have heard it many times and will hear it many times more. There is a major problem with this theory because as we saw previously that before salvation a person is spiritually dead. A verse which completely rejects this theory is found in Galatians 5:22.

(Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

Basically, we need to ask the question. Where does faith come from? Galatians 5:22 answers that plainly. Faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit and therefore is not given until a person becomes saved. Remember John 1:12? (John 1:12 KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: One can become a child of God, only if they believe on His name. Now the words "faith" and "believing" are related in the Greek. Faith is the noun and believing is the verb. For one to believe in Christ, they must have faith to believe. Belief is built on faith because faith is the foundation of belief. However, one does not receive faith until one has already become saved allowing them to believe on Christ. So the free willer has another dilemma in that faith is given after salvation as we saw in Galatians 5:22. (Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. What is Romans 8:9 reminding us of? The main thesis is that if a person does not have the Holy Spirit, they are not of Christ, which means they are still unsaved and in the kingdom of Satan. If a person is still unsaved, they cannot exercise "saving faith" simply because they do not have any faith at all. The only way they can have faith, is if the Holy Spirit indwells them and that means they are saved. So the order is simple. Salvation first - Faith second - Believing third. Once again we see that a dead man does not initiate salvation, God does.

### **Lamb's Book of Life**

The morning of the day I am writing this (4/1/11) I was listening to Dr. Charles Stanley and I want to make it known that I do like him and I have learned much from him in the 30 years I have been saved. This morning he stated something from a free will point of view which also has no biblical basis. He stated that if you accept Christ then your name will be entered in the Lamb's Book of Life. He is not the only one who teaches this as all free will proponents teach it. They believe that once you accept Christ, your name is then written in the Lamb's Book of Life at the moment you accept. The following two verses refute that teaching.

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

Notice what it says in these two verses concerning the Lamb's Book of Life. It states plainly that the names of all those whom God plans to save were written in it before the foundation of the world. This means that before the world was created, God already had chosen out a people to save and named them in the Lamb's Book of Life. To those who believe in free will, where were you when the Lamb's Book of Life was written? You were not yet created which means you could not accept anything. The Lamb's Book of Life was completed before Adam and Eve and is not an ongoing journal.

### **You Must Repent of Your Sins**

Probably we have all heard this ones especially if we have listened to Billy Graham. When he made the alter call, he stated that the first thing a person must do is repent of their sins. Keep in mind what we have learned so far that man is spiritually dead. Repentance is one of those things which falls under spiritual renewal. Just think for a moment, a person is out there sinning for 20, 30, 40 years and all of a sudden he is going to repent of his sins. He may get caught up in the moment and say that he will repent but can he? The answer is absolutely no! No one in an unsaved state can ever repent of their sins because they have no strength to do it. There is such a thing as carnal repentance where someone commits an act and hurts someone and then repents of it and will never do it again. Or someone may go to an Alcoholic Rehabilitation Center to try and give up drinking. This is not the kind of repentance which is associated with salvation. Why? The Alcoholic may come out of the Center without a desire to drink, but he will still have a desire to commit other sins because he is still dead in sins. So true repentance does not take place.

(2 Cor 7:10 KJV) For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

In 2 Corinthians 7:10, we read about two contrasting views of repentance. We will look at the second one first. The second type of repentance is the worldly type which basically is described as "whoops I got caught." Worldly repentance may bring a few tears but it is not a genuine repentance which leads to salvation because this type of repentance is man-centered. We see this all the time as someone commits a crime and then goes to court and cries, in hopes the judge will be lenient with them. So their repentance is not to salvation but is for their own selfish benefit. This is why it leads to death because it remains man-centered and for manipulation. The first type of repentance is the godly repentance that pertains to salvation, then he states that it is not to be repented of. This means that when a person is truly saved, they can never go back to being unsaved. The word "repentance" in the Greek carries with it the idea of a "change of mind." The true believer goes from a state of totally carnal thinking and is given a change of mind by means of salvation. (1

Cor 2:16 KJV) For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ. The true believer has the mind of Christ which means they have a renewed mind from spiritual death. (Rom 12:2 KJV) And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

Now the question remains, can an unsaved man repent of his sins? The answer is two-fold and given to us in the following verse. (2 Tim 2:25 KJV) In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; 2 Timothy 2:25 teaches us that it is God who gives repentance. So the answer to our question is that a person can repent of their sins only if God grants it and the second answer is that a person cannot repent of their sins on their own. Repentance like faith is given to the believer at the moment of salvation because it is at that time we receive the mind of Christ. The unbeliever still has a mind which goes along with the world system and it is only when we become saved, is when we start seeing what we are doing is sin, because we have the change of mind and now see things differently.

### **Whosoever...**

There is one word which the free willer likes to throw around and that is “whosoever.” This is where I wish they would take a few moments and investigate the word as used in the Scriptures. It is the Greek word “pas” which is used many times in the New Testament but we will look at one verse which is a representative verse using “whosoever.”

(John 3:16 KJV) For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

John 3:16 has been used and misused probably more than any other verse in the Bible. This verse is used as a capstone for those who tout free will but the word “whosoever” does not mean that anyone at any time according to their will can become saved. That word “whosoever” carries with it the meaning of “everyone or all.” It means those whom God has qualified to hear the Gospel and saves them by giving them faith to believe in Jesus and this happens to everyone who God saves. Man is spiritually dead and needs to be raised from the dead and that can only happen when God makes the first move, and that is salvation. We receive salvation before we can believe. (Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, As we previously saw, a fruit of the Holy Spirit is faith and only those who are saved will receive the Holy Spirit. When we are saved, we are given faith, and then we have the ability to believe. So verse 16 is a declaration that those who are the Elect of God will never perish but have everlasting life. It is not an offer of the Gospel because there is no such thing in Scripture. God applies salvation to the Elect. I know because I did not ask for salvation before I was saved. I was the Elect of God and therefore He applied grace to my life and I became saved.

(Rev 21:6 KJV) And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

(Rev 22:17 KJV) And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Here we have two verses which are very close in meaning as they both speak of the water of life freely. In 22:17, we read “whosoever will” take the water of life freely. Remember now the spiritual condition of man before salvation, they are spiritually dead and incapable of making a spiritual decision. When we walked in darkness, we did not believe we needed a Savior especially if we thought we were good. We were not thirsty for the true Gospel, in fact, being dead in sins we were at war with God because we were members of the kingdom of Satan. It was only when our spiritual eyes were opened is when we thirsted for the water of life. The water of life is the Gospel which when applied to a person, brings eternal life in Christ. Another key in Rev. 22:17, is the word “heareth” which does not only mean physically hearing, but it means hearing with understanding. (Luke 24:32 KJV) And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures? Only those who are saved are capable of hearing with understanding. Just as Jesus opened the spiritual ears of the disciples on the Road to Emmaus in Luke 24, He opens the ears of the “whosoever” He saves to allow them to understand the Gospel.

### **Sinner’s Prayer**

Many who believe in free will state that saying a sinner’s prayer somehow initiates salvation. That is not true because that would mean salvation by works and it is only by grace. The ones who are truly saved may say a sinner’s prayer at the moment of salvation but that is in response to salvation and not for salvation. Remember we have openly read that a person is spiritually dead and incapable of initiating salvation. Many who say those prayers remain unsaved and it is deceitful for some preacher to claim that if someone says a sinner’s prayer, that means they are saved. Prayer is a result of salvation whereby we communicate with our heavenly Father. (Isa 59:2 KJV) But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid *his* face from you, that he will not hear. Just as God did not hear the prayers of the sinning nation of Judah, He does not hear the prayer of any He has not saved. (John 4:24 KJV) God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth. Samaria was surrounded by many pagan nations for many years and those pagan nations all had some type of physical representations of their false god, of course, which were all idols. Some were Dagon, Milcom, and Baal. The true God is a spirit and those that worship Him, must do it according to Spirit. This means that a spiritually dead person, the unsaved, cannot truly worship God nor can they have a true prayer life, because they are dead. Those who are born again are indwelt by the Holy Spirit who makes us alive unto God and teaches us the truth about God and as we come into more and more truth about God from the Scriptures, we continually worship Him as our understanding of God grows.

### **Draw**

(John 6:44 KJV) No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. The word “draw” in John 6:44 carries with it the meaning of “drag or force.” The fact is clear that the sinner, which the Christian used to be, is spiritually dead and loves their sin. (John 3:19 KJV) And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light,

because their deeds were evil. Since man is dead in sins, there is no way that they can come to Christ, and this verse shows us that no man is able or has the power to come to Christ of their own volition. The way that a person comes to Christ is that the Father must draw or literally drag them. Since they are in a state of spiritual death, all they know is sin and this world. God has to take them and resurrect their souls, grant them spiritual ears and eyes, place the Holy Spirit in them, thus giving them salvation. God then takes them and transfers them from the kingdom of Satan to the Kingdom of God. (Col 1:12-13 KJV) Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: {13} Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son: Colossians 1:12-13 speaks about God the Father qualifying us to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints and then translating us from darkness to the Kingdom of God. So this verse completely squelches the false notion of free will because we see that it is the Father who does the work of salvation in the life of the believer. Those who claim that they can save themselves by their own will are basically stating that they have as much strength and authority as the Father. Think about it.

### Summary

I have heard free will preachers claim to their congregations that “it is your choice.” Based upon what we have looked at in this short study, there is no way that it is our choice. This means that Christ died indiscriminately and that is not what the Bible teaches. He died for the Elect which was named before the foundation of the world. This idea that Christ died for everybody in the world is foreign to the Scriptures. What we have also found out is that neither God nor man is the beggar in salvation. God does not beg because He applies salvation to those He named before the foundation of the world. The unbeliever who is predestined to be a believer does not come of his own volition but needs to be forced or dragged, revealing how deep in sin we really are. Free will in salvation does not exist. God named before the foundation of the world those He was going to save and the reason that we go into all the world with the Gospel is because we do not know who the Elect of God are because He calls them “whosoever” and does not name them. If you believe in free will, you do not have any biblical basis for that view. It is held in pride and arrogance, not truth. The Bible nowhere states that man has a choice in salvation. God is not begging and you are not sovereign as to whether you are going to accept Him. The fact is that he accepts us! Jonah had it right >>(Jonah 2:9 KJV) But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay *that* that I have vowed. **Salvation is of the LORD.**

## The Order of Salvation

By Dr. Ken Matto

For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (Romans 10:13)

There is a great confusion in Christianity concerning the way a person becomes saved and this confusion has been going on for hundreds of years. This continues to happen simply because Christians will not go to the Bible and see what God has to say about salvation. It is all in there and no one has to create scenarios to appease people. The bottom line is that salvation happens in an instant in the lives of the Elect but what took place to effect the salvation of the Elect has happened over many thousands of years. The title of this article is "The Order of Salvation" in which the old timers refer to it in Latin as the "Ordo Salutis." It basically describes the steps that the Holy Spirit takes to effect a person's salvation. I am not going to get into the theological aspects of it because in this article I want to look at biblical salvation from spiritual death to life. The intimate aspects of the "Ordo Salutis" can be studied at one's leisure.

We have all heard things like the Roman Road to Salvation, God did all he could and now it is up to you, it is like signing a check which requires two signatures and God already signed it and now it is up to you to sign. These type of beliefs sound religious but they are in no way biblical. Let me point out right at the beginning that nowhere in the Bible does God ever place man in charge of his own salvation. There is not one verse which teaches that. All of these pet beliefs come out of the system known as "Arminianism" which teaches that a person has enough light to understand and know their plight and has the intelligence to either accept or reject Christ. A spiritually dead person cannot accept Christ and the Elect of God cannot reject Christ. Yet man places the responsibility for his salvation upon himself. For illustration I want to show you from a Chick tract what I mean:

1. Admit you are a sinner – Romans 3:10
2. Be willing to turn from sin (repent) Acts 17:30
3. Believe that Jesus Christ died for you, was buried and rose from the dead – Romans 10:9-10
4. Through prayer, invite Jesus into your life to become your personal Saviour – Romans 10:13

Then they go on and give you a Sinner's Prayer which you are supposed to repeat and then immediately you are saved. In those 4 instructions, do you read anything about God being the one who does the saving? Do you see the works you must do to gain salvation their way? Admit>turn>believe>invite, all four works are done by the person receiving the tract which means it is totally up to the person to effect their own salvation because if they don't, then they cannot be saved. This basically the false teaching of "Free Willism" which basically teaches that man has authority in salvation, even more than God, because if the person does not give their permission to God to save them, then God has become impotent and cannot work beyond the permission of the human. Can anyone find me a Scripture verse which endorses the belief that man has more authority in salvation than

God has? I will give you a hint, there are none! Let us now attend to the biblical order of salvation.

### **Man's Condition in an Unsaved State**

And you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins; (Ephesians 2:1)

Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) (Ephesians 2:5)

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; (Colossians 2:13)

The word “dead” in all three verses is the Greek word “nekrous” which means “lifeless, useless, and dead.” So we see that a person in an unsaved state is spiritually dead which means they have physical life but not spiritual life. We have all been to funerals and the person in the casket never speaks. Why? Because they are dead! In John 12:1 the same word is used to describe Lazarus. *Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.* (John 12:1) Was Lazarus dead? He sure was! So we see the same word which described Lazarus as being physically dead is used to describe the unbeliever who is spiritually dead. Here is one more biblical proof. Do you believe that Christ died on the cross? The Bible clearly teaches that he did whether you believe it or not. *And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.* (Matthew 28:7) The same word that described Lazarus in the tomb is used here to describe the Lord Jesus Christ in the tomb. So we have the same word used to describe both physical death and spiritual death.

So what did Jesus and Lazarus have in common besides physical death? They both walked out of their tombs after they experienced a resurrection to life.

### **Resurrection to Life**

The same situation which Lazarus and Jesus experienced must be experienced by the person in an unsaved state. Since they are spiritually dead and the dead can do nothing, then they must experience the resurrection of their souls to everlasting life. A great aspect of God's salvation program is He gave us a resurrected soul. We have already read that before salvation we were dead in our sins resulting in the inability to do anything to achieve salvation on our own. So what did God do to those He planned to save? The Bible teaches in Romans 10:17 that faith comes by hearing the Word of God. Now everybody has physical ears which can hear sounds and many of those physical ears come under the hearing of the Word of God, yet those still in spiritual death will be unable to respond to God's calling. So for God's elect to be able to respond to His calling they must be qualified to hear the gospel in a manner beyond the physical realm. The way God accomplished this is by the resurrection of the dead soul. When a person receives their resurrected soul, they are then alive unto God. Do you remember the resurrection of Lazarus in John 11? Lazarus was as dead as could be, in fact the Biblical narrative even tells us his body stunk from decay after being in the grave 4 days. Our dead souls were akin to that same condition, they were dead. So Christ comes to the tomb and yells out to Lazarus to come forth, and Lazarus was resurrected to life once again. When God calls

out our name for salvation, He resurrects our soul so we may be able to hear his calling, hence the biblical term, "He who has ears to hear."

<sup>5</sup> But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. **This is the first resurrection.** <sup>6</sup> Blessed and holy *is* he that hath part in **the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power,** but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. Revelation 20:5-6

These two verses give us an excellent understanding of the first resurrection or the resurrection of the soul. Notice the result of those who partake in the first resurrection, the second death has no power over them. The second death being eternal damnation. When a person becomes born again, they are passed from death unto life.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, **He that heareth my word,** and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. (John 5:24)

Notice how the Lord is saying that those who HEAR His word and believes and the only way a dead person can believe is to be made alive or resurrected like Lazarus. The word "heareth" in this verse is the Greek word "akouo" (ah-koo-oh) which means hearing with understanding. How does a spiritually dead person understand spiritual things? *But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. (1 Corinthians 2:14)* The unsaved man cannot understand spiritual things according to 1 Corinthians 2:14 because he is spiritually dead.

As Lazarus was passive in his resurrection, so are the children of God passive in their resurrection also. It is all of God! Did Lazarus have anything to do with his resurrection except receiving it? No! How can a dead man raise himself? So you see, you are still in the flesh until the Lord returns or comes for us individually but now because of your resurrected soul, you serve God instead of sin. Sin no longer has dominion over us but now we serve a new master.

Now as we progress further we now come to the second gift of God. We went from spiritually dead to spiritually alive by means of our resurrected souls. *Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. (Romans 6:4)* The English words "was raised up" is one word in the Greek text and it is in the Aorist tense and in the indicative mood which is the mood of fact. The Aorist tense tells us of a singular action with no emphasis on time or duration. When the Aorist tense is in the Indicative mood, then time enters into the equation very heavily. It is seen as a punctiliar verb as a past tense meaning an action at one point in time. Now a question remains, have you been resurrected into your glorified body? The answer is no, not yet! Then the resurrection in view in Romans 6:4 is in line with the resurrection of our souls taught in Revelation 20:5-6. The Aorist tense can also be viewed as a single action. We were raised only once in our souls and that is why we are raised from death unto life as we read in John 5:24. The spiritual resurrection takes place only once in the life of a true believer.

Now that we have received our resurrected souls and now are alive unto God, we receive the third gift from God and that is faith.

### **Faith**

But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, (Galatians 5:22)

Here we read plainly the faith is one of the fruits of the Holy Spirit. Only those who have become saved will have been given faith to see beyond this world. *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. (Romans 8:9)* The Bible is very clear that if you do not have the Holy Spirit, then you are not of Christ which means you are unsaved. Everyone on earth has a certain amount of faith including the unbelievers. The type of faith the unbelievers have is limited only to this world. For example, I have faith my car will not break down, I have faith that the chair I am sitting on will not fall, I have faith the stock market will rise, etc. Faith in the realm of salvation is given only to God's Elect. *(For we walk by faith, not by sight:.) (2 Corinthians 5:7)* The world walks by sight but the child of God walks by faith.

Then once we have faith we receive the fourth gift of God and that is Belief.

### **Belief**

Now that you have the gift of the Holy Spirit indwelling you and you now have faith, you are now able to believe. The word "Faith" in the Greek text is always a noun which is a person, place, or thing. The word "believe" in the Greek text is always a verb which means it is a work but it is a work done after salvation not before. *But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: (2 Thessalonians 2:13)* Now that you have a bed of eternal faith to build on, you can now believe building on your faith. The unbeliever is dead and has no living faith but when you became saved, you received the Holy Spirit and he gave you a living faith which you now can build your beliefs upon. Before you were saved everlasting life was a myth, Jesus was a nice guy or even a fraud, the church is made up of myths, atheism, agnosticism, endorsing the sins of the world, etc. Now after you are saved, you realize your beliefs were wrong and all of a sudden those things which you endorsed as an unbeliever now are evil in your sight. Why? Because you now have a true belief system rooted in the truth of God.

### **Everlasting Life**

*He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (John 3:36)* Here in John 3:36 we see the great division. Those that are saved and evidence that salvation by believing on the Son has everlasting life. Those who do not have the Son and are tied to this world, are under the wrath of God. There is no in between or neutral area. Either a person is saved or they are not.

### **Summary of the Visible Section**

Just to summarize the section on the visible salvation and what I mean by that is what we experience as true believers. The next section will show what the LORD did behind the scenes to effect your salvation. In this section we saw that a person is spiritually dead and totally unable to raise themselves but God in his mercy chose to raise many from spiritual death and bring to them salvation. So we go from being spiritually dead and a state of impotence to a resurrected soul which now breeds spiritual life into us and then we are given faith by the indwelling Holy Spirit and then we have the ability to build on that faith by true belief and within the gift of the resurrected soul and the Holy Spirit is the fact that we have everlasting life.

Now within what you have read here and the Scriptures describing these things, where does man fit in having the ability to do any of those things from a state of spiritual death? How does the spiritually dead person raise themselves from the dead and then put the Holy Spirit within themselves? *But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: (John 15:26)* The Holy Spirit is sent unto the believer by the Lord Jesus Christ but comes from the Father. How does a spiritually dead person command the Father and the Son to dispatch the Holy Spirit to them?

### **Salvation Behind the Scenes**

Now we have seen the visible aspects of salvation but now we are going to look at what God did to effect your salvation without you even knowing about it, in fact even before you were born.

### **Named Before the Foundation of the World**

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. (Revelation 13:8)

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17:8)

Here we see two verses which plainly teach that God had named those he was going to save from the foundation of the world, that is, even before the world was created or before you and I were created.

### **Elected according to the foreknowledge of God**

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied. (1 Peter 1:2)

Once you were chosen by God and placed into the Lamb's Book of Life according to the foreknowledge of God you were then elected to salvation. The Greek word "eklektos" behind the English word "Elect" means "chosen." At this point you were elected unto salvation.

## **Predestinated**

Then once we were elected by God for salvation, he then predestined us for two things: First, he predestined us to be saved at some point in our lives that he determined beforehand and secondly, we are predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son.

In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: (Ephesians 1:11)

For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. (Romans 8:29)

## **Salvation Realized**

Then upon the appointed time of your salvation, God the Father then gives you to God the Son.

All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. (John 6:37)

And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. (John 6:39)

In these two verses we see important doctrines. In 6:37 we see that those whom the Father gives to the Son “shall come to him.” Do we see anything about a decision? It is known as “irresistible grace” because if you are named >elected>predestined then at some point in your life you will become saved and in 6:39 we read that the Lord Jesus Christ will not lose anyone which means “eternal security” as you cannot lose your salvation which is a promise from the Lord Jesus himself.

## **Summary**

So we see plainly that this is the biblical way in which you became saved. No decisions are ever involved and there is no such thing as God needing your permission to work in your life. Instead of redefining biblical salvation to make it look like you did anything to effect it, bask in the joy that you were named before the foundation of the world. Then think about the alternative if you were not named. It makes you appreciate your salvation even more.

## Saint or Sinner Which are you?

By Dr. Ken Matto

(All verse quotations are from the King James Bible.)

Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you. (Philippians 4:21)

Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous. (Psalm 1:5)

There is a great confusion which is taking place in Christianity today and that is, are Christians regarded as sinners or saints? It seems the majority of Christians love to cling to the saying, "I am just a sinner saved by grace." Well that sounds so noble to others who adopt the same mindset but is that a biblical saying? Can it be proven by Scripture or is it one of those pet sayings that Christians use without ever checking to see if the Bible endorses that belief.

Let's analyze that statement and see if the Scriptures agree with it.

**I am** – This puts the saying in the present tense which means those who believe it are stating they are sinners.

**Just** – Synonyms are "merely, purely, only, solely" which means the Christian is stating that they are nothing but sinners.

**A sinner** – A sinner is one who breaks the law of God as seen in 1 John 3:4. Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. (1 John 3:4)

**Saved by grace** – The method of salvation which is apart from any works which God uses to save people from eternal damnation and transfers them into the kingdom of God.

**I AM** – {9} Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, {10} Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. {11} And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. (1 Corinthians 6:9-11)

In verses 9 & 10 Paul was giving a list of the sins which were prevalent at Corinth and then he says that some of the Corinthians were involved in those sins. He mentions this to show that there must be a difference between their present lives and the lives they lived while unsaved. He states that some "were" in those sinful lifestyles. That word "were" is in the past tense. Now they are regenerated and should be living their lives to the glory of God and farther away from those sins each day. He states they were washed and sanctified. They were cleansed of these sins and because of Calvary they were made holy. *According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that **we should be holy** and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4)* Then Paul goes on

to give another great tenet of salvation, not only are those saved people washed and sanctified, they are also justified. Justification is like that person never sinned. All their sins have been washed away and there is no sins attached to their souls. *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.* (Psalm 103:12) It is important for Christians to know that our sins were not covered but they were removed from us. In other words, Christ made us so pure in our spiritual being that it is like we never sinned and that is why the Christian is readied for Heaven the moment they become saved. These Corinthian Christians were not understanding the great transformation that had taken place in their lives. If they were cognizant of this, they would do everything to expunge sinful behavior from their lives and also from the congregation. God gave us the Holy Spirit to indwell us because in His wisdom, He knew that sinful flesh would be too powerful for us to overcome by ourselves, so the Holy Spirit indwells us giving us the power to avoid sin. When a Christians sins, it is normally voluntary.

**JUST** - Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. (1 Peter 2:5) {9} But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: {10} Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. (1 Peter 2:9-10)

#### 1 Pet 2:5

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

Are built up - Are being built up

Acceptable - Pleasant, well-received, or approved

By - through

Peter continues from verse four that since the Lord Jesus Christ is called a living stone, and since like begets like, (a biblical principle) those who have become born again by the Lord Jesus Christ are also called lively stones. The words “are built up” is one word in the Greek and is in the present tense which means the Lord is continually adding more believers to the Kingdom until one day the spiritual house will be completed and then the end will come. He calls us a “holy priesthood” which is confirmed in Revelation 1:6. *And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. (Revelation 1:6)* The body of believers fulfills the type of Aaron’s priesthood. We offer up spiritual sacrifices and not the bloody animal sacrifices which were done under the Old Testament laws.

By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lips giving thanks to his name. (Hebrews 13:15)

The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise. (Psalm 51:17)

As spiritual priests, we offer the spiritual sacrifices of praise, prayer, contriteness. We are not only compared to a spiritual house but by calling us priests, we work within the same

spiritual house as did the priests of old when they worked in the temple and tabernacle in the wilderness. It is important to note that all the spiritual sacrifices which are offered can only be acceptable unto God if they come through the Lord Jesus Christ. A person in a false, Christ denying religion can offer spiritual sacrifices like prayer but it is not approved or received by God because it does not come through the Lord Jesus Christ. For one to be approved, they must be born again in and by the Lord Jesus or it is just a dead stone offering.

### 1 Pet 2:9

But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

Chosen - Select or Elect

Generation - Race, offspring, or family

Royal - Kingly

Holy – Set Apart unto God

Peculiar - Possession, special, belonging exclusively

Marvellous - Wonderful

Now God goes on to contrast the true believer with those appointed to oppose the Lord Jesus Christ. God calls us a chosen generation which means we are the elect of God and the word generation means a race or family. This means those who are chosen of God to be born again are His family because we become His offspring by salvation. He then goes on to say that we are not only family but a kingly priesthood which means we are royalty in His eyes. God then states that we are a holy people in contrast to those who are still lost in their sins, namely sinners.

Then God states that we are a peculiar people which means we belong to Him exclusively as His special possession through the Lord Jesus Christ. The entire body of believers, whom God has redeemed, will now be able to bring forth the praises of God who has redeemed us from the kingdom of Satan and darkness and brought us into the wonderful light of the Gospel. *This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. (1 John 1:5)*

### 1 Pet 2:10

Which in time past *were* not a people, but *are* now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

The - the (definite article)

Obtained mercy - Having received mercy

This is one of the most overlooked verses in the New Testament which flat out state that the true, born again Christians are the people of God. If you notice how the text reads that in times past were not a people of God, but now, since we have received mercy we are “THE” people of God. Whenever the word “the” appears it is a definite article which gives no room for speculation. This verse makes it plain that when we become saved, we become a true child of God or the chosen people. Remember in verse 9, we were called

“a chosen generation” when we looked at the word “generation” it carried with it the meaning of “race, family, or offspring.” This means that when we become born again, we are then joined to the family of God making us the true chosen people by regeneration. This one verse ends the argument of who the chosen people of God are. Outside of Christ there is no chosen people, inside of Christ are the chosen people. It is as simple as that but too often politics is thrown in to biblical interpretation and it muddies the waters of understanding. Keep politics out of the Bible and you will come to truth.

**A SINNER** - Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: (Colossians 1:13)

Hath delivered - Saved or rescued

Power - Authority

Hath translated - Transfer, remove, or change the place of

God, through the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ on Calvary, has delivered us from all the authority of the kingdom of darkness. Not only were we rescued from that kingdom but we were then translated into the Kingdom of Christ. This verse is a drastic example of what happens to the Elect of God. We are snatched out of the kingdom of darkness and placed into the Kingdom of God. *No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.* (Mark 3:27) Satan was bound at the cross and could not keep anyone from becoming saved. This is the teaching of Mark 3:27 where Satan is the strong man and Christ is the one who bound him and spoils his house, that is, He plunders Satan's kingdom and brings His Elect out of it and into His Kingdom.

**SAVED BY GRACE** – This is the only portion of that saying which is true. {8} For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: {9} Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9)

We see here that a person is saved by the grace of God unto salvation. *Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: (Romans 3:24)* However, it must be remembered that a person is saved by the grace of God one time and it is not an event which happens repeatedly. Once we become saved by the grace of God, we then continue to grow in that grace which is called “progressive sanctification” whereby a Christian exchanges the old worldly desires for the purpose of becoming a stronger Christian in the Faith. *But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen. (2 Peter 3:18)* Growing in grace is a continuation of the singular event of receiving salvation.

One of the keys of understanding the Christian's position in Christ is to stop looking at it from our point of view and begin to look at it from God's point of view and that view is found in the Bible. According to the Bible, the sinner is one who is unsaved and an enemy of God. The Saint is one who is saved by the grace of God and placed into the kingdom of God through the blood of Christ's sacrifice upon Calvary. Please understand the following statement because it is very important.

## **Christ did not go to the Cross to make you a Sinner, he went to make you a Saint!**

When you became saved, the Holy Spirit indwelled you and was given as the earnest or pledge of eternal life which began at the moment of salvation and the continuation of it which is to come after our home going or the return of the Lord on the last day. *Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. (2 Corinthians 1:22)* The Holy Spirit does not indwell sinners, only saints. Once a sinner receives the Holy Spirit, they are no longer considered a sinner but a Saint in the Kingdom of God.

When we analyzed that pet Christian saying above we also read how the Scriptures completely destroyed it. Then we have to ask the question, what about when a Christian sins after salvation? It is a legitimate question and needs to be broached and understood so we can stop the false humility found in that saying above.

When we became saved we became a new creature, not creation as the modern versions state. A new creation would be the complete remaking of our bodies which will happen on the last day but for now we are a new creature. *Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (2 Corinthians 5:17)* This basically means that we are in the same body but something new had happened to us within that old body.

That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; (Ephesians 4:22) And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. (Ephesians 4:24)

In 2 Corinthians 5:17 the verse states plainly that if any man be in Christ they are a new creature, then it goes on to say that the old is passed away and all things are new. How could this be? Something had to take place within us to cause us to go from old to new and that something was the receiving of our resurrected souls unto eternal life. Before a person is saved, they are dead in sins and that is why the sinner commits sins without ever thinking about the consequences of their actions. *{13} And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14)* So we see plainly that a person without Christ is dead in their sins. Dead is dead and a person can do nothing to bring themselves out of that condition. Notice in Colossians 2:13 it speaks about a person being dead and then right on the heels of that statement it states that "he quickened us together with him," that is, God made us alive which means he brought us from the dead. He resurrected our souls from death to eternal life. In Revelation 20:6, this is referred to as the first resurrection. *Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:6)* We know this to be a fact because the second death has no effect upon the believer, that is, the second death being eternal damnation but those in Christ are passed from death unto life. *Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. (John 5:24)*

Now back to Colossians 2:13-14. Those who have become saved, made alive, have had all their sins and trespasses forgiven and nailed to the cross. That means when you became saved the efficacious sacrifice of Christ took all your sins and removed them from your soul making it sin free and ready for heaven. They were literally blotted out and that means there is no sin which can be held against the believer. Now let us go back to the question of what happens when a Christian sins? Every sin that a Christian commits has already been forgiven and removed from their soul. Then the question is what happens to my future sins? Where were you when Christ went to the cross to pay for your sins? You were not even born yet which means all your sins were in the future! This means that every sin you committed, whether it be the past, present, or future has been atoned for and removed from you. So when a Christian sins, that sin was paid for and removed. However, this does not mean the consequences of the sin will not remain.

A great example of this is found in the life of David who sinned with Bathsheba and paid the price for his sin by his son being taken in death. *And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die. (2 Samuel 12:13)* If you notice in this verse it states that God put away his sin and this could only happen if a person is saved. If David was not saved, then he would have to give account of that sin on Judgment Day. Seven days after Nathan came to David, his child had died.

Let's bring it up to today. Let's say a Christian is deep in debt and finds a bag of money worth \$20,000 with "Brinks" written on the bag. He knows that it fell off a Brinks armored car but does not return it to the police or to Brinks and keeps it and pays off all his bills. Instead of destroying the bag he puts it in his car in the back seat as a souvenir and then he gets pulled over by the police for a traffic violation and the officer sees the bag in the back seat. He calls it in and then he is told that a bag of \$20,000 fell off a truck and went missing. Now the Christian is brought to police headquarters and he finally admits that he did find it but kept the money. He now goes before the judge and confesses to the crime and receives a year in jail and two years probation. If he is a true Christian, his sin has already been paid for by Christ on Calvary but he had to receive the consequences of his action according to the laws of the land.

When we became saved, the removal of our sins happened in our soul existence and not our flesh. When we allow our flesh to override our spiritual life, then we will get into trouble. The Apostle Paul, who is revered by Christians for his ministry also had problems in the flesh. As a human being living in a fallen world, Christians are also susceptible to temptations and many times we succumb to them. The reason that we do not lose our salvation is because the resurrection took place in our soul and that is something that is not under our control. Going back to Colossians 2:13-14, it states that "he" made us alive, that is, we did not initiate it nor do we sustain it. While we are alive in this world, we are going to have trouble with the flesh because the flesh is where the sin now resides and that is why the Christian has a great war within themselves because the clean soul is warring against the filthiness of the flesh and this is what the Apostle Paul wrote about in Romans 7.

{17} Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. {18} For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. {19} For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. {20} Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. (Romans 7:17-20)

No one is going to deny the fact that the Apostle Paul was a saved man. He wrote 13 books of the New Testament, 14 if you include Hebrews. Would God give the assignment to write more than half the New Testament to a sinner or would he give it to a redeemed saint? The answer is obvious because God would never give this responsibility to an unsaved person. Here is the reality that the same Holy Spirit that indwelt Paul is the same one that indwells every single true believer who has ever lived on this earth. Paul spoke about his troubles in the flesh and who better to broach the subject of quenching and grieving the Holy Spirit. The scriptures which Paul penned above are the ones which showed the troubles he had in the flesh. He wanted to do good but he couldn't because in his flesh dwelt no good thing which is where the desire to sin resides. Notice in verse 20 it speaks about him doing what he does not want to do and when he does those things it is really not him doing it but the sin which dwells in him. Well here is a great truth which should be the comfort to all Christians. Your soul was cleansed by Christ's sacrifice on Calvary and the real you is in your soul essence. The sinful flesh battles against the sinless soul for control of the person but Paul is stating that the real us is the sinless soul and that the sinful flesh does not represent what happened to us at Calvary when our soul was made sinless and ready for heaven. The sin lies in our flesh and when the flesh overrides the soul, that is, when the Christians sins but it must be understood that sin does not affect our souls because they are forever cleansed by the blood of Christ and sin cannot remove Christ's salvation nor the Holy Spirit from the believer. In other words, the cleansed soul remains cleansed and can never be spotted by sin.

Here are some comparisons between Saint and Sinner:

The Saint can grieve the Holy Spirit. (Ephesians 4:30)  
The Sinner cannot grieve him because the Holy Spirit does not dwell in him.

The Saint can quench the Holy Spirit. (1 Thessalonians 5:19)  
The Sinner cannot quench him because the Holy Spirit does not dwell in him.

The Saints have been redeemed. (Revelation 5:9)  
The Sinner has not been redeemed. (Revelation 20:15)

The Saints have been declared not guilty. (Titus 3:7)  
The Sinners have been declared guilty. (Romans 3:19)

The Saints are promised a home in Heaven. (1 Peter 1:3-4)  
The Sinner has only a promise of eternal damnation. (Revelation 14:10-11)

The Saints are called children of God. (1 John 3:9-10)  
The Sinners are the children of the devil. (1 John 3:10)

The Saints are known by the Lord Jesus Christ. (John 10:3)  
The Sinners are not known by the Lord Jesus Christ. (Matthew 7:21-23)

The Saints do good works. (Ephesians 2:10)  
The Sinners do evil work. (Galatians 5:19)

The Saints are forgiven of all their sins. (1 John 2:12)  
The Sinners are never forgiven for their sins. (Revelation 21:8)

The Saints are loved by God. (1 John 4:10)  
The Sinners are hated by God. (Psalm 5:5)

These ten comparisons should give you ample evidence, and there is much more in Scripture, that there is a great difference between the Saint and sinner in Scripture. When Christians call themselves sinners, they are really defaming the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ. They are basically stating that the cross changed nothing in their life and they have remained in a state of sin except now they consider themselves “saved sinners” which is a total oxymoron. According to the Scriptures, you cannot be a sinner and a saint at the same time, either you are one or the other. As we have seen in this study, that the Christian received much more than just salvation but received a kingship as well. *And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. (Revelation 1:6)* The Lord Jesus Christ made the Christian much more than saved and when we reduce that position and call ourselves sinners, we are really denying what the Lord Jesus Christ did for us. We are kings, priests, called out assembly, God’s inheritance, Beulah, a city not forsaken, city of truth, the fold of Christ, temple of the living God, Israel of God, body of Christ, family of God, chosen, holy, royal, sons and daughters of God, bride of Christ, justified, washed, sanctified, transformed, redeemed, THE people of God, etc.

Now you must make up your mind, either believe the Bible or believe the warped teachings of man. *For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he: Eat and drink, saith he to thee; but his heart is not with thee. (Proverbs 23:7)* As Proverbs 23:7 states, whatever you think in your heart, that will define you. If you think like a sinner, you will act like a sinner. If you think like a Saint, you will act like a Saint. So let me ask the question I asked at the beginning.

### **Saint or Sinner – Which are You?**

## What Happened at the Cross?

by Dr. Ken Matto

(Mark 15:25 KJV) And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

Over the past few years I have been noticing a trend among many Christians and that is they have very little understanding of the sacrifice of Christ on Calvary. Today's Christian has been dumbed down to the reality of what had happened on Calvary. This is why so many Christians believe they can lose their salvation, or believe in a partial atonement or believe they must add works to maintain their salvation. I have also received e-mails from a person who claims that God forgives all manner of sin such as murderers, but will never forgive the sin of remarriage after divorce. After sending this person the verses which we are going to look at, he rejected them and just sent me an e-mail that I am teaching a false gospel. I had responded to him and asked him what would be his solution to that dilemma? Should remarried Christians get a second divorce in order to satisfy his belief? No response to that question. See my article on marriage and divorce at: [www.scionofzion.com/divremar.htm](http://www.scionofzion.com/divremar.htm)

Now it is true that the Bible does state specifically that if anybody marries after divorce and their spouse or the spouse of the one they are marrying are still alive, then they are entering into an adulterous marriage. We expect unbelievers not to care about being obedient to the Bible, but when Christians are shown that it is sin and then they proceed anyway, they will come under the chastisement of God and it will not be pleasant. The majority of churches are spiritually neutered and have dropped biblical obedience and have taken up the writings of men such as apostate Rick Warren and these plans or systems have replaced biblical teachings in many churches. This is why the understanding of the sacrifice of Christ has been placed at the bottom of the pile because self-esteem and other self-adulating studies have supplanted it.

Now it must be understood that receiving the grace of God in salvation through the Lord Jesus Christ in no way means a person has a license to sin. That accusation comes to us from those who believe in free will and those who believe they can lose their salvation. In their minds they are attempting to live a holy life to maintain their salvation but the reality is that we live a holy life because of the grace of God. To attempt to live a holy life for the purpose of maintaining salvation amounts to nothing more than a works gospel. Those who think they can add to what Christ did on Calvary must really check to see if they have been truly saved. The sacrifice of Christ was totally sufficient for every true believer.

### Calvary and Your Sin

When the Lord Jesus Christ died on Calvary and you became saved, what transpired concerning your sin?

The answer to this question is one which every Christian should know. (1 Pet 3:15 KJV) But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and *be* ready always to *give* an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear: Part of the hope that is with in us from becoming saved is to know what the relationship is to my

sins. If I believe that I can lose my salvation or that Christ only partially paid for my sins and then the rest are up to me to atone for, then I will walk around as those who proclaim that they are just a “sinner saved by grace.” If we still believe that we are nothing but saved sinners, then we have totally misunderstood the sacrifice of Christ. When we become saved, we go from sinner to Saint! Now we will see what the Bible teaches concerning your sins after salvation.

### **Old Testament**

(Psa 103:12 KJV) As **far** as the east is from the west, so **far hath he removed** our transgressions from us.

The word “far hath he removed “ in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “to be far or to be separate.” In the first part of this verse the word “far” is the same word. You can see that as separate or as far as the east is from the west, has He separated us from our sin. This means He just did not atone for our sins which would be a covering but the sacrifice was so complete that He removed our sins. This verse does not indicate that He left any behind!

(Isa 43:25 KJV) I, even I, am he that **blotteth out** thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

“Blotteth out” in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “wipe away or destroy.” In the case of written documents it carries with it the meaning of “erase.” So this verse is also teaching us that God Himself is the one who destroys or wipes away our sin and only the sacrifice of the Son of God is capable to do that.

(Jer 31:34 KJV) And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

“I will forgive” in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “to forgive or pardon.” This is definitely a grace term because this is repeated in the New Testament in the following verses:

(Heb 8:12 KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

(Heb 10:17 KJV) And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

Jeremiah 31:34, Hebrews 8:12, and Hebrews 10:17 all carry with them the same theme. When God forgives a person of their sins, He has elected to forget those sins and not only forget them, but to destroy them. Nowhere in Scripture is it written that God chooses to remember our sins thus causing a loss of salvation. When God removes our sins, He annihilates them. In other words, they can never be held against us.

(Col 2:13-14 KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14}

Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

**Col 2:13 (KJB)**

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

Dead - Lifeless or useless

Quickened - Made alive

Having Forgiven - Forgive, release, or pardon

All - Totally

Death is basically separation and Paul is reminding the Colossians that they were dead in sins and that meant they were separated from God plus they had not received the circumcision made without hands as spoken of in verse 11. (Col 2:11 KJV) In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: They were still subject to the fallen nature which was the sin-laden nature. Then as a result of God's salvation, God had taken His Elect and made them alive unto Him. We were made alive with Christ. (John 5:21 KJV) For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. The next part of this verse is of the utmost importance. Since Christ has made us alive, He has forgiven us all our trespasses. This means that every sin that any believer has committed, or will commit in the future has already been paid for. There is not one sin which is held to the account of any believer. Those who claim that a person can lose their salvation have no understanding of the fact that every single sin of the believer has been forgiven. If every sin has been forgiven, then what could possibly keep us out of Heaven? These same folks claim that our future sins could keep us out of Heaven. Let us ask a simple question. Where were you when Christ went to the cross? You were not even born yet which means ALL your sins were in the future. It also means that ALL of those sins have been paid for and this means your soul is completely clean, with not one blemish.

**Col 2:14 (KJB)**

Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

Blotting out - Wipe out or obliterate

Handwriting of ordinances - The crimes of the criminal written and placed at the location of execution

Contrary - Against or hostile to

Out of the way - Away out of the midst or middle

Paul continues the great emancipation of the believer. Christ has forgiven every trespass of the believer and here we are told that all our crimes, our sins, were completely obliterated. The hand writing of ordinances was the crime or crimes the prisoner was guilty of. The ordinances which the believer was guilty of was the violation of the law of God. We broke every law, even if we broke only one. (James 2:10 KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty of all. So here the law

became our enemy because it openly showed us that we were guilty of breaking God's law but when Christ went to the cross, He had fulfilled the demands of God's righteous law and because we were in Christ, being baptized unto His death, we were found not guilty of the violation of God's law. As Col. 2:14 puts it, Christ completely obliterated the charges against us, so never again will the believer ever have to come into judgment for any sins. The verse further states that Christ took those charges which were against us away from us, out of the midst, that is, the sins no longer prevent fellowship with God and with other Christians. It goes on further to state that He nailed it to His cross, which means the law is totally dead to us in the area of accusations and violations because Christ paid for every single violation of the law that the true believer would ever commit. There would never be even one violation of the law which could ever affect our salvation and our purity of our souls because of Christ's total effectual sacrifice.

### **Summary**

We have looked at verses both in the Old and New Testaments which teach us plainly that every sin the believer had committed or will commit has been paid for by Christ. They were not only paid for, but removed and destroyed. This means the soul of the believer is as if they never sinned. This is why Peter states in his first epistle the following: (1 Pet 1:4 KJV) To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, When one becomes saved, we have an inheritance in Heaven which is what? Reserved! Why? Because at the moment of salvation our sins are removed and we are ready for Heaven. In Heaven there is no sin and that is why God removed all our sins so our bodies go into the grave and our souls go to be with the Lord, because they are sinless. Those who believe they can lose their salvation or believe in a partial atonement theory are just not understanding what happened at Calvary. Churches need to get back to real Bible teaching and drop all this garbage like Alpha Courses, Beth Moore,

(<http://www.extremetheology.com/2010/03/beth-moores-dangerous-bible-twisting.html>), Rick Warren and anything else which takes us out of Scripture and into the minds of people. The problem which exists in the churches is that most pastors and elders are biblically illiterate and count on commentaries and systematic studies to hide their inadequacies.

## With Men Salvation is Impossible

By Dr. Ken Matto

Matthew 19:25-26 (KJV) When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved? {26} But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

Mark 10:26-27 (KJV) And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? {27} And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

Luke 18:26-27 (KJV) And they that heard it said, Who then can be saved? {27} And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.

The word “impossible” is found in these three verses: Matthew 19:26; Mark 10:27; Luke 18:27. It is the Greek word “adunatos” which is also translated “impossible” 3 times in the book of Hebrews: 6:4; 6:18; 11:6 It is translated “not possible” in Hebrews 10:4. It is translated “could not do” in Romans 8:3.

Hebrews 6:4 (KJV) For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

Hebrews 6:18 (KJV) That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us:

Hebrews 11:6 (KJV) But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

Romans 8:3 (KJV) For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:

I was contemplating the word “impossible” a while back. Then the Holy Spirit opened up my understanding wider on these verses. Those who hold to the Free Will belief system claim all you have to do is exercise your faith and believe and you will be saved. If that was the case, Jesus was in error because “then with men it would be possible” but the Bible states in 3 places that “with man it is impossible” but “with God salvation is possible.” This is not just another nail in the myth of free will but is equal to Jael’s Nail which took out Sisera (Judges 4:21).

Then Jesus tells them the reality of salvation in all three verses and the key to being saved. If man was left to himself, he would be unable to become saved. This is because man is spiritually dead and his entire life and understanding is tied to this earth. (*Eph 2:5 KJV*) *Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)* The word “dead” in the Greek is the word “nekrous” which means “dead or lifeless.”

The only way that a man can be saved, whether wealthy or poor, is through God who does the saving. If a rich man is one of God's Elect, even if he is a billionaire, it will not prevent him from becoming saved because God would be doing the saving. The unsaved man has no understanding of the Gospel and is unable to understand any aspect of it and that is why with man it is impossible because of their deadness. *(1 Cor 2:14 KJV) But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.* Only God can quicken or make a person alive by the Gospel and then comes the understanding. He does this by resurrecting the soul of the person He is saving and once that is done, then they can understand, believe, and exercise faith. The spiritually dead man can in no way raise himself up from being spiritually dead. It must be done by God just as He raised Lazarus (John 11) and the Son of the Widow of Nain (Luke 7:11-16) and Jairus's Daughter (Mark 5:22-43). God performs salvation first by making the person spiritually alive as it states in Ephesians 2:4-5: *Ephesians 2:4-5 (KJV) But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, {5} Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)* A spiritually dead man has no ability to quicken himself and that is why Jesus said with man it is "impossible" because only God can raise a person from being spiritually dead to spiritual life and save them. Man does not possess that power.

## How Does God View the Believer?

Now that we have become saved the Christian has a much different relationship with God. Before we were saved we were enemies of God because we were in the kingdom of Satan. Now that we have been transferred out of the kingdom of Satan, we have become a child of God and no longer are we at war with God instead we are children of God. *Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: (Romans 5:1, KJV)* The war is now over and we are peace with God through Christ.

Many times you will hear Christians say that "we are just sinners saved by grace" with a hint of false humility. Okay, I challenge them to find that saying in Scripture! I will give you a hint. You cannot find it! Why? It doesn't exist in Scripture. It has become one of those unbiblical sayings that sound oh so religious and humble. It is a very misleading statement because Christ did not die on the cross to make us sinners. He died to free us from the effects and penalty of sins. God has a special relationship with His children and He makes no bones about how He views us. The Scriptures give us beautiful descriptions of how God views us. I want to show the beautiful relationship which exists between God and His children.

There are many Christians who walk under a cloud of condemnation simply because many pastors do not understand our relationship to God "our" Father and pass that ignorance on to the sheep. My goal is to acclimate Christians to the Scriptures. Christians must rediscover the Bible without the folly of theology books telling them what we shall believe. This chapter is written to aid new Christians in their understanding about their relationship to God. I would like to look at one of the most significant chapters in Scripture dealing with "How God views His Children." We will discuss Ephesians chapter one and when we have completed this chapter, you may be surprised how God views you if you are a true child of God.

Many Christians are ignorant of how God views them. This is not a slanderous statement but a stark reality owing to the high rate of biblical illiteracy in the church and among individual Christians. In today's church, psychological teachings are usurping the teaching of pure Scripture. The next time you hear a sermon, listen carefully and you will hear much psychological dogma mixed with Scripture and presented to you as absolute truth and authority. The sad result is that many Christians do not know how wonderfully they stand with God because of their relationship to Christ. I feel sorry for those Christians who are told every Sunday that they are nothing but rotten sinners that should have gone to hell. This kind of teaching from the pulpit on a continual basis tends to tear believers down instead of building them up.

No Christian should fear God in the sense that He is a despotic ruler who waits for us to mess up so He could zap us. God is not a vengeful God toward His children. His wrath is reserved for the unbeliever on judgment day.

Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; {7} And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, {8} In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that

know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: {9} Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; {10} When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day. (2 Thessalonians 1:6-10, KJV)

I do not want to convey the mistaken notion that man is inherently good and deserves heaven but as I have already mentioned when we become saved, our relationship to God changes. We are no longer a sinner under Satan's authority but a Saint under God's authority.

If one reads the Scriptures carefully, especially in Genesis 3, we find that because of Adam and Eve's sin, the whole human race was sentenced to hell, yet, God in His mercy has chosen to save millions from hell. Why doesn't He save everyone? I cannot answer that and neither can anyone else. The fact remains that if God has saved you, you have a tremendous relationship with Him.

I will take some key words and phrases out of our Scripture passages to help focus our study but I ask that you read the entire chapter. When you come to the words we will study, you will have the definition and will gain a deeper insight of how God views His children.

### EPHESIANS 1

Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: (Ephesians 1:1, KJV)

The word "saints" may be translated "dedicated, set apart, sacred or holy." God views each Christian as one who is sacred and holy. This brings us into a special relationship with God. I have seen too many preachers and Christians who have been saved for many years espousing the belief that we are just sinners saved by grace. We need to start viewing ourselves as God views us. Let's do a brief analysis of that saying. The truth is that we were classified as sinners before salvation and this is how God viewed us. Upon salvation we received "positional holiness." If I am just a sinner saved by grace, then I would be in a confusing situation. If I am a sinner, then I am not saved by grace and if I am saved by grace, then I am not a sinner. The sinner in scripture is one who is unsaved and living in a state of perpetual sin. Remember we are approaching this from God's point of view as written in Scripture. "Sinner saved by grace" cannot be found anywhere in Scripture in reference to God's attitude toward His children.

Let me say here that all Christians do sin but because of Calvary all those sins have been erased and not held against us anymore. Christ's sacrifice paid for every sin that I ever committed or will commit in the future. If just one sin is held against me, then I am destined for hell and was never saved. This is why it is important to know the difference between being a sinner and one who has the ability to sin. The unbeliever is classified as a sinner since everything they do is sin. The Christian is called Saint, and the sooner we

start thinking like saints, instead of sinners, we will begin to see our Christian lives blossom.

The abundant life which Christ came to give us is not on the spiritual level of those who still view themselves as sinners, but those who realize that God has elevated their position to saint. If God views us as holy, it is blasphemy against the cross of Christ to continue to view ourselves as sinners. If you believe that line of thought, you are also believing that Christ's death on that cross was not sufficient to take away your sin. In essence that would mean sin and Satan are stronger than God. With thought patterns like these, no wonder many Christians have stopped growing. Always keep in mind it is what God says that sets truth, not what we feel or believe. Ponder this for a minute, if I am still a sinner then I should consider myself a "holy sinner." These two words are oil and water and no amount of homogenization will ever mix them. If you are saved, God no longer views you as a sinner, so why should you continue believing a statement right out of the pits of the camp of false humility.

Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: (Ephesians 1:1, KJV)

The word "faithful" may also be translated "a believer, a faithful one, trustworthy, or one on whom we may rely." Here God views His children as reliable. The Greek word "pistos" which is also translated: Believer in 1 Timothy 4:2; faithful in Hebrews 2:17; and true in 1 Timothy 3:1. Since God has given us the Holy Spirit, He has entrusted His spiritual riches to us, which is the gospel. God views us as responsible enough to deliver the gospel worldwide.

God has also given us the faith to believe in Him, because man with a sin permeated mind could never believe in God on his own. God implants in us the desire to be faithful so His work on earth could be completed to His glory. We may not feel faithful all the time, but again, what has God written in the Bible? Don't take my word for it, use a concordance and a King James Bible and do your own study on our focus words in this chapter.

We must never trust our feelings because many times we may not feel saved. Just because I do not feel saved does not mean I am not. If God says I'm saved, I'm saved! Matter settled! God does not work according to our feelings. The hymn we sing at Christmas which refers to only Christians is, "O Come All ye Faithful."

2 Timothy 2:2 states we shall commit the gospel to "faithful men." The word used here is "pistos." What God seems to be telling us is that He has empowered us through the Holy Spirit to take the true gospel to the ends of the earth. So God views you, YES YOU, as part of His reliable and responsible army of believers! Put this study down and start thanking Him, but pick it back up again because there is more to come.

Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. (Ephesians 1:2, KJV)

The Greek word "eirene" is translated "peace" throughout the New Testament except in three places. The first place is Acts 7:26 where it is rendered "one again" which carries the meaning of reunification of two which were separated. The second place is Acts 9:31 where it is rendered "rest" which carries the idea of a state of peace, tranquility with the inducement of a state of security. The third place is Acts 24:2 where it is rendered "quietness" which also carries with it the idea of a place of security and repose. The regular translation of "eirene" into peace carries with it the idea of inner peace resulting from forgiveness and a renewed relationship with God. *Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: (Romans 5:1, KJV)*

We see in this one word how God views the believer as being reunited with Him. Sin separated the whole human race from God but the cross of Christ has given reconciliation to every believer. The word also reveals we have a state of security. God views the believer as being secure in Him no matter what the outward circumstances are. *For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. (Colossians 3:3, KJV)* God gives His children quietness and sweet repose. Remember the pastoral promise in Psalm 23:2, *"He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters."* God gives inward peace in an age of chaos.

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: (Ephesians 1:3, KJV)

Every spiritual need the believer has on earth was already supplied. The word "blessing" is the Greek word "eulogia" which means "good speaking, praise." God has given His praises to those in Christ Jesus. We literally have a divine commendation as we read in Romans 2:29, *"But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God."* This verse speaks of the believer as being praised by God because of our relationship to His Son. This is not to imply that God worships man because that would be outright blasphemy. God was well-pleased with Christ and because of Christ, He is well-pleased with the Christian. Nowhere in the Bible do we find that God is pleased with the sinner.

Remember we are beginning to see how God views the believer and we must do this from a biblical perspective. Program your mind to think biblically and you will begin to think as God thinks, to the extent that a human is able to do so.

According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4, KJV)

The word "chosen" comes from the Greek word "eklegomai" which means to "select, choose, elect." Here we read that God has literally hand-picked every Christian. *"All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out." (John 6:37, KJV)* Man did not choose God but God chose man. *"But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God." (John 1:12-13, KJV)* This may be borne out with many other Scriptures. For a Christian to proclaim "I have accepted the Lord" is a misnomer, since it is God who accepted us, the reprobate sinner. When we begin to realize that it was God

who saved us, and it was not by our own action, we will have a better appreciation of our salvation, since we realize we had no part in it.

When we know that God reached down and chose the Christian, we will have more desire to serve Him in whatever capacity He chooses. The normal teaching is that God waits for the sinner to accept or reject Christ. This will never occur since man is spiritually dead (Eph. 2:1-3). If a person is dead, how is it possible to hear, never mind respond? We respond because God opens our spiritual ears, making us aware we are sinners and that we need a savior, it is none of man's doing. God has chosen you to be His child. What will you do with the life He has given you?

According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4, KJV)

The same root word in the Greek is used for both "saint" and "holy." If God says we are holy, how can we just be sinners?

According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4, KJV)

The words "without blame" may be translated "without blemish of sin, disgrace, or unblameable." This phrase shows how unscriptural the phrase "sinner saved by grace" is when describing the Christian, because God is stating He views us as having no blemish of sin. Because of Christ, God sees us as pure, without sin, even though that is not how we see ourselves. Remember, it is not our pre-programmed thoughts that count but it is the Bible which is the final authority. Two good commentaries on this verse are found in Romans 8:33 & Revelation 14:5:

Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. (Romans 8:33, KJV)

These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, being the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb. {5} And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God. (Revelation 14:4-5, KJV)

God is the one who declares the Christian to be free of sin, and we better start analyzing the pet sayings we hear. God has declared His children sinless because of Christ. Let me emphasize because we sin after salvation, God does not view us as sinners. I challenge anyone to show me in the Bible where God calls redeemed saints "sinners saved by grace." If we were not declared sinless, we would be on our way to Hell, not Heaven, because it takes only one sin to send us there.

Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, (Ephesians 1:5, KJV)

The word predestinated may also be translated "predetermined, foreordain, or decree beforehand". This one word reveals to us that we were already in God's plan eons ago.

God chose to save you, and He predetermined your life as He did for Jeremiah, Paul, and John the Baptist:

Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations. (Jeremiah 1:5, KJV)

But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, (Galatians 1:15, KJV)

But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. {14} And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. {15} For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. {16} And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. {17} And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. (Luke 1:13-17, KJV)

This is where election comes in. Because of Adam's sin the whole human race was condemned to hell, yet God in His mercy predestined millions to be saved. Why He doesn't save everyone is unknown to us but God's holiness must be vindicated since it was man's free will in Eden which caused all that sin and suffering throughout the ages. Thank God He saves us without our consent, or else none would become saved because we love our sins more than anything.

And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. (John 3:19, KJV)

As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: {11} There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. (Romans 3:10-11, KJV)

If you are a Christian, then God has predestinated you for Heaven, so let us not argue doctrine and just thank Him. We have just seen that predestination is a doctrine of Scripture not an invention of John Calvin.

Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, (Ephesians 1:5, KJV)

When God saves us he transfers us from the family of Satan to the family of God and gives us full rights as if we were natural children. He makes us an heir of all things and gives us His family name, "Christian." The name "Christian" carries with it the meaning of "being attached to or an adherent of Christ."

God shows us we are His children and are in His family with permission to call Him "Father." This means He expects us to pray and speak with Him, to love and understand Him. Since we are His children, we should read His word with joy because it is like

receiving a letter from home. Many believers do not understand their relationship between God and themselves. When Christians study the Bible more intently, they will see God's intentions toward them are not hostile but loving.

For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. (Jeremiah 29:11, KJV)

To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. (Ephesians 1:6, KJV)

The "beloved" in view is the Lord Jesus Christ. The word we are focusing on is "accepted," which may also be translated "to make lovely, endue with special honor, or to bestow grace upon." No matter how we feel we are accepted by Christ because of His sacrifice. Isn't it marvelous how God made us accepted and never to be rejected? When the world rejects us for any reason, we know that we may come to Christ who will never reject us. (Hebrews 13:5) Since we are accepted we may come with confidence to the throne of grace (Hebrews 4:16) and speak whatever is on our heart. The unsaved cannot do this because they are not accepted. Let us remember that it is with God we are going to spend eternity, so if the world rejects us, so what, because this world is fleeting away but the believers life is ready to flourish. So have courage because you are accepted!

In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; (Ephesians 1:7, KJV)

“Redemption” is another glorious word in this spiritual catalog. Redemption may also be translated "ransom in full, a buying back, deliverance from guilt and punishment from sin." Never will a believer have to stand in judgment for their sin because the work of Christ was complete on our behalf. We were totally redeemed from all sin and guilt. This applies to past, present, and future because when Christ went to the cross all your sins were in the future. Our redemption was secured by God Himself plus He declares us sinless. It would do good to read Romans 8:33 again. So let the accusers accuse, the mockers mock, the gossipers gossip, because God knows who His children are and once He has declared them redeemed, it is forever.

The word "forgiveness" may also be translated "freedom, pardon, or release from sin." This word states the Christian has absolute pardon from all their sin. Since we have been totally forgiven, we are eternally secure because God sees us as sinless. Being in Christ guarantees our place in Heaven. We are totally free from all spiritual penalties owing to sin. However, there may be physical penalties for sin, such as AIDS for sexual sins or liver disease from drinking and others which we previously saw. You can take comfort that even though our flesh is corrupting, the inner man is being renewed daily. (2 Corinthians 4:16) This is why the believer radiates an inner joy because all the baggage of sin has been removed permanently and figuratively cast behind God's back:

Behold, for peace I had great bitterness: but thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for thou hast cast all my sins behind thy back. (Isaiah 38:17, KJV)

This is why the believer is free to do the work of the Lord because sin no longer impedes the believer. However, if there is a besetting sin in a believer's life, this may cause an impediment. A besetting sin will definitely be a hindrance to usefulness in God's kingdom. Just because someone has been placed on the shelf by God does not take away from the fact they are totally forgiven. Total forgiveness does not justify a believer for continuing in the life of sin, he/she must mortify the deeds of the flesh (Romans 8:13) and it will not be easy.

In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: (Ephesians 1:11, KJV)

The word "inheritance" may also be translated "to allot, to obtain, possess." The Christian is guaranteed to inherit heaven and all the spiritual blessings as we previously discovered. If our hope was only in this world, I would definitely be depressed but because God is viewing us as His children, He has given us the greatest inheritance that we could ever ask for or dream of, HIMSELF! Genesis 15:1 states:

After these things the word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. (Genesis 15:1, KJV)

The word "reward" may also be translated "pay or wages." The believer's wages will actually be God Himself! Talk about an inheritance which is beyond comprehension. Compare these wages to the wages of sin in Romans 6:23:

For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23, KJV)

We have looked at only eight verses and we saw the marvelous way which God views His children and how He has provided for us. No other group in the world is going to experience what you and I will. Don't just stop at these verses, as you grow in your biblical knowledge you will be able to analyze all the promises of God, and as you do, you will become better acquainted with God. Before we leave this study I wish to offer some Scriptures from both the Old and New Testaments furthering our insight on how God views His redeemed children.

#### God will bless the work of our hands

And the LORD thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the LORD will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: (Deuteronomy 30:9, KJV)

#### Lot of God's Inheritance

For the LORD'S portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance. (Deuteronomy 32:9, KJV)

### The Holy Hill

A Psalm of David. LORD, who shall abide in thy tabernacle? who shall dwell in thy holy hill? (Psalm 15:1, KJV)

### The Lord Preserves His People

For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off. (Psalm 37:28, KJV)

### The Congregation of the Lord's Poor

O deliver not the soul of thy turtledove unto the multitude of the wicked: forget not the congregation of thy poor for ever. (Psalm 74:19, KJV)

### The Assembly of the Saints

God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them that are about him. (Psalm 89:7, KJV)

### The Assembly of the Upright

Praise ye the LORD. I will praise the LORD with my whole heart, in the assembly of the upright, and in the congregation. (Psalm 111:1, KJV)

### God Protects His People

A Song of degrees. They that trust in the LORD shall be as mount Zion, which cannot be removed, but abideth for ever. {2} As the mountains are round about Jerusalem, so the LORD is round about his people from henceforth even for ever. (Psalm 125:1-2, KJV)

### The Congregation of the Saints

Praise ye the LORD. Sing unto the LORD a new song, and his praise in the congregation of saints. (Psalm 149:1, KJV)

### The Mountain of the Lord's House

And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. (Isaiah 2:2, KJV)

### God will gently shepherd us

He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young. (Isaiah 40:11, KJV)

### We are His witnesses in the world

Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. (Isaiah 43:10, KJV)

### The Branch of God's Planting

Thy people also shall be all righteous: they shall inherit the land for ever, the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified. (Isaiah 60:21, KJV)

### Beulah

Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married. (Isaiah 62:4, KJV)

### Sought Out, A City not Forsaken

And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD: and thou shalt be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken. (Isaiah 62:12, KJV)

### A Pleasant Portion

Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness. (Jeremiah 12:10, KJV)

### God Loves His Children Eternally

The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee. (Jeremiah 31:3, KJV)

### The Place of God's Throne

And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places. (Ezekiel 43:7, KJV)

### The City of Truth, the Mountain of the Lord, and the Holy Mountain

Thus saith the LORD; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the LORD of hosts the holy mountain. (Zechariah 8:3, KJV)

### A Pearl of Great Price

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: {46} Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. (Matthew 13:45-46, KJV)

### The Vineyard

They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. (Matthew 21:41, KJV)

### Resurrection Hope

And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. {40} And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:39-40, KJV)

### The Fold of Christ

And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. (John 10:16, KJV)

### The Church of God

Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. (Acts 20:28, KJV)

### God is on our Side

What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us? (Romans 8:31, KJV)

### God is our Justifier

Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. (Romans 8:33, KJV)

### We are God's Tilled Field

For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. (1 Corinthians 3:9, KJV)

### We are the Temple of the Living God

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. (2 Corinthians 6:16, KJV)

### The Israel of God

And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God. (Galatians 6:16, KJV)

### The Body of Christ

And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, {23} Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all. (Ephesians 1:22-23, KJV)

### God sees us reigning in Heaven already

And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: (Ephesians 2:6, KJV)

### We are His Workmanship

For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (Ephesians 2:10, KJV)

### The Family of Heaven and Earth

Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, (Ephesians 3:15, KJV)

### We are reconciled unto God

And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled (Colossians 1:21, KJV)

### Church of the Living God & Pillar and Ground of Truth

But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. (1 Timothy 3:15, KJV)

### City of the Living God & Mount Zion

But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, (Hebrews 12:22, KJV)

### Church of the Firstborn

To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, (Hebrews 12:23, KJV)

### We have a Reserved Inheritance

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, {4} To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, (1 Peter 1:3-4, KJV)

### Chosen, Holy, and Royal People

But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: (1 Peter 2:9, KJV)

### The Flock of God

Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; (1 Peter 5:2, KJV)

### The Sons/Daughters of the Living God

Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is. (1 John 3:2, KJV)

### The Heavenly Jerusalem

Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. (Revelation 3:12, KJV)

### The Holy City

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. (Revelation 21:2, KJV)

### The Bride of Christ

And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. (Revelation 21:9, KJV)

**Repentance: The Requirement for**  
**or**  
**the Results of Salvation!**

By Dr. Ken Matto

(1 Ki 8:47 KJV) Yet if they shall bethink themselves in the land whither they were carried captives, **and repent**, and make supplication unto thee in the land of them that carried them captives, saying, We have sinned, and have done perversely, we have committed wickedness;

(Jonah 3:9 KJV) Who can tell if God will turn and **repent**, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

(Mat 3:2 KJV) And saying, **Repent ye**: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

(Mat 9:13 KJV) But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners **to repentance**.

(Mat 21:29 KJV) He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he **repented**, and went.

(Rom 11:29 KJV) For the gifts and calling of God are without **repentance**.

When doing a study on a word like "repent" it is necessary to understand what that word means. In the Bible one English word can be translated out of several Hebrew and/or Greek words. That is the case with the biblical word "repent" and it behooves us to understand the word so we may be able to grasp the true biblical meaning. In other words, we want to make sure we are using the word the way God meant it to be used.

Let us look briefly at the words for "repent" used in the above verses.

1 Kings 8:47 - The Hebrew Word is "shawb" which means to turn back.

Jonah 3:9 - The Hebrew Word is "nawkham" which carries with the idea of sighing, or sorrow or pity.

Matthew 3:2 - The Greek word is "metanoeo" means "to change one's mind or be converted."

Matthew 9:13 - The Greek word is "metanoia" which means "a change of mind or a turning about."

Matthew 21:29 - The Greek word is "metamelomai" which means "regret, feel sorry for."

Romans 11:29 - The Greek word is "ametameletos" which means "not to be taken back or regretted."

If you notice every Greek word undergirding the English word repentance has in it the preposition "meta." According to Vine's the root word "meta" really means mid or middle and meta goes with whatever case it is attached to. It can mean "with, after, behind or among." When used with the words above it brings to the surface a meaning of change and that is the focus of this study. The major question involved with repentance is, does man effect the change or is he changed as a result of salvation?

We have all heard famous evangelists, when giving their invitation, call for repentance by the seeker. Billy Graham makes repentance the first on his list of requirements for salvation but he is not the only one, many preachers seem to make it part of their list when doing an invitation. Is it wrong to call for repentance? The answer is no but in the case of asking a person to repent before salvation, it reverses the order. When repentance is called for prior to salvation, it is classified as a work **for** salvation. When repentance takes place after salvation it is a result **of** salvation. A vast difference!

One good example in Scripture which shows the correct order that salvation comes before repentance is the Thessalonians. Paul is commending them for their tremendous growth in the gospel and their outward showing of their true salvation by doing one of the most dangerous works of all, especially in ancient times.

(1 Th 1:4 KJV) Knowing, brethren beloved, **your election of God.**

(1 Th 1:9 KJV) For they themselves show of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye **turned to God from idols** to serve the living and true God;

Notice the order here. Paul speaks that they are elect of God and as a result the true works follow, namely, they turned from idols to God. I am not speaking in terms of order of verses but in terms of which came first. Salvation or repentance (the turning around or change of mind)? The next question which must be answered is, when was salvation initiated and then imputed to the individual?

The answer to this question is quite simple in that God gives five verses attesting to the fact that salvation comes first. How first does it come? How about from before the foundation of the world! If a person had to repent before they received salvation, this means they would have had to repent before they were created.

(Mat 25:34 KJV) Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom **prepared for you from the foundation of the world:**

(Eph 1:4 KJV) According as **he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world**, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

(Heb 4:3 KJV) For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: **although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.**

(Rev 13:8 KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, **whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.**

(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, **whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world**, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

These five verses teach us some forthright principles concerning the salvation of the Elect of God. Let's summarize them: The Kingdom was prepared, we were chosen, the works of Christ, and we were written in the Lamb's Book of Life all from the foundation of the world. With God revealing this aspect of His salvation program, those who teach repentance as a pre-condition or requirement for salvation do err greatly as they are placing an unreachable goal on an unbeliever. So then let us raise another question. If God then saves first, then how does one repent since it is a biblical principle. The answer to that question is found in 2 Timothy 2:23-25:

(2 Tim 2:23-25 KJV) But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes. {24} And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, {25} In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; **if God peradventure will give them repentance** to the acknowledging of the truth;

Here in no ambiguous terms God tells us that He is the one who grants repentance and man does not have the ability to repent unless salvation takes place first. Therefore repentance is a result of salvation not a requirement. When you were an unbeliever, how much concern did you have for the things of God? When you sinned, were you worried about the consequences you would face or did you believe there were any?

If we are honest we will answer by saying that we did not concern ourselves with the things of God and didn't worry about the consequences. Why is that? I believe God gives us an understanding in two verses of why the unregenerate mind cannot comprehend the things of God:

(2 Cor 4:4 KJV) In whom the god of this world hath **blinded the minds** of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

(Jer 17:9 KJV) The **heart is deceitful** above all things, and **desperately wicked**: who can know it?

[Note: Psychologists and Psychiatrists think they know the mind] The reason people cannot repent of their own "free will" is because their minds are blinded, deceitful, and desperately wicked. If you notice in the Scriptures, God speaks to believers about repenting of evil deeds and sins, but never unbelievers. Instead, he warns and judges them. As you go through the New Testament, note how many admonitions there are for Godly and holy living. Are these admonitions aimed at the unbeliever or believer? Only the believer.

Can an unbeliever repent of a sin in their life? Yes, they can, **but** that repentance is of a different nature. Let's say a person is a drunk for 10 years and then goes into a rehabilitation program at a hospital and never drinks again. Have they had repentance unto salvation or a moral repentance? It is a moral repentance which is good for society in that the sober person will no longer be a danger on the highway. Has this repentance won any favor with God in fulfilling a requirement for salvation? The answer is no, because that person is still unregenerate which means they are still under the wrath of God and even though they are sober now, they will still stand before God and give

account for those 10 years of drunkenness. Too many times, Christians make the mistake of believing that a moral repentance is a repentance from salvation. The two are totally different. If the person who makes a moral repentance is being given assurance they are in good standing before God because of **their** actions, they are being lied to and the person assuring them is guilty of lying.

We must realize that those who are not saved are under the condemnation of God, no matter what they do in the physical realm or how exemplary they live their lives. The Scripture is clear on this in two ways: Even if a person is good, they still have the wrath of God abiding on them and if they do not have the Holy Spirit, then they are not a child of God. It is the Holy Spirit who indwells us that makes us sensitive to sin and disobedience in our lives. As a Christian, have you ever sinned and felt very convicted about it? That was not your dead conscience, that was the fact you grieved the Holy Spirit. Your dead conscience couldn't care less what you do although God in His mercy has not allowed sin to develop to its fullest potential or else the human race would have destroyed itself.

(John 3:36 KJV) He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: **and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**

(Rom 8:8-9 KJV) So then they that are **in the flesh cannot please God.** {9} But ye are **not** in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. **Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.**

In ending this study let's take a look at some salvation experiences from the Bible and see what came first, salvation or repentance?

(Acts 13:47-48 KJV) For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. {48} And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as **were ordained to eternal life believed.**

(Acts 17:11-12 KJV) These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they **received the word** with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so. {12} **Therefore many of them believed;** also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men, not a few.

(Acts 26:13-18 KJV) At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me. {14} And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. {15} **And I said, Who art thou, Lord?** And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. {16} But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; {17} Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, {18} To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto

God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

**I saved the best for last!**

(Luke 19:1-10 KJV) And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho. {2} And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. {3} And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. {4} And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. {5} And when Jesus came to the place, **he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house.** {6} And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. {7} And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. {8} **And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.** {9} **And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.** {10} **For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.**

Acts 13:47-48 - They Believed

Acts 17:11-12 - Received the Word and Believed

Acts 26:13 -18 - Saul asked "Who art thou Lord?"

Let's take a look at Zacchaeus for a minute. Jesus saw Zacchaeus and told him that he must abide at his house. Notice what happened next, Zacchaeus was convicted of his thievery and pledged to return to those he stole from 4 fold and that he was going to give half of his goods to the poor. Then Jesus makes a major statement, "**This day is salvation come to this house...**" Was Jesus saying that because of the conviction of Zacchaeus, he was saved by the act of confession and restitution? To understand this statement, we must see what this statement points to and it brings us right to the book of James. Let's look at James 2:

(James 2:17-18 KJV) Even so **faith, if it hath not works, is dead,** being alone. {18}

Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and **I will show thee my faith by my works.**

Jesus is showing us that genuine salvation contains works, confession, and repentance. It is interesting to note that Jesus seeks and saves, not man. In these four examples (and there are others in Scripture) before someone believed, did they repent? No, repentance came as a result of salvation not as a prerequisite. We must teach this biblical truth in the way God gave it to us or else we will be liars.

The chronology is:

1. Salvation
2. Repentance
3. Spiritual Warfare

The Christian life always begins with Salvation and every other element is built on that. We must discern between transformational and moral repentance. When we understand

the distinction, our gospel understanding will grow rapidly because we will begin to see everything from God's point of view. Salvation was initiated before the foundation of the world and at sometime in our life, because God named us, imputes that salvation to us and we become a child of God:

(John 6:39 KJV) And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me **I should lose nothing**, but should raise it up again at the last day.

## Works n' Faith

by Dr. Ken Matto

One of the most misused and misunderstood portions of Scripture is James 2:14-26. It is misused by those who claim you must do works to gain salvation. These passages of Scripture when looked at carefully and in the right context of the rest of the Bible, shows us that faith and works complement each other. As a matter of fact, both faith and works are a gift from God.

(Eph 2:10 KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus **unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.**

(Rom 12:3 KJV) For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; **but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.**

When people teach that we must do any type of work to gain salvation they are teaching in error. The following study should help clear up the works versus faith misunderstanding.

### James 2:14-26

(James 2:14-26 KJV) {14} What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

As we study this verse, 2 parts of this verse must be brought to light:

- 1.) "say he hath faith" = The verse is not saying he has it but that he says he has it. It is very important to know the difference between the two.
- 2.) The second part which must be examined is "can faith save him?" In the Greek the word "the" is present which allows this part of the verse to be translated "Can that faith save him?" This is a definite article resulting in asking the question, "Can a faith without substance (not producing works) save a person? In other words, if there is no evidence of your faith, you don't have any, which means you are still unsaved.

{15} If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, {16} And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

Let us examine the last phrase, "what doth it profit?" The principle of verse 14 is being reiterated here. If a person comes to you for anything, food and clothing represent the principle, and you refuse them, what does it profit you? It profits nothing because their faith is non-existent. Faith is the foundation we build our works on. Out of a true faith comes true works, this is how faith is demonstrated.

{17} Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

Here is the pivotal verse in this section. Faith is dead without works because works is the proof of your faith. (Eph 2:10 KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. God has

already ordained our good works and if there are no good works, then we are unsaved. What is the only good work a Christian can do? It is putting themselves on the line sending forth the gospel which is the primary calling of all true believers.

Notice the verse speaks that faith is dead without works. The word "dead" is the word "nekros" the same word that God uses to describe the pre-salvific Christian. The word carries with it the meaning of "useless, lifeless, and dead." Then God adds the word "alone," which carries the meaning of being alone or isolated." God is then declaring that if your faith has no action, you have no faith, thus you have no salvation. True good works are an evidence of your salvation.

**{18}** Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: show me thy faith without thy works, and I will show thee my faith by my works.

Some may have separated works and faith and made them two distinctives of the Christian Faith. However, the two cannot be separated as works spring out of faith, not faith out of works. Works is never a foundation. Faith is a gift from God while works is our required "reasonable service" (Romans 12:1-2). Your works bring forth the evidence you are saved. Evidence of salvation is not speaking in tongues rather it is the working out (not for) of your own salvation as stated in (Phil 2:12 KJV) Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

Notice the challenge in this verse to show the faith without works. Is faith visible by itself? The answer of course is no! Is faith visible when it is being exercised by works? The answer is yes! This is why the Scripture declares that we can show our faith by works. Works is faith in action!!!!

**{19}** Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.

Here is an indictment against the trite person who proclaims "Oh Yes, I believe in God." There are many who say they believe in God and the Bible puts that on par with "Big deal the demons believe too." These people have no works, in the realm of Christianity, belief is dead if it is alone. At least the demons have some sense in that they tremble, people shake their fist at God. I guess because the demons who rebelled with Satan already saw God in His majesty and know what's coming. Many people say there is no God, even the devils aren't that stupid!

**{20}** But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

The word vain here is "Empty or Worthless." Dead is "nekros" remember "lifeless and useless." Do any of these words describe the gospel? The answer is no. Throughout this study we are seeing some common words describe faith without works, "useless. lifeless, empty, worthless."

**{21}** Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

Here is one of those verses that the "work for salvation" crowd uses as their crowning verse. They pull out "justified by works" and leave it there. It is a pity that they ignore the second half of this verse. This entire verse shows us that the faith of Abraham was extremely alive and active. His trust in God was so mighty that he went as far as a willingness to sacrifice his own son on God's orders. This verse does not contradict Romans 3:28 & 4:3, rather it combines the principles of both verses in showing us what a living faith is.

{22} Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

The perfect or mature Christian life is a life of works in conformity to our faith and a life of faith in conformity to works. In other words, they complement each other. If I may make an illustration: It is like one who puts on a glove, the hand is the faith and the glove is the works. The glove is lifeless and limp unless there is a hand in it. On the other hand (no pun intended) the hand is works and the glove is faith. In other words, they are a perfect match. Next time you listen to a missionary, think of these verses and you will have a live demonstration of how works and faith go hand in hand.

{23} And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

This part of Scripture goes back to Genesis 15:5 where God promised Abraham his seed would be as the stars in number and he believed God. Notice how the word friend shows up, remember what the Lord Jesus called all His true believers in John 15:14-15? "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. {15} Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you." Not only does the believer inherit the faith of Abraham, they inherit the right to call the Lord Jesus "Friend." Therefore, since we have inherited those things, we have also inherited the ability to do great works for God in concert with our faith.

{24} Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

Back in verse 14, James asks the question "can a dead faith save anyone?" The answer is found in this verse because no one is saved by any type of intellectual belief which lacks appropriate actions. Saving faith is more than giving mental assent to a doctrine.

{25} Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

Rahab was justified because she heard about the God of the spies and believed the story. She had faith to hide the spies and then send them off in a different direction. It is necessary to note that both Abraham and Rahab were justified in the same manner. Their works were in concert with their faith. "Likewise" may also be translated 'In like manner.'

**{26}** For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

Here is the summary of the whole study - **WORKS WITHOUT FAITH OR FAITH WITHOUT WORKS IS DEAD**. This is the great balance in the Christian walk. Faith and works must be in concert as one without the other is dead. If you have ever gone to a funeral, when you saw the body in the casket, what you saw was faith without works. That is the essence of James 2:14-26 - **WORKS MUST COMPLEMENT OUR FAITH** not justification by works.

## Work of Faith

By Dr. Ken Matto

(1 Th 1:3 KJV) Remembering without ceasing your **work of faith**, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;

(ergou thV pistewV) - work of faith

(2 Th 1:11 KJV) Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of *this* calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of *his* goodness, and the **work of faith** with power:

(ergon pistewV) - work of faith

These verses have nothing whatsoever to do with earning salvation by a “work of faith.” The Bible is merely stating that Paul is remembering the works of faith that the Thessalonians have done. Notice the phrase in 1 Thess. 1:3, “your work of faith” and in 2 Thess 1:11, “we pray always for you” and “count you.” Would Paul pray that God would find unbelievers worthy of their callings? Of course not, Paul saw unbelievers as a mission field.

In other words, the works in view here are being done by those who are already saved because all works that the believer does is of faith. In fact, the words in the Greek are in the Genitive case which is the case of possession. So the work being done is from faith because faith is possessing the works being done. These are not works being done by an unsaved person.

(Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Faith is given to the believer as a fruit of the Holy Spirit upon salvation. Faith is a noun which means it is a person, place, or thing. The verb is translated “believe” which makes it a work. So when one becomes saved, they receive faith and when they exercise that faith by believing, they are then working works of faith.

(Eph 2:10 KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

Ephesians 2:10 makes it clear that the Christian is to do good works because we were created in Christ Jesus for those works. If we were not to do good works then God would take us to glory immediately after salvation. The Christian remains on earth after salvation to do those good works which consist of building the Kingdom of God.

(Heb 6:10 KJV) For God *is* not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

Hebrews 6:10 reminds the believer that God will never forget their “work and labour of love.” Are the works in view that of working to seek salvation or are they post-salvation works? The answer is obvious that these are post-salvation works.

So the phrase “work of faith” found in the Thessalonian verses speak about a saved person who is doing works for the Kingdom of God and not to get into the Kingdom of God.

## **What is a Christian?**

There are many Christians who really do not know who they are or what they are. They know they are on their way to Heaven but have no clue of their standing before God because of Calvary.

### **A Christian is Born Again**

(1 Pet 1:23 KJV) Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

(Eph 2:6 KJV) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

### **A Christian Is Not A Sinner**

(1 John 3:9 KJV) Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

(Heb 7:26 KJV) For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

(Isa 43:25 KJV) I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

1. A Christian sins but is never referred to as a sinner in Scripture.
2. A Christian has every sin removed not just covered (Colossians 2:13-14)
3. A Christian is totally cleansed of all sin and readied for heaven. (1 Pet.1:4)

### **A Christian is Redeemed**

(Rev 5:9 KJV) And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

### **A Christian is Qualified for Ministry**

(Psa 50:16-17 KJV) But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth? {17} Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest my words behind thee.

(1 Tim 1:12 KJV) And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry;

### **A Christian is a Spiritually Gifted Individual**

1. 1 Corinthians 12:7-11
2. Romans 12:5-8
3. Ephesians 4:11-12

### **A Christian is a Servant**

(Luke 17:10 KJV) So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

**A Christian is a Sacrifice**

(Rom 12:1 KJV) I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

**A Christian is Transformed not Reformed**

(Rom 12:2 KJV) And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

An example of Reformed - Luke 11:24-26

**A Christian is a Contender**

(Jude 1:3 KJV) Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

**A Christian is an Ambassador**

(Eph 6:20 KJV) For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

## **160 Reasons Jesus Christ is Almighty God**

By Thomas Golda

Only because Jesus Christ is Almighty God do we have reassurance that He can save His elect from eternal damnation and eternal torment.

1. Jesus IS the visible image of the Invisible God - Colossians 1:15, II Corinthians 4:4...to see Jesus is to see the Invisible God - Mankind was created IN the image of God - Genesis 1:26...Jesus IS the image of God. To see Jesus is to see the Invisible God in the flesh.

2. Jesus was conceived by God - Luke 1:35, Matthew 1:20. Since Mary was his earthly mother, that makes Jesus fully human..since God was His physical Father, since Jesus did not have an earthly father, that makes Jesus fully God. He was fully man and fully God. The Great Godman.

3. To see Jesus' face is to see the glory of God - II Corinthians 4:6

4. Jesus "being in the form of God" makes Him God - Philippians 2:6

5. Jesus being the brightness of the Father's glory - Hebrews 1:3

6. Jesus is the exact image of the Father's Person - Hebrews 1:3

7. That is why to "see Jesus" is to "see the Father" - John 14:9, John 12:45

8. That is why Jesus said He and His Father are one - John 10:30

9. Jesus is IN the bosom of the Father - John 1:18. Not "on" the bosom"...not "near" the bosom...IN the bosom...He is in the center of the Father. They are "one"

10. He is called EVERLASTING Father - Isaiah 9:6

11. Jesus deserves the SAME honour as the Father - John 5:23

12. Jesus was WORSHIPPED - Matthew 2:11, Matthew 9:12, Matthew 14:33, Matthew 28:9, Luke 24:52...Since only God is to be worshipped - Matthew 4:10..that means Jesus is God.

13. Even angels WORSHIP Jesus - Hebrews 1:6

14. Heaven falls down before the Lamb - Revelation 5:8

15. Jesus Created ALL things - Colossians 1:16, Hebrews 1:2, John 1:3, Ephesians 3:9 ....God created all things - Acts 14:15, Isaiah 45:18, Isaiah 44:24, Isaiah 42:5. Jesus is God

16. Jesus also made the world - John 1:10. Jesus is God - Isaiah 44:18

17. Jesus created all things for HIMSELF - Colossians 1:16, Proverbs 16:4(Jesus is God)
18. By Jesus all things consist - Colossians 1:17
19. Jesus upholds all things - Hebrews 1:3
20. Jesus is before all things - Colossians 1:17
21. Jesus rules heaven and earth - Matthew 28:18. Jesus is God - II Chronicles 29:11
22. Jesus is Lord of the Sabbath - Mark 2:28, Luke 6:5
23. Jesus called Himself the Great "I AM" - John 8:58, John 8:24...a quote from Exodus 3:14
24. In the body of Jesus dwells the fullness of the Godhead - Colossians 2:9
25. The Father, Son and Holy Ghost are THREE and they are ONE - I John 5:7
26. And this is all why Jesus is EQUAL WITH GOD - Philippians 2:6
27. Jesus was "God manifest in the flesh" - I Timothy 3:16
28. God was in Christ - Galatians 3:17, II Corinthians 5:19
29. Jesus is the Power of God and the Wisdom of God - I Corinthians 1:24
30. Jesus "only" hath immortality - I Timothy 6:16
31. Jesus is Lord of the living and the dead - Romans 14:9
32. Jesus is called the Saviour - Luke 2:11, Titus 1:4, Titus 2:13, Titus 3:3, II Peter 1:1, II Peter 1:11, II Peter 2:20, II Peter 3:18, I John 4:14
33. Only Jehovah God alone is the Saviour - Isaiah 43:11, Isaiah 45:15 , Hosea 13:4, I Timothy 2:2, Jude 1:25...that means Jesus is God.
34. Jesus ALONE is the Great Judge - John 5:22. The Judge is God - Hebrews 12:23, Revelation 18:8, Hebrews 13:4, Romans 2:3,5 - Jesus is God. All the verses in the Bible that talk about God being the Judge refer to Jesus, since He alone judges. The Father judges no man - John 5:22.
35. Jesus has the keys of hell and of death - Revelation 1:18. The one that can cast into hell is to be FEARED - Matthew 10:28, Luke 12:5 Only God is to be feared - Rev 14:7
36. Jesus is from EVERLASTING - Micah 5:2, Isaiah 9:6

37. Jesus has NO BEGINNING of days - Hebrews 7:3
38. Jesus is the SAME, yesterday, today and forever - Hebrews 13:8. A quote from Psalm 102:27. Jesus is God.
39. Jesus' is in the midst or the center of the throne of God - Rev 1:6
40. Jesus has the Greatest Name above every name ever named - Philippians 2:9
41. Jesus' name is the Greatest in the world to come as well - Ephesians 1:21
42. And it is before name of JESUS, not any other name including Jehovah, that the peoples of the earth and heaven and bowing before - Philippians 2:10. Jesus is God - Isaiah 45:22-23
43. Only by the name JESUS can one be saved - Acts 4:10-12
44. Jesus is called the Alpha and Omega - Revelation 1:11
45. Jesus who is the Alpha and Omega is the ALMIGHTY - Revelation 1:7-8
46. Jesus is called the King of kings - I Timothy 6:15. Jesus is the King - Zechariah 9:9. The King is God - I Timothy 1:17. Jesus is God
47. Jesus is called Lord of lords - I Timothy 6:15. God is called Lord of lords - Deut 10:17. Jesus is God
48. Christ is called the ROCK - I Corinthians 10:4. That is who Israel followed. The ROCK who Israel followed was GOD - Deut 32:3-4. - God is the Rock - Psalm 18:2 and only God is the Rock - Psalm 18:31. Christ is God.
49. Jesus calls Himself the FIRST AND THE LAST - Revelation 1:11,17. Only GOD is the FIRST AND THE LAST - Isaiah 44:6, Isaiah 48:12. Jesus is God.
50. Jesus knows all things (OMNIPOTENT) - John 2:24-25, John 4:29, John 6:64, John 16:30
51. Jesus is OMNIPRESENT - Matthew 18:20, Matthew 28:20
52. Jesus' body fills all (is omnipresent) - Ephesians 1:23
53. Jesus knows the hearts of men - Revelation 2:23
54. Jesus dwells in the hearts - Ephesians 3:17
55. And "liveth" in the believers - Galatians 2:20
56. Jesus knows the thoughts of men - Matthew 9:4, Luke 6:8

57. And Jesus will judge the "secrets" of men - Romans 2:16
58. God shed His blood - Acts 20:28
59. The cross is the "power of God" - I Corinthians 1:17-18
60. Jesus called the Kingdom of God His Kingdom - John 18:36
61. Jesus is the "Deliverer" of the believers from the wrath of God - I Thessalonians 1:10, Romans 11:26. Only God is the Deliverer from the wrath of God - II Corinthians 1:9-10
62. In Jesus' name we TRUST - Ephesians 1:12-13, Matthew 12:21, Philippians 2:19. Only in God do we trust - Psalm 4:5, 7:1, 31:1, 73:28, Isaiah 26:4. Jesus is God.
63. Jesus is the TRUTH - John 14:6. Jesus is God - Psalm 31:5
64. Jesus sent the prophets - Matthew 23:34...God sent the prophets - Jeremiah 7:25. Jesus is God who sent the prophets.
65. Jesus is the Stone of stumbling - I Peter 2:8. A prophesy from Isaiah 8:13-14. God is the stone of stumbling. Jesus is God.
66. God is the fountain of living waters - Jeremiah 17:13....Jesus is the fountain of living waters - John 4:10-14
67. Jesus brings reward to the wicked for their works - Matthew 16:27. Jesus is God - Psalm 54:4-5, II Samuel 3:39.
68. The reward of salvation is "with Jesus" - Revelation 22:12. Jesus is God - Isaiah 62:11, Isaiah 40:10
69. Jesus gave power to His people - Luke 9:1. Jesus is God - Psalm 68:35
70. Jesus is called the HOLY ONE - Acts 3:14. Jesus is God - Isaiah 30:15, Isaiah 40:25, Isaiah 41:14, Isaiah 43:15
71. Jesus is the light - John 8:12. Jesus is God - Psalm 27:1
72. Jesus is the Husband of believers - Revelation 19:7,9, 21:2, 21:9. Jesus is God - Isaiah 54:5
73. Jesus gives us rest - Matthew 11:28. Jesus is God - Exodus 33:14
74. Jesus gathers the sheep - John 10:16. Jesus is God - Ezekiel 34:11
75. Jesus seeks and saves that which is lost - Luke 19:10. Jesus is God - Ezekiel 34:16

76. Jesus is the Shepherd - John 10:11,14. Jesus is God - Psalm 23:1
77. Jesus feeds the people and causes them to sit down - Mark 8:5-10, Matthew 14:19-21. Jesus is God - Ezekiel 34:15
78. The blood of Jesus cleanses us from sin - I John 1:7. God cleanses from sin - Psalm 51:2, Ezekiel 36:25.. Jesus is God
79. Redemption is from Jesus Christ - Romans 3:24, Colossians 1:14. Redemption is from God - Psalm 130:7. Jesus is God
80. Christ is the Redeemer - Galatians 4:5, Galatians 3:13, Revelation 5:9, Titus 2:14. God is the Redeemer - Jeremiah 31:11, Isaiah 41:14, Isaiah 44:22, Isaiah 44:6, Isaiah 44:24. Jesus is God
81. Jesus wrote new commandments with His finger - John 8:5-9. This is to show that He is God who wrote the 10 commandments with His finger - Exodus 31:18
82. The Bible declares God. That God is Jesus who is written in all the scriptures - Luke 24:27, Luke 24:44, John 5:39, John 5:46
83. ALL things are by Jesus - I Corinthians 8:6
84. John the Baptist, the voice in the wilderness prepared the coming of the Lord - Matthew 3:3. A quote from Isaiah 40:3...He prepared the coming of Jehovah God!!!!
85. Jesus forgave sin - Matthew 9:2, Mark 2:5....and only GOD can forgive sins - Mark 2:7. Only God can forgive sin where they are atoned for it. Jesus is God.
86. Jesus forgave sins and healed diseases - Matthew 9:6. Only God can do that - Psalm 103:3
87. Jesus calmed the storm - Matthew 8:26...Only God can - Psalm 107:25
88. God was pierced - Zechariah 12:10...quoted again in John 19:37. Jesus is God
89. God was priced at 30 pieces of silver - Zechariah 11:12-13...quoted again in Matthew 27:9.....Jesus is God.
90. Jesus returns again with His saints - I Thess. 3:13. A fulfillment of Zechariah 14:5 that says GOD will come with His saints. Jesus is God.
91. The Jews wanted Jesus killed for the crime of Blasphemy - Matthew 26:65. In their minds He claimed to be God - John 10:33, and Equal with God - John 5:18 and forgave as only God can do - Mark 2:7, Luke 5:21...that was blasphemy is their eyes - Mark 2:7, Luke 5:21. Jesus by His words and actions claimed to be God...and that is why He was found guilty by the Jews of blasphemy.

92. Jesus raised Himself from the dead - John 2:19-21. John 10:17-18
93. Jesus will raise all the dead - John 6:39-40,44. God raises the dead both physically and spiritually - Ezekiel 37:12-14. Jesus is God
94. The Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ are one and the same. Christ is God - Romans 8:9
95. Jesus quickens (which means to make alive) - John 5:21. Only God can make someone alive - Ezekiel 37:5-6,9. Only God can quicken - Psalm 80:18. Jesus is God.
96. One cannot serve God and mammon - Matthew 6:24. Only God is to be served - Romans 1:9. The One we serve is Jesus Christ - Colossians 3:24.
97. Jesus is the one who "justifies" - Galatians 2:17. ONLY GOD can justifieth - Romans 8:33. Jesus is God.
98. Jesus "reveals" truth - Luke 10:22, Matthew 11:27. Only GOD can reveal truth - Philippians 3:15, I Corinthians 2:10. Jesus is God.
99. God will not share His glory with another - Isaiah 42:8, 48:11. But the Father glorifies the Son - John 17:1,5, John 12:23, John 13:31-32. Jesus is God and He is ONE with the Father.
100. ONLY in the name of JESUS is their salvation. There is salvation is NONE OTHER - Acts 4:10-12, II Timothy 2:10. And salvation belongs to GOD - Psalm 3:8, Jonah 2:9, Lamentations 3:26, Isaiah 52:10, Psalm 51:14. Since only in the name of Jesus is there salvation and salvation belongs to God, that simply means Jesus is God.
101. Jesus chooses the elect - John 15:16. Jesus is God - I Thess. 2:13, I Cor. 1:27
102. Men are Jesus' disciples - John 13:35, John 15:8. Jesus is God - Isaiah 8:16
103. Jesus' voice is the sound of many waters - Revelation 1:15. Jesus is Almighty God - Ezekiel 43:2.
104. Jesus' feet are like fine brass - Revelation 1:15. Jesus is God - Ezekiel 1:7, Ezekiel 1:28
105. Jesus' name is the Word of God - Revelation 19:13
106. All grace comes from God - I Peter 5:10. Jesus is that God where all grace comes from - Rev 22:21, Romans 16:20, I Thess. 5:28, II Thess. 3:18
107. Jesus comes with clouds - Rev 1:7, Matthew 24:30 - Jesus is God - Isaiah 19:1, Jeremiah 4:13, Numbers 11:25
108. Jesus is called God - John 1:1, Hebrews 1:8

109. Jesus is called The Great God - Titus 2:13
110. Jesus is called The Mighty God - Isaiah 9:6
111. Jesus is called The True God - I John 5:20
112. Jesus is "God with us" - Matthew 1:21
113. Jesus is called "My God" - John 20:28. Since there is "no other God" - Isaiah 45:5,21-22..that means Jesus is that God.
114. Jesus is called "our hope" - I Timothy 1:1. We hope in Jesus - I Cor. 15:19. We are to only hope in God - I Peter 1:21, Psalm 38:15. Jesus is God.
115. Christ is our life - Colossians 3:4. Jesus is God - Psalm 42:8
116. Jesus is called Faithful - Revelation 19:11. Jesus is God - Deut 7:9
117. Jesus is called True - Revelation 19:11. Jesus is God - Romans 3:4
118. Israel tempted Christ - I Corinthians 10:9. Jesus is God - Deut 6:16, Numbers 14:22.
119. Christ sent serpents and destroyed Israel - I Cor 10:9. Jesus is God - Numbers 21:6-7
120. Jesus rebukes and chastens - Revelation 3:19 - Jesus is God - Hebrews 12:5-7, Proverbs 3:11-12.
121. Jesus is the Author and Finisher of faith - Hebrews 12:2
122. God said "Let US make man in OUR image, after OUR likeness" - Genesis 1:26. The plurality refers to the Trinity. This is not talking about the angels or heavenly host. Angels cannot create life. Secondly, nowhere is it indicated that angels are made in the image of God. Third, there is no indication that mankind is created in the image of angels.
123. The plurality of the Trinity is also referred to in Genesis 3:22 and Isaiah 6:8. Jesus is God.
124. Before Jesus became man, He had glory with the Father before the world was - John 17:5
125. All things are given into Jesus' hand - John 3:35
126. Jesus is described as "WHICH WAS" dead, and "IS" alive - Revelation 2:8. The one who "which was" and "which is" is Almighty God - Revelation 4:8, Revelation 1:8. Jesus is God.

127. The "Great Day" of the Wrath of the Lamb - Revelation 6:16-17 is the "Great Day" of God Almighty - Revelation 16:14. Jesus is the Lamb who is God Almighty.
128. Jesus is the King - I Timothy 6:15, John 18:37. Jesus is the King who is called the "only wise God" - I Timothy 1:17
129. Jesus is called the "Just One" - Acts 22:14. Jesus is God - Isaiah 45:21
130. Jesus "gives" repentance - Acts 5:31, Acts 3:26. Jesus is God - II Timothy 2:25
131. Jesus reconciled all things to Himself - Colossians 1:20. Jesus is God - Romans 5:18-19
132. Jesus brings Judgment on the churches in Revelation 2 and 3. Jesus is God - Hebrews 10:30, Deuteronomy 32:35-36
133. God has a Father - Revelation 1:6. That God is Jesus Christ.
134. Jesus stilled the waves and rules the sea- Matthew 8:26-27, Mark 4:39-41. Jesus is God - Psalm 89:8-9
135. Jesus has eyes that are sent forth into all the earth - Revelation 5:6 - Jesus is God - II Chronicles 16:9
136. To know the love of Christ is to be filled with the fulness of God - Ephesians 3:19
137. Christ strengthens the believers - Philippians 4:13. Christ is God - Isaiah 40:29, Isaiah 41:10
138. In Christ's presence is fullness of joy - John 15:11. Jesus is God - Psalm 16:11
139. To see Jesus is to see the Father and to hate Jesus is to hate the Father as well - John 15:24, John 15:23
140. Jesus turns the water into wine - John 2:7-11. A creative act to show that Jesus is Creator God.
141. Jesus walks on water - John 6:19, Matthew 14:26, Mark 6:48 - Jesus is God - Psalm 93:4, Psalm 95:5, Psalm 72:8, Job 9:8
142. Jesus causes the blind to see - Matthew 9:27-30, Matthew 11:5, Mark 8:22-26, Mark 10:51-52. Jesus is God - Psalm 146:8, Isaiah 35:4-5
143. Jesus causes the deaf to hear - Matthew 11:5, Mark 7:32, Mark 7:37 - Jesus is God - Isaiah 35:4-5, Isaiah 43:7-8
144. Jesus causes the dumb to speak - Matthew 9:32-33, Matt 15:31, Mark 7:37, Luke 11:14. Jesus is God - Isaiah 36:6, Ezekiel 24:27, Ezekiel 33:22

145. Jesus causes the lame to walk - Matthew 11:5, Mark 2:11, Luke 7:22 - Jesus is God - Isaiah 35:6
146. Jesus' face shines as the sun - Matthew 17:2. Jesus is God - Psalm 84:11, Malachi 4:2
147. Jesus will inherit all nations - Psalm 2:7-8. Jesus is God - Psalm 82:8
148. Jesus will rule all nations with a rod of iron - Revelation 12:5. Jesus is God - Isaiah 14:5-6
149. Jesus will smite all nations with a rod or iron. He is the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God - Revelation 19:15. He is Almighty God who brings wrath.
150. Jesus and His Father established the ends of the earth - Proverbs 30:4
151. Jesus was without sin - II Corinthians 5:21, Hebrews 4:15, I Peter 2:22. Only God is without sin - Deuteronomy 32:4. Jesus is God
152. Jesus is ABOVE ALL - John 3:31
153. Jesus is GOD OVER ALL - Romans 9:5
154. Jesus is LORD OF ALL - Acts 10:36
155. The Lord God sent His angel to John - Rev 22:6. It is Jesus that sent His angel - Rev 22:16. Jesus is the Lord God.
156. Jesus is called the "Lord of Glory" - I Corinthians 2:8. Jesus is YHWH God - Psalm 24:8-10
157. Jesus gets glory now and forever - II Peter 3:18
158. The Father calls Jesus "LORD" who made heaven and earth - Hebrews 1:10
159. Heaven is God's throne and earth His FOOTSTOOL - Isaiah 66:1, Matthew 5:34-35. Jesus is God - Matthew 22:44, Hebrews 1:13
160. Every knee shall bow, and "every tongue" shall confess to GOD - Romans 14:11. The God "every tongue" is confessing to is JESUS CHRIST - Philippians 2:11

## 50 of the Most Misunderstood Verses in the Bible

By Dr. Ken Matto

All Scripture Quotations are from the King James Bible

### Preface

One of the gravest mistakes that Christians make is that they have neglected to study and research the Bible on many subjects. I have taken fifty verses of scripture and have researched them and found their meanings to be totally opposite as to what is taught in many theology books, prophecy books, and seminaries. The conclusions are based strictly on what the scriptures teach and not what “I want them to teach” which is the way many Christians approach the Bible. Interpreting the Bible by filtering the passages through biased belief systems will never bring a Christian to truth. This is why we have so many different schools of thought and so many different theologies. Put on any Christian radio station and you will hear a different theological stance every half hour. If a person is not rooted and grounded in the scriptures they will become confused by every preacher who comes on the radio. There is only one truth and that is Biblical truth not someone’s opinion or what they think the Bible means or what they want it to say.

These fifty verses are some of the main verses which are so misunderstood that I wonder if people really study their Bibles when they come across them or wait for someone to spoon feed them the meanings according to their bias. The Holy Spirit has been given to all believers for the purpose of helping us to understand the Bible since he is the one who inspired it. We neglect to understand truth when we neglect to seek the Holy Spirit for guidance on the Scriptures and instead open up a theology book or prophecy book. Let’s not put the Holy Spirit out of work because He can’t collect unemployment. You may disagree with what I have to offer and that would be because you filter the Bible through a belief system of some church. I have always written with the intent of understanding the Bible according to the Bible. *Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Corinthians 2:13)* Theology books, prophecy books, and commentaries are not spiritual but are man’s interpretation and sometimes interpolation. Christianity would not be so divided if Christians studied the Bible without these bias based books. So let us get back to the Bible and study it according to the Bible like it was meant to be studied. Speculation and interpolation has no place in Biblical interpretation!

### List of Scriptures Covered

Genesis 12:1-3

Genesis 22:8

Deuteronomy 14:26

2 Chronicles 7:14

Psalms 5:5

Isaiah 1:18

Isaiah 14:1

186

Malachi 3:10  
Matthew 5:9  
Matthew 7:1  
Matthew 16:24  
Matthew 24:36  
Matthew 27:11  
John 1:12-13  
John 3:16  
John 4:24  
John 19:30  
Acts 2:38  
Acts 12:4  
Romans 9:6  
Romans 10:17  
Romans 11:26

## **Part 2**

1 Corinthians 14:21-22  
Galatians 5:4  
Ephesians 2:1 & 5  
2 Thessalonians 2:3  
2 Timothy 4:2  
Hebrews 6:4-6  
Hebrews 10:26-27  
James 2:24  
1 Peter 1:2  
1 Peter 1:11  
1 Peter 3:18-20  
2 Peter 3:9  
1 John 2:2  
1 John 3:9  
Revelation 20:5-6  
Revelation 20:7-8  
Revelation 22:17

## **Part 1**

### **Genesis 12:1-3**

Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: {2} And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: {3} And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. (Genesis 12:1-3)

If you ask any dispensationalist about who Genesis 12:1-3 is speaking about, without batting an eye or even checking their bibles, they will tell you that this is pointing to the modern nation of Israel. This verse has been used by deluded pastors and theologians to

promote their Christian Zionism from the pulpit. Genesis 12:1-3 is not a political group of verses but they are spiritual in nature and we will see openly what they are pointing to. One of the greatest proponents of this view was C.I. Scofield and there were others who worked with him on his notes. Two such notables from the dispensationalist movement were A.T. Pierson and A.C. Gaebelein. It must be noted that Scofield met with a man named Samuel Untermeyer who later became chairman of the American Jewish Committee, president of the American League of Jewish Patriots, and chairman of the Non-sectarian Anti-Nazi League. Untermeyer was an advocate of the Zionist Liberation movement and was also active as a member of the Federal Reserve and actually prepared the Federal Reserve Bank law. Untermeyer introduced Scofield to many prominent Zionist and Socialist leaders such as Jacob Schiff and Bernard Baruch. In 1901 Untermeyer helped Scofield join the Lotos club in New York City which promoted literature and fine arts. It was here where Scofield came under the tutelage of Untermeyer. Untermeyer and his cohorts were looking for a way to get churches and Christians to accept Christian Zionism and they found their way in through making a study Bible which was geared toward Zionism. Scofield then went on to author and publish the Scofield Reference Bible which made its first appearance in 1909.

**CI Scofield** – (8/19/1843-7/24/1921) – Creator of the Scofield Reference Bible of 1909, revised notes in 1917 and 1967. In the front of his Bible, he claims the degree of D.D. Doctor of Divinity which would have been an earned degree back then but there is not one seminary in America that ever claimed him as a student. No one knows where he obtained that DD, he just claimed it and that was it. The fact that in 1892 he began calling himself Doctor Scofield without producing any Doctorate degree from any Seminary or University is the least of his devious activities. Even the details he gave in his story of conversion are proven to be fabricated, including the time, place and other particularities, thereby placing doubt on the whole story. Since Scofield was so popular, don't you think a seminary would use him as a bragging right?

He and Untermeyer held memberships in the Lotos Club in New York which was a literary club. There can be little doubt that Untermeyer acted as a liaison between Scofield and the British Zionists at Oxford University, who were far more influential in promoting Zionist propaganda to the American evangelical movement, which really fast-tracked after WWII and the founding of the nation-state of Israel. The purpose of Samuel Untermeyer and those associated with him, had to find a way to get Fundamentalist Christians into an international interest in the Zionist Movement, which was one of Untermeyer's life-long projects. The Scofield Bible was the conduit to bring Zionism into the churches while the average Christian was unsuspecting of the intent these theological deviates were placing upon them.

Here is the commentary from the 1967 Scofield Bible on Genesis 12:3:

And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed. (Genesis 12:3)

*“and curse him that curseth thee” This was a warning literally fulfilled in the history of Israel's persecutions. It has invariably fared ill with the people who have persecuted the*

*Jew-well with those who protected him. For a nation to commit the sin of anti-Semitism brings inevitable Judgment. The future will remarkably prove this principle.”*

Did Scofield meet the qualifications for a leader in the church? His friends and colleagues have tried to hide the fact that he was married twice, had two daughters with his first wife and was divorced by her owing to how he treated her and their daughters. Scofield began courting his future second wife Hettie van Wark before the divorce was finalized and they got married only three months after the papers were signed in 1883. Scofield went to jail for six months on a forgery conviction in 1880. He had stolen his mother-in-law's last \$1,300 one year after his supposed conversion.

One of Cyrus's first suspicious moves involved in producing his Reference Bible was to take an unnecessary trip to the British Isles for research. He immediately sought out the controversial scholars Westcott and Hort in London. They guided him in how to alter the King James Bible so that it would be compatible with the dispensationalist teachings he was recruited to promote. Scofield preferred the Revised Version of the Bible, which was largely the product of his mentors Westcott and Hort and was based on corrupted manuscripts born in Alexandria, Egypt and espoused by the Vatican. However, he knew that if he coupled his notes with the RV they wouldn't sell very well because the King James Bible far surpassed the RV in popularity. So he used the King James but in many areas where the two versions differed doctrinally, especially where his doctrine was concerned, he placed a footnote giving a supposedly more correct rendering, which almost always agreed with the RV.

In July 1901, Scofield joined the first of a new series of annual Bible conferences in Sea Cliff, Long Island, New York. There he met Arno C. Gaebelein, Bible teacher and editor of *Our Hope* magazine. Scofield told Gaebelein about his plans to publish a reference Bible, and Gaebelein volunteered to help him find financial support.

In 1902, the Dallas church called Scofield back as pastor. He accepted, thinking he would have more time for his Bible project. But his attention was divided, so he left the church for Europe in 1904 to work on the Bible.

While in England, he met the head of Oxford University Press who became enthusiastic about the project. A year later, Scofield returned to America, signed a contract with Oxford University Press, and returned to pastoring his Dallas church.

Several consulting editors helped Scofield with his reference Bible of 1909. They included Gaebelein; James M. Gray, president of Moody Bible Institute; William J. Erdman, Presbyterian minister and author; Arthur T. Pierson, author and editor; William G. Moorehead, President of Xenia Theological Seminary; Henry G. Weston, President of Crozer Theological Seminary; and Elmore Harris, President of Toronto Bible Training School. The Bible was officially published in January 1909 as the *Scofield Reference Bible*. Scofield then published a revised version in 1917. *Today Oxford University Press still publishes the Scofield Reference Bible.*

Scofield was one of the founding members of the Philadelphia College of the Bible in 1913 which is now Cairn University. I guess they didn't want the word "Bible" in it

anymore. If you look at their website you will see the same Mobius in their name as is on the New King James Version. It is also found on the new age book "Aquarian Conspiracy" by Marilyn Ferguson. It is on the logo of "The Institute of Trans-Personal Psychology." Constance Cumbey, author of *The Hidden Dangers of the Rainbow* and a notable authority on the New Age Movement, said, "*The emblem on the cover of the New King James Bible is said to be an ancient symbol of the Trinity. The old symbol had gnostic origins. It was more gnostic than Christian.*" Satanic jewelry carries the gnostic Mobius. It represented 666.

### **Genesis 12:1**

Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee:

Terah, Abram's Father had now died at the age of 205 in Haran. *And the days of Terah were two hundred and five years: and Terah died in Haran. Genesis 11:32* This covenant points out how God called Abram out of Ur of the Chaldees and commanded him to go to a land which God would show him. Within this covenant we see promises which must be examined very closely to determine their meaning. Abram was now commanded by God to leave Ur and to leave his family and follow God to the land which He would show to him. At this point, God did not tell Abram where he was going, instead Abram followed God by faith. *By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. (Hebrews 11:8)*

### **Genesis 12:2**

And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing:

Here God gives Abram a promise that he will become a great nation. The word "nation" is the Hebrew word "goy," which may be translated "Gentile, foreign nation, or heathen." Right at the outset we see that the nation God has in view will not be limited to a single country. We establish this because within this nation there are going to exist Gentiles. We may conclude this nation will be worldwide in scope. *Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. (Matthew 21:43)* Matthew 21:43 gives us an insight as to what type of nation will be built through Abraham's seed. The nation which will be bringing forth much fruit will be the eternal church of Christ or the body of believers. The fruit in view is to make other believers as the Gospel is sent forth to the world. It must be worldwide if foreign Gentile nations are to be included. God also promised to make Abram's name great, and this has been fulfilled. The nation of Israel proclaims him, the Arab world proclaims him, and the Christian world proclaims him. God says he would be a blessing, but a blessing to whom? I believe the answer to that lies in the end portion of verse 3.

### **Genesis 12:3**

And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

And I will bless them that bless thee

There is probably no greater example of the blessing of God on a nation than that of the United States. When we were founded in 1620 by the Pilgrims, their first desire was to advance the Christian Faith as they recorded in the Mayflower Compact of November 11, 1620. Our nation was founded on Christianity and the majority of the founding fathers were Christians. This nation was blessed as even the unbelievers who lived here had a fear of God and did not persecute the Christians as is being done today. The Government was formed according to Christian principles and the acknowledging that Christianity was the true faith. This led to the formation and building of a mighty nation under God. God blessed this nation because it acknowledged Him as the Supreme ruler over this country and He has protected it through the years. He blessed this nation as the breadbasket to the world and with great wealth. People flocked to the shores to start a new life here. All of my grandparents came from Hungary around the turn of the twentieth century.

#### and curse him that curseth thee

We continue to look at the fulfillment of God's promise to Abram, we need to look at countries that have cursed Christianity and even showed desire for it to leave the shores. In India, Hinduism has been very physical against Christianity and as a result they are a very poor nation worshipping cows. Saudi Arabia where Christianity is illegal, they may have much oil wealth but their people worship a black box called the Kaaba. To have no gospel is a greater curse because there is no chance for salvation. The old Soviet Union persecuted Christians and in 1990 they dissolved. North Korea persecutes Christians and their country is just about broke. Israel hates Christians and the Lord Jesus Christ and they have become a haven for sodomites and human trafficking which totally negates the ridiculous moniker of "holy land."

All one has to do is just look at who persecutes Christians, whether corporately or individually, and you will see God's curse upon them. The greatest curse that one can have is to be the enemy of God by means of persecuting Christians. Remember what the Lord Jesus said to the Apostle Paul when he was on his way to Damascus. *And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? {5} And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks. (Acts 9:4-5)* What these hate mongers fail to understand, that when you hate Christians, you are in actuality hating the Lord Jesus Christ who will be their judge on the last day.

#### and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed

Now we must look at what God chooses to bless as these blessings are not man made but divine. Let us pose three questions:

Has God blessed Judaism?

Has God blessed Islam?

Has God blessed Christianity?

The answer to the first two questions is no because both of these systems deny Christ in His deity. *Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also. (1 John 2:23)* The answer to the third is yes,

because Christianity is not a world religion with a cultic overtone. True Christianity exalts the person of Christ, and God promised to bless those who are in Christ.

Now we must realize that the only way all families on the earth can be blessed is if the gospel is preached to them. There is not a country on earth which is void of Christians, Christianity, or the knowledge of Christ. Now when Russia relaxed its strict control on the people in 1990, the cry was to send Bibles, not other religious books. Wherever Christianity was permitted, it left an indelible mark on that country. Many times hospitals were built, schools were built, housing was built, humanitarian aid was given in Christ's name, when there is a tsunami or other disaster, Americans are quick to offer help, whether believers or not. When Hurricane Katrina hit New Orleans in 2005, there were many Christian groups on the scene to help. The atheists in this country hate Christianity and yet I did not hear of one atheist group on the scene in New Orleans.

It is common knowledge that whenever mission stations were built in different countries, they became centers of refuge for people. They normally helped with their medical and dental needs, education, clothing, and other necessities. They were normally built in the poorer sections of a country. I have been saved for 39 years and have yet to see a humanitarian station built in foreign countries by either Muslims, Jews, Sodomites, or Atheists. It is always the Christians who go in and not only help with the physical but bring the eternal gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ which when indigenous people become saved, it changes their life eternally and they in turn go out and preach the gospel to their fellow countrymen, thus fulfilling God's promise to Abram that all the families of the world would be blessed.

### **Summary**

Genesis 12:1-3 is in no way speaking of the modern nation of Israel. When this promise was given to Abram, ancient Israel was 600 years from being formed as an official nation. In these verses, God is telling us that the Lord Jesus Christ would come through the nation of Israel, the line of Judah and once He completed His salvation program on Calvary and ascended back to Heaven, then would come Pentecost which would usher in the last days and the sending forth of the Gospel to the entire world. So God makes the promise to Abram that it would be through his family line that the Messiah would come and that is why neither Eliezer his steward or Ishmael could be the child of promise. It had to be Isaac who gave birth to Jacob who gave birth to Judah until his line came to the Lord Jesus Christ. It is unfortunate that so many Christians believe that the modern nation of Israel is some type of holy land. As stated before it has become a haven for sodomy.

Genesis 12:1-3 when interpreted properly yields only one focus and that is the promise of the Lord Jesus Christ along with worldwide evangelism in His Name. Those who try and claim that it is speaking of modern Israel are doing disservice to these passages and will never come into truth on this subject. This is also why so many churches and Christians have been derailed into thinking that modern Israel is the place to keep their eyes on for prophecy. The place to keep their eye on is the church and its persecution and infiltration by false gospels. No one is seeking to change Judaism but yet there is a great satanic movement to change the truth of Christianity. This is why Satan has come up with counterfeit bibles, counterfeit gospels like the emergent church with Rob Bell, Tony

Campolo, and Rick Warren and other unsaved deceivers who are vying for the souls of people and seeking to derail the truth to lead astray the Elect.

When looking at the covenant in Genesis 12:1-3 and when we understand it to mean the eternal church, then we will understand much better when God states that He will give Abraham a land forever. *For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever. (Genesis 13:15)* What is the only thing in Scripture which will last forever? It is the eternal Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ and that is what is in view when we read “forever or everlasting.” *And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee. {8} And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God. (Genesis 17:7-8)* When will we claim that everlasting possession? It will be after Judgment day when God remakes this entire world and universe. *For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain. (Isaiah 66:22)* Notice the similarity between Genesis 17:7 and Isaiah 66:22. They are both speaking of the seed. Who is that seed? *Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. (Galatians 3:16)* It is the Lord Jesus Christ and all His followers, AKA Christians. It becomes so clear once we analyze these verses properly. Please do not get caught up believing false prophecy books and dispensationalism which only spews more lies and causes more confusion and get rid of those Scofield notes because they only cause confusion.

### **Genesis 22:8**

And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together.

This will refer specifically to the Lord Jesus Christ being the lamb of God who was sacrificed for his people. *The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. (John 1:29)* Abraham had great spiritual insight that a redeemer would come and die for the sins of his people. *And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. (Matthew 1:21)* God provided himself the lamb as the Son of God. No one could die for the sins of God’s people unless it was God himself who was the only one capable of defeating sin on the cross. *Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; (Hebrews 1:3)* Hebrews 1:3 confirms the truth being taught in Genesis 22:8.

When we read some of the modern versions like the NASV or the ESV, we read that “God will provide for himself the lamb...” In the Old Testament sacrificial laws, it was the one who transgressed the law of God who was required to bring a sin offering to the temple. Basically, what the modern versions are saying is that God needed a lamb to sacrifice for himself, in essence, these modern versions are calling God a sinner in need of redemption. Do you see how bad these modern versions are? God never needed a

lamb for himself because he is pure and holy and separated from all sin but according to the modern versions, he did.

### **Deuteronomy 14:26**

And thou shalt bestow that money for whatsoever thy soul lusteth after, for oxen, or for sheep, or for wine, or for strong drink, or for whatsoever thy soul desireth: and thou shalt eat there before the LORD thy God, and thou shalt rejoice, thou, and thine household,

Deuteronomy 14:26 is a verse which has been ripped from its context by Christians who believe a holy God placed it there as a permission slip to drink. They think that it is a license to drink wine, mixed drinks, beer, have Super Bowl parties, etc. The question which they must ask themselves is, “Did Christ go to the cross so they could drink alcohol?” The answer is no but today’s Christian looks for any “supposed” loophole where they can enjoy the fleshly sport of drinking alcohol. We will look at Deuteronomy 14:26 in its proper context and we will see it is not a pass for the Christian to make a trip to the liquor store. The money spent on booze could better be spent on missions.

### **Deuteronomy 14:22**

Thou shalt truly tithe all the increase of thy seed, that the field bringeth forth year by year.

In the Old Testament God had given Israel the principle of tithing their increase. They were to bring a tithe of all that their land produced. It was the Harvest tithe! But where were they to bring it?

### **Deuteronomy 14:23**

And thou shalt eat before the LORD thy God, in the place which he shall choose to place his name there, the tithe of thy corn, of thy wine, and of thine oil, and the firstlings of thy herds and of thy flocks; that thou mayest learn to fear the LORD thy God always.

They were to bring their tithes to the place where the Lord had chosen to place His name. They were to eat of their bounty in that place. What place was it?

And he built altars in the house of the LORD, of which the LORD said, In Jerusalem will I put my name. (2 Kings 21:4)

The place mentioned in Deuteronomy 14:23 where God chose to place His name is Jerusalem, as we can see that in 2 Kings 21:4. The Scripture specifically states that God will place His name in Jerusalem. This is also confirmed in 2 Chronicles 6:6. *But I have chosen Jerusalem, that my name might be there; and have chosen David to be over my people Israel.* (2 Chronicles 6:6) Up to this point what we have here is the tithe that the farmers must bring to the city of Jerusalem which also contained the Temple.

### **Deuteronomy 14:24**

And if the way be too long for thee, so that thou art not able to carry it; or if the place be too far from thee, which the LORD thy God shall choose to set his name there, when the

LORD thy God hath blessed thee:

God now makes concessions for those who live a long distance from Jerusalem. He realizes that if a farmer has had a great crop or had a major increase in livestock, then the possibility exists that he will be physically unable to bring the entire tithe to Jerusalem. They only had horse or ox drawn carts in those days to carry produce or animals and a large tithe would be impossible to manage.

### **Deuteronomy 14:25**

Then shalt thou turn it into money, and bind up the money in thine hand, and shalt go unto the place which the LORD thy God shall choose:

In verse 25, God makes the concession that the farmer may sell the tithe of the produce or livestock and turn that into money which would be a lot easier to manage on a long trip than loads of produce or animals. So God is now instructing those who brought their tithes this way to bring the money to the same place the other ones brought the produce or the animals. Up to this point, are we seeing a theme running through these verses and so far it has nothing to do with drinking alcohol. Now let us get on to verse 26.

### **Deuteronomy 14:26**

And thou shalt bestow that money for whatsoever thy soul lusteth after, for oxen, or for sheep, or for wine, or for strong drink, or for whatsoever thy soul desireth: and thou shalt eat there before the LORD thy God, and thou shalt rejoice, thou, and thine household,

The English word “bestow” has for its Hebrew word “nāthan” which means “to give, to put, set something somewhere.” It has other meanings and is used 2016 times in the Hebrew Scriptures. It is the fifth most widely used word in the Hebrew. They were then, during the feast, able to buy what they needed to celebrate the harvest tithe. They would have purchased the things they needed from the Sanctuary. At this point in Israel’s history, this practice was not yet corrupted by greed of the leaders but was done properly.

The word “wine” is the word “yayin” and in this usage in this passage it is referring to “unfermented wine.”

The word “strong drink” has for its Hebrew word “shêkhār” and can mean “beer or another type of intoxicating beverage.” Now we must keep in mind that this was a feast which was held before the LORD and by the Temple. The word “shêkhār” is used 23 times in the Old Testament and is a general term which may include drinking or the eating of solid food. Normally, strong drink was fermented grape juice and was diluted one part wine to three parts water. The type of distillation we have today was invented in the 12th century A.D. So up until that time, fermentation was the way wine became strong drink. There were other legitimate uses for that type of beverage. It was used for cooking, healing and pain killing. The command in verse 26 is to buy the strong drink and is not saying anything about drinking it. The last sentence in verse 26 is also a command where the people are commanded “to eat before the Lord.” So they would have used the strong drink for cooking purposes, especially since the drinking of strong drink is prohibited by God. We must never use verse 26 as some license to drink alcohol because drinking is not in view since it was a feast at the Temple before the LORD.

Would you have a couple of shots of whiskey or scotch before you go to church? Pagan festivals encouraged drinking alcohol and God's people were in no way to imitate those festivals.

God condemned the use of strong drink among His people and He would not contradict Himself in Deuteronomy 14:26.

Do not drink wine nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when ye go into the tabernacle of the congregation, lest ye die: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations: {10} And that ye may put difference between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean; (Leviticus 10:9-10)

Ye have not eaten bread, neither have ye drunk wine or strong drink: that ye might know that I am the LORD your God. (Deuteronomy 29:6)

Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise. (Proverbs 20:1)

Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, that they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, till wine inflame them! (Isaiah 5:11)

But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment. (Isaiah 28:7)

Just looking at these prohibitions and scenarios, how could anyone legitimately think that God would contradict Himself and allow drinking at a festival by the Temple? Something else too which is very important. God tells us in plain terms in both verses 23 and 24, that the place of the feast will be where He has chosen to place His name. In other words, there is a holy aspect to the feast since God's name is associated with it. As a CHRISTIAN who bears the name of Christ, do you think it is biblical to buy a keg of beer or drink whiskey or any type of drink? If Christ saved you, then you are holy and alcohol has no place because it does not enhance your Christian walk, instead it hinders it and ruins your testimony. So for those who want to use Deuteronomy 14:26 as their license to drink, are using the Scriptures to their own destruction. Deuteronomy 14:26 should not be ripped out of its context because God did not write the Bible to condone sin but to condemn it.

### **2 Chronicles 7:14**

If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.

A verse that is used quite extensively to bring Christians back to an obedient life is 2 Chronicles 7:14 plus it is used in connection with revival. Does this verse apply to

Christians or does it apply to ancient Israel when they had walked away from the Lord and took up the lifestyle of idolatry?

*O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself; but in me is thine help. (Hosea 13:9)* If one goes through the book of Hosea, it will be seen that God was going to judge the northern ten tribes otherwise known as Ephraim. That judgment came to pass in 721 B.C. when the ten northern tribes went into captivity never again to return to their land. However, up until that time God had repeatedly told Ephraim that he was their help and only in him would they be able to find true peace and life. In Hosea 14:1 God tells Israel to return to him. *O Israel, return unto the LORD thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity. (Hosea 14:1)* Then the LORD promised to heal their backsliding. *I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him. (Hosea 14:4)* Here we would see an application for 2 Chronicles 7:14 that if Ephraim turned from their wicked ways of idolatry, then God would heal their land and their backslidings.

2 Chronicles 7:14 is located in the section of scripture where Solomon had just finished dedicating the temple. God had told Solomon that if his people would turn from their wicked ways and seek him then he would hear from heaven and forgive their sin and heal their land. Notice verse 15. *Now mine eyes shall be open, and mine ears attent unto the prayer that is made in this place. (2 Chronicles 7:15)* God was giving specific instructions to Solomon about the people of Israel. Then in verse 15 God states that he would hear the prayers and his eyes would be attentive to the prayers made in the temple. Verse 14 & 15 cannot be separated because they focus on one major theme and that is obedience to the LORD and prayer in the temple. 2 Chronicles 7:14 is not speaking about the Christian but about ancient Israel. Solomon started reigning about 970 B.C and reigned to about 931-30 B.C. Hosea started to prophesy about 800 B.C and prophesied over a period of about 70 years. So we can see that the ten tribe northern kingdom had become fully apostate in only 130 years after they made an alliance with Tyre and Sidon, both cities which worshipped Baal. Hosea was sent primarily to the northern kingdom.

2 Chronicles 7:14 contains the word “wicked.” The word wicked is used 24 times in the New Testament within 23 verses and not once is the word ever used in conjunction with the true believer. The word wickedness is used 9 times in 9 verses and is never used in any description of the believer or their actions.

Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, (Romans 1:29)

And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled (Colossians 1:21)

Notice in these two New Testament verses that being wicked is associated with those who have not become saved. Wicked or wickedness is never associated with the true Christian but only the unbeliever.

When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. (Matthew 13:19)

In Matthew 13:19, the term wicked is associated with Satan himself, so if a Christian is considered to be wicked, then they are not Christians at all but are still in an unsaved state. The question remains, can a true Christian commit an act of wickedness? The answer is yes because we are still in the flesh. I personally knew a Christian man who committed suicide over a family matter. Is self-murder wickedness? It sure is! I knew this man was a Christian but he allowed himself to be overtaken by the flesh and as a result he murdered himself.

The next question that remains is, did this man go to heaven? He sure did because every sin that a Christian ever committed or will commit is covered by the blood of Christ. Christians are forgiven people. When Christ died on the cross, this man's sins just like mine were all in the future.

{13} And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14)

Colossians states plainly that those who are saved have been made alive through Christ and that he has forgiven all our trespasses. Murder whether it is of someone else or ourselves, is a sin and that has been forgiven according to the Scriptures. *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12)*

Now let us go back to the word “backsliding.” It must be understood that the term “backsliding” never refers to the Christian because whenever the term is used in the Old Testament it is used in response to the sinning of Israel as a corporate nation. The term “backsliding” does not occur at all in the New Testament. It is used a total of 11 times in the books of Jeremiah and Hosea and nowhere else in the Bible. The Hebrew word behind “backsliding” carries with it the meaning of “apostasy.” A true born again Christian will never go into apostasy, that is something only an unbeliever will do. A born again Christian may adopt a wrong teaching or may sin but that does not equate to apostasy.

In the New Testament we find the Greek word “apostasia” which translates “rebellion, backsliding, apostasy, or departure.” The word is only used twice in the entire New Testament:

And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles **to forsake** Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walk after the customs. (Acts 21:21)

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a **falling away** first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; (2 Thessalonians 2:3)

As you can see both uses of the word are not associated with the spiritual lives of Christians. A true Christian cannot fall into apostasy because that would mean they have lost their salvation, something which is impossible for a true Christian. Even those who hold to the false belief of free will know that Christ is the only way to heaven. Those Christians who use the modern versions of the Bible also know that Christ is the only way to heaven. There is an interesting verse found in 1 John 2 which tells us the difference between those who stayed and those who departed, which is one of the meanings of "apostasia."

They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us. (1 John 2:19)

Those who are unsaved and join in Christianity will soon show their true commitment by departing from the faith. They departed simply because they were unsaved and were not true Christians. John uses the term "us" 5 times meaning there is a difference between the "us" who are the true Christians and those who departed who were not true Christians.

### Summary

2 Chronicles 7:14 has nothing whatsoever to do with the true Christian. It speaks of the backsliding of Israel into apostasy which was evident by their rampant idolatry and departure from the true God. However, we must not discount its warning. *Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. (1 Corinthians 10:11)* Everything that happened to ancient Israel is to be used as a warning to us and that includes their backsliding. While the true Christian cannot fall into apostasy because we have the Holy Spirit indwelling us, we can do things in the flesh which are against the teachings of scripture. *For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. (Romans 7:18)* If we allow the flesh to overtake the spirit, we will commit sin but if we keep ourselves in check, we will remain on the straight and narrow. *There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. (Romans 8:1)*

### Psalm 5:5

The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity.

The word "hatest" means to "hate personally, enemy, or foe." From one verse we may conclude that God considers all workers of iniquity as His enemy. The majority of Christians like to proclaim that God loves everyone including the unbelievers and that is just false teaching because it is not backed up by Scripture. God bears this fact out that all unbelievers are the enemy of God. Deuteronomy 7:10; Psalm 7:11; 2 Thessalonians 1:5-10; 1 Peter 3:12.

And repayeth them that hate him to their face, to destroy them: he will not be slack to him that hateth him, he will repay him to his face. (Deuteronomy 7:10)

God judgeth the righteous, and God is angry with the wicked every day. (Psalm 7:11)

{5} Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer: {6} Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you; {7} And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, {8} In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ: {9} Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power; {10} When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day. (2 Thessalonians 1:5-10)

For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil. (1 Peter 3:12)

It is also biblically true that all unbelievers are enemies of Christians too, no matter how nice they may seem, they are still in the kingdom of Satan.

### **Isaiah 1:18**

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.

Since I became a Christian 39 years ago, I have heard the interpretation of this verse as follows that if one repents and turns to Christ, then their sins which were scarlet would be made as white as snow, meaning a person goes from being a sinner to one who is cleansed. However, in this case that interpretation does not match up with what the verse states and the context in which it is found. When we look at the context of Isaiah 1, God is pronouncing a serious woe upon the nation of Judah. Isaiah 1:1-24 speaks about their impending day of Judgment by the hand of the Chaldeans. Isaiah 1:25-31 speaks about the restoration of Judah if she will heed the warnings the Lord gave in the first 24 verses.

Verse 18 sits in the middle of this warning and is not a salvation verse because the warning of chapter 1 is to an entire nation and not individuals. When we look at verse 18, it speaks about a nation who has sin in their life and is going opposite of the commands of the Lord. So the Lord comes to them and says that their sins are as scarlet but they will be as white as snow and though they be like crimson, they will be as wool. This verse is not speaking about redemption but is a further warning that if their sins continue as they are going, then they will be fully engulfed in sin and God will have no recourse but to judge that nation.

The reason that I am saying that Isaiah 1:18 is not pointing to salvation by grace is because that does not fit the context of what is in view plus it does not harmonize with what is taught in the Scriptures concerning sin and Christ's sacrifice. If we look at the following verses, we will see a common thread which runs through them.

As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12)

I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25)

I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee. (Isaiah 44:22)

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14)

If you will notice the words in these verses, “he removed,” “blotteth out,” “I have blotted out,” “Blotting out,” “took it out of the way.” These five verses all have the common thread of the removal of sins from the believer upon salvation in Christ. The sins which darkened our souls before salvation are gone. They are no longer attached to the believer because God has annihilated them.

Let me give a quick illustration. I show up at your home to paint your car with white paint but the car was towed out to the junkyard two hours before I arrived. I have the paint and I have the brush, but since the car was removed, there is nothing to paint. How can I paint a car that is no longer there? In the same manner, how can one be made white if their sins are no longer there? It is the soul that is cleansed.

Let us look at two practical examples of this in Scripture.

And David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die. (2 Sam 12:13)

When David sinned with Bathsheba, he had kept from confessing that sin for about a year and since God would not let him get away with that sin and the other accompanying sins such as the murder of Uriah the Hittite, He sent Nathan to David. Nathan then points out the fact that David was the object of his narrative and he was the man who sinned against the Lord. Then Nathan tells David something very interesting, “The Lord has made your sin white.” That is not what he said, he said, “The LORD also hath put away thy sin.” God completely removed the sin from David but, He did not remove the consequences as you study the life of David from this point, there is nothing but hardship and rebellion in his family. The key is, that God took away the sin of David, it is no longer attached to his soul.

Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; (Acts 3:19)

Acts 3:19 is a part of a sermon Peter gave right after the healing of the lame man at the Gate Beautiful at the Temple. After the man was healed, Peter begins to speak about

salvation. In verse 19, notice what Peter states. He states the same actions that God spoke about in Isaiah concerning the blotting out of sin. Notice that Peter did not say, “that your sins be made white as snow.” Peter states that when a person becomes saved, their sins are blotted out. The Greek word for “may be blotted out” is the Greek word “exaleiphō” which carries with it the meaning of “erase, obliterate, wipe or smear out.” It is the same word used in Colossians 2:14 for “Blotting out.” There is no question about what happens to the sins of the believer, they are obliterated.

Now let us take a look at Isaiah 1:18 and see if it harmonizes with the verses that we just looked at. The words in these verses, “he removed,” “blotteth out,” “I have blotted out,” “Blotting out,” “took it out of the way” all show a removal of sin from the believer, that is, a separation of the sin and the believer. Referencing Isaiah 1:18, I must ask the question, How can sin, that has been removed, be made white as snow? If it is not there, then something else is in view in Isaiah 1:18.

What is in view is how God is making a comparison to leprosy and its representation as an all-consuming sin. Judah would have been familiar with the Levitical laws concerning leprosy.

{19} And in the place of the boil there be a white rising, or a bright spot, white, and somewhat reddish, and it be showed to the priest; {20} And if, when the priest seeth it, behold, it be in sight lower than the skin, and the hair thereof be turned white; the priest shall pronounce him unclean: it is a plague of leprosy broken out of the boil. (Leviticus 13:19-20)

In Leviticus 13:19-20, we read about the priest determining as to whether a person who has leprosy is clean or unclean. Notice in verse 19, it speaks about a reddish spot on the skin. One of the beginning symptoms of leprosy is the red skin or patch. Please note in the following citations from these medical websites with their URL.

From: <http://diseases.emedtv.com/leprosy/leprosy-symptoms.html>

#### Tuberculoid Leprosy Symptoms

Tuberculoid leprosy (also known as paucibacillary leprosy) is the mild form of leprosy. Early symptoms can include one or more light or slightly red patches of skin that appear on the trunk or extremities. This may be associated with a decrease in light-touch sensation in the area of the rash.

From: [http://www.emedicinehealth.com/leprosy/page3\\_em.htm](http://www.emedicinehealth.com/leprosy/page3_em.htm)

In general, the signs and symptoms of leprosy may vary with the form of the disease and include the following: Flat or raised skin lesions or nodules, often less pigmented than the surrounding skin, though they may reddish or copper colored

From: <http://rarediseases.about.com/cs/infectiousdisease/a/071203.htm>

#### Signs and Symptoms of Leprosy

The earliest sign of leprosy is commonly a spot on the skin that may be slightly redder, darker, or lighter than the person's normal skin. The spot may lose feeling and hair. In some people, the only sign is numbness in a finger or toe.

From: <http://www.houstontx.gov/health/ComDisease/hansens.html>

Hansen's disease (Leprosy) is a bacterial disease of the skin and nerves. Early signs or symptoms may include:

- 1) A rash on the trunk of the body and/or extremities
- 2) Reddish or pale colored skin patches which do not itch and which may have lost some feeling

Now when we look at the early symptoms of leprosy, in all four medical websites, we see there is a presence of red on the skin. This means that the disease had not yet spread to the entire body but is beginning to and without medical treatment it will engulf the whole body. This is what God is telling Judah in Isaiah 1:18 that if their national sins were to continue, they would eventually be fully permeated with sin and God would have to bring judgment. Do you see the progression which God is warning them about? Though their sins be as scarlet and crimson, in other words, if their sins were cutoff now and they did a national repentance, then God would not judge them but if they allowed the red and scarlet sins to continue, then they would become a totally sinful nation as one who has leprosy in fullest manner and as you know, God did judge them by the hand of Babylon because of their failure to heed the warnings.

And the cloud departed from off the tabernacle; and, behold, Miriam became leprous, white as snow: and Aaron looked upon Miriam, and, behold, she was leprous. (Numbers 12:10)

The leprosy therefore of Naaman shall cleave unto thee, and unto thy seed for ever. And he went out from his presence a leper as white as snow. (2 Kings 5:27)

Do you see the verses above and what is the common thread? Both Gehazi and Miriam, because of their sin, were both turned as white as snow. Now with that information concerning the progression of the disease of leprosy and leprosy representing an unbeliever in sin, now look at Isaiah 1:18, and you will now have the proper understanding.

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. (Isaiah 1:18)

Isaiah 1:18 is also a warning to every person on this planet. We have all witnessed this verse in action. A person starts out with one alcoholic drink and winds up a drunk. A person smokes one marijuana joint and winds up on cocaine or heroin. A person steals a candy bar when they are young and gets away with it and winds up a murderer later on. We have all seen and many have experienced the destructive progression of sin and that is what God was warning Judah about and He continues the warning today.

Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. {12} Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. (1 Corinthians 10:11-12)

### Isaiah 14:1

For the LORD will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land: and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob.

The LORD is going to have mercy on Jacob and we must remember that the Messianic line came through the lineage of Jacob. *As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated. (Romans 9:13)* God's love is qualified in that he loves his children, that is, only those who are in Christ. This is why God loved Jacob because it was the believing line which came through the lineage of Jacob. Then God states that he is going to choose Israel. The Israel that God chose is the body of believers and not the physical descendants. The ones in Israel that God chose were the saved within the ancient nation of Israel. *And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God. (Galatians 6:16)* The Israel of God according to Galatians 6:16 is the body of believers. The name Israel means "prince with God" and no unbeliever can be a prince with God. To be a prince or child of God, one must be saved. It is salvation by grace and not by race. When a person becomes saved does God transplant them to the land of Israel? The answer is no, when a person becomes saved they normally remain in the country of their birth till their last day. A person who becomes saved now has dual citizenship. They are citizens of their earthly country and now citizens of Heaven which is the land which God gives the true believer for an everlasting covenant. *Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God; (Ephesians 2:19)*

{8} He hath remembered his covenant for ever, the word which he commanded to a thousand generations. {9} Which covenant he made with Abraham, and his oath unto Isaac; {10} And confirmed the same unto Jacob for a law, and to Israel for an everlasting covenant: {11} Saying, Unto thee will I give the land of Canaan, the lot of your inheritance: (Psalm 105:8-11)

Notice what is in view in verse 10. God confirmed an everlasting covenant he made with Abraham and his oath unto Isaac. Then he confirmed the same covenant which he made an irrevocable law and to Israel for an everlasting covenant. Which covenant did God make that is everlasting? It is the covenant of grace which extends into eternity. The covenant of Sinai which is the covenant of works will extend into eternity in only one fashion and that is through eternal damnation because no one would have been able to keep the law perfectly and those who tried to keep the law have failed meaning they broke the law of God and thus were sentenced to eternal damnation because they had no Savior, in other words, the penalty associated with the first covenant will go into eternity. Then it speaks of the land of Canaan which must be everlasting because the covenant associated with it is everlasting. The land of Canaan is a synonym for Heaven.

Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD; and the people whom he hath chosen for his own inheritance. (Psalm 33:12)

{3} Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus

Christ from the dead, {4} To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, (1 Peter 1:3-4)

Psalms 33:12 states that God chose a people for his own inheritance and the ones he has chosen are those in Christ. *According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (Ephesians 1:4)* What did Jesus say to the rebellious Jews who faced him? It is found in Matthew 21:43 that the kingdom of God will be taken away from rebellious Israel and given to another nation that will bring forth fruits. That nation is the body of believers which is being built until all the elect in the world are saved. *Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. (Matthew 21:43)* Then once all the believers in the world are saved which includes both Jews and Gentiles, then all Israel will be saved. *And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: (Romans 11:26)* Remember what Isaiah 14:1 states that “strangers will be joined to them and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob.” The strangers were the Gentiles in the world. *That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: (Ephesians 2:12)* The covenants of promise was the everlasting covenant made by God to Abraham.

1 Peter 1:3-4 confirms the teaching of both Psalm 33:12 and Isaiah 14:1. Remember that Isaiah 14:1 states that the LORD will have mercy on the house of Jacob. 1 Peter 1:3 speaks about the abundant mercy on those he saved. The house of Jacob is a synonym for the body of believers because it was through Jacob and then Judah and through his descendants that the Lord Jesus Christ came and those who have become saved are called “spiritual Jews.” {28} *For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. (Romans 2:28-29)*

### **Malachi 3:10**

Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.

Giving funds to a compromised media ministry or dedicating your life to a church that does nothing is both a waste of the Lord’s funds and a waste of your life. Personal ministry is basically the heart of Christianity. I wish to encourage every Christian reading this section that you have a personal ministry beyond check writing. When churches tout that you should be tithing to them and they use Malachi 3:10 to enforce it, they are twisting Scripture to fleece you.

During the time of ancient Israel when the temple was the central place of worship, the people brought a tithe of everything they produced from money to spices. This was done so the work of the temple would continue as it was the central place where God was

worshipped and where the people received their training and studies from the Hebrew Scriptures. Then comes the cross where everything had changed. No longer is the physical temple the central point of worship. The temple would be destroyed by General Titus in 70 A.D. and would no longer be in existence. The temple would no longer be a physical building but would now be the body of believers.

Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? (1 Corinthians 3:16)

What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Corinthians 6:19)

As you can plainly see that the temple is no longer a building but the Scriptures teach that the body of believers is the eternal temple. Now we see this in the verse in 1 Corinthians 3 that the corporate body of believers is the temple and in 1 Corinthians 6 we read that the individual believer is the temple. Since the temple is no longer a building this means that the concept of the physical church being the continuation of the physical temple has no biblical backing whatsoever. Since there was only one central temple in Israel and there are well over 50,000 churches in the United States alone, then which singular church would be the qualifying temple? The answer is simple, none of them because the temple is now the body of believers and local churches are nothing more than meeting places for the body of believers.

Now since the temple has been changed from a physical building to the body of believers, this also means the storehouse has also been changed since there is no physical temple to store things. The storehouse is now the Kingdom of God otherwise known as the body of believers. Whenever you make money and put aside a portion of that income for ministry and have not yet disbursed it, it is in the storehouse. Let's say you have put fifty dollars aside weekly for ministry. You give twenty five to your church and hold back twenty five because you want to buy a Bible and keep it on hand to give it away to someone who needs one. Giving a Bible to someone is just as much ministry as giving to your church. The next week you want to go hand out tracts downtown in your city. So you need at least forty dollars to do that so you give ten to your church and hold back forty dollars and purchase tracts with them. Let's say you purchased 500 tracts and then went to the street and handed them all out. Let us say your church has 100 people in it. Your pastor reached 100 people on Sunday with his sermon but you reached 500 people which was five times the number your pastor reached. Are you beginning to see how much larger your personal ministry can be than even your local church?

My personal website receives between two to three thousand unique visitors every day which means in a seven day period I am reaching between 14,000 and 21,000 people weekly. In May 2019 I had 283,594 page views which comes out to 9148 page views per day which comes out to 381 per hour. My website cost \$209 per year to keep on line. That is 57¢ per day which means I am reaching 2-3,000 people per day for less than the price of a cup of coffee. Do you see the vast reaches of personal ministry? It can be greater than the largest mega-churches. A great benefit of personal ministry is that you can control what material you send out or post. When you give to a church or media ministry, you are hoping the preacher teaches something which is biblical and not

personal or through a biased belief system. When you have your own personal ministry, you do not have to concern yourself with appeasing diverse crowds to keep the money flowing in. You can concern yourself with spreading materials or teachings that are only based in scripture and you do not have to worry about the media minister pocketing a good portion of donations for himself. You will be in total control of the finances and only what you see fit and proper will you then send out to the masses.

One thing about personal ministry is that you may have to spend a large amount of time performing it but the benefits are worth it. If you engage in personal ministry, people can contact you personally and you can be involved in their spiritual growth or just answer questions. Try and personally meet with any media minister and you will find many buffers between you and them. The majority of them think they are so profound that they can't be bothered with ordinary Christians but their ministry will sure cash your check and then send a form letter back to you thanking you along with another envelope. Don't concern yourself about the fact that you cannot give a tax deductible receipt because you would be more concerned with getting the truth out. Many Christians see the IRS as their benefactor and will not give unless they get that receipt. They forget that the essence of ministry is to get the truth of Jesus Christ out to the world and not whether they can deduct their donation from their taxes. You will wind up funding your own ministry and do not fall for the belief that you are not engaged in ministry because you don't support media ministries. If you are getting the truth of the gospel out to the world, then you are engaging in ministry. There was no media ministry before radio was invented so all ministry was done on a personal basis. Once media ministry invaded the airwaves, ministry then became impersonal and focused on the main speaker not whether truth was getting out. Preachers hid behind microphones and cameras and ceased to interact with the people just like today. The only time you see these famous preachers is when they are on stage in a roundtable as if they all think they have nail prints in their hands.

Personal ministry is just that, personal, and it can be a great part of your life. You will not have to concern yourself if the ministry you support compromises because if you are doing personal ministry, then you control the content of your preaching and teaching. You do not need a seminary degree to do ministry. In fact, those with seminary degrees are the ones responsible for the horrendous condition the church and the media ministries are in. As I said above they are compromised because they need to tell the people what they want to hear to keep the donations coming in so they can continue their ivory tower existence. Never criticize the fact that if you do personal ministry and it does not get big that you are not making an impact. Every ministry operates on the principle of the ripple effect. If you throw a stone in a pond, the stone only goes in one time but the effect of that stone is seen as the ripples go out from the center to the edge of the pond. That is the same with ministry. No matter how small it is, it will have an impact and on who it impacts is the Lord's business.

For who hath despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel with those seven; they are the eyes of the LORD, which run to and fro through the whole earth. (Zechariah 4:10)

So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. (Isaiah 55:11)

Two major principles of ministry we find in these verses. The first one we read in Zechariah 4:10 where the scripture speaks about despising the day of small things. The words “small things” in the Hebrew carries with it the meaning of “least in quantity or size.” Never worry about the fact that your ministry may remain small all your life because any ministry done in truth will have an impact on someone. My physical ministry has remained small since it is still relegated to the Internet through a computer but the website reaches over 150 countries each month. Not bad for one computer tucked away in a bedroom. Did I ever think my site would have that much outreach? No I didn’t, even though I know the Internet is worldwide so that brings in the second principle. The word of God will go out from his mouth which today is through his written word and it will accomplish what it set out to do. The word “accomplish” in the Hebrew carries with the meaning of “to do, to make, finish” and is one of the most widely used words in the Hebrew scriptures. Whomever God gets his word to, it will accomplish in their lives what God wants it to and that could mean from salvation to discipline to encouragement to judgment. Whether God’s word is proclaimed through a large ministry or a small ministry, it will have an impact on people if it is proclaimed in truth. Your physical ministry may remain small all your life like mine has. The impact is unknown to me at this time but occasionally I hear from people from different countries around the world.

Just recently I received a letter from Nigeria requesting 48 Bibles to different ministries, pastors, and churches. I placed a fundraiser on my Facebook page and sent notices to many I know. I needed to raise \$1380 for the project and the money has come in so the Bibles can now be sent. What ripple effect will that have? I won’t know till I get to glory but the fact is that the Lord has given me this task and other brothers and sisters were happy to join in the effort and all without tax deductible receipts being issued. So if you are open to personal ministry, you never know from day to day where the Lord will take you in the area of ministry. Will those Bibles have a ripple effect when they are used to preach the gospel? They sure will! So don’t compare the size of your ministry to other ministries. Remember the larger the ministry the most likely it is already compromised. Stay small and stay true and your ministry will be used of the Lord for his accomplishing purposes.

### **Matthew 5:9**

Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

This beatitude speaks of the fact that those who bring peace will be called the children of God. Once again the key phrase is, “children of God.” One cannot be a child of God unless they are truly saved. Now a saved person will try to bring peace among those involved in strife but the meaning goes much deeper than that. *If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men. (Romans 12:18)* The truest meaning of this verse goes much beyond just physical peace among people or nations. *Therefore being*

*justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: (Romans 5:1) Every single unsaved person on earth is at war with God because of their sin and rebellion, and that includes religious people. The true child of God, one that is saved, brings the true Gospel to as many people as they can. If God saves any, then they are no longer at war with God but are now at peace with Him. The true peacemaker is the child of God who desires to see others reconciled to God through the Lord Jesus Christ. When you hand out tracts, support missions, or true ministries, you are being a peacemaker because you are trying to get people reconciled to God through salvation in Christ so the war would be over. The disciples of Jesus went to many places to bring the true Gospel and as they did, they were being peacemakers, even though many of them caused riots by the unbelievers. And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre. (Acts 19:29) Ephesus was a good example.*

### **Matthew 7:1**

Judge not, that ye be not judged.

*Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. (John 7:24) Before we delve into the meaning of 7:1, we must understand that judging is a necessary part of the Christian life. In John 7:24, we have an admonition and a principle to judge by. The Pharisees had judged Jesus guilty of violating the Sabbath by making a man whole but when proper analysis was made of the accusation, the Jews were guilty of doing the same thing, that is, they were working on the Sabbath by doing circumcision. This is why quick and biased judgments are dangerous. The very ones who accused the Lord Jesus Christ of violating the law were doing it way before He was even born and none of them were ever stoned to death for that crime.*

This verse is not stating that Christians should never judge a situation but that the judgments must be made righteously with all information. For example, a man should not accuse another of committing adultery when he, himself, has his eye on his neighbor when she is sunbathing by the pool. That would be as hypocritical as the Pharisees working on the Sabbath and then accusing Jesus of doing the same thing. It would be like the manager of an open Burger King calling up McDonalds 11 AM Sunday morning and accusing them of being open on Sunday. Christians must make judgments all the time because we are to test the Spirits or the teachings we hear. No true Christian would go into a Mormon Church or a Roman Catholic Church because they know the doctrines are false and misleading. Judgment is necessary for our own spiritual good but it must be done properly and not in haste or in a biased manner.

Now back to 7:1. As noted above the Pharisees and Sadducees would always be judging others, especially if they were poor. If one was sick or crippled, they would judge them as being under God's judgment for some type of sin that either they committed or a family member. Remember in John 9 when Jesus and His disciples came upon the blind man and the question they asked Jesus? *And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? (John 9:2) They were asking this question because they were under that type of teaching and they believed that anyone in*

the condition was being punished by God for their sins. Jesus quickly refocuses their mind to the proper answer. *Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. (John 9:3)* In reference to the man's blindness, it was not caused by a sin in his life or his family's. This man was created blind so Jesus could heal the blindness and the glory would go to God. So here is a great example of making a judgment without the right information.

In 7:1, Jesus is warning his hearers and us that we are not to make scathing judgments against anyone. We are never to make condemning judgments against someone else simply because it is not our place to judge the person since we do not know the motives and the reasons why a person is doing something. For example, a man comes to church in old clothes and is unable to put money in the collection plate because he never seems to have any money. So some people start saying that he does not have any money because he spends his money on alcohol and other evil things and that is why he never comes out of his house either. Then that story starts spreading around the church until everyone actually believes it because if you tell a story enough times, it gets embellished with more lies and becomes an established truth. Then someone from the church goes and visits this young man and he welcomes them into his home. They were going to speak to him about his drinking and his appearance until they were shocked to see what they found. In another room is a hospital bed and in that bed was an elderly man who has terminal cancer. The elderly man was the father of the younger man and he was taking care of him. The reason the younger man did not seem to have any money was because he was spending it all on the care of his father. So the younger man was sacrificing his own life and appearance to care for his father. They then went back to the pastor and told him what they found and the whole church was ashamed at what they thought. You see, one person made an erroneous judgment on another person and it mushroomed until it became the standard story and then the whole church was ashamed.

This was only a story but it is what happens when we make scathing judgments about someone without knowing the whole story. God is the only one who has all the details and can make a proper judgment and that is why we must steer clear of making railing judgments. The Greek word for "judge" is the word "krino" which carries with it the meaning of "decision" and as Christians we must make decisions in our life all the time. We must decide what church to attend, where to live, who to marry, where to work, etc. Judging is a necessary and daily part of the Christian life.

### **Matthew 16:24**

Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

Deny - Utterly deny

Follow - Cleave steadfast to

How many times have we heard someone proclaim "that's a cross I have to bear" when they are speaking about a family situation, a personal situation, or a job situation? Is that what the verse is pointing to, that every tough situation in this world means we are

bearing a cross? The meaning of this verse is much more than that. We must never let the world define our understanding of the Bible.

Jesus explains to his disciples that to be His disciple, one must take up their own cross and follow Him. The word “follow” is in the Imperative mood making it a command of Jesus. What Jesus is telling them is right on the heels of what he told Peter. *But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. (Matthew 16:23)* To follow Jesus is to be dead to self and all the accoutrements of the world. A follower of Jesus must utterly deny themselves and give themselves fully to the Gospel and sometimes it may even cost a Christian their life. One only needs to look at church history to see how many gave their lives in the service of Christ because they would not come down from their cross. It is not a question of just going to church or once in a while doing some work but it is a question of being sold out to the Lord Jesus Christ, always being ready to advance the Kingdom of Christ. Remember the famous line of D.L. Moody? “The world has yet to see what God can do with a man fully consecrated to him. By God’s help, I aim to be that man.” The natural man will try as best as he can to make life easy for himself but the Lord promises no such easy road. The cross was an instrument of cruelty but the Christian taking up their cross is an instrument of self-denial, and that is not just words but a lifestyle.

For hundreds of years the Christians looked back to the time when the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross to pay for the sins of the Elect. It was the only time in eternity that the Lord Jesus Christ was separated from His Father because of all the sins that were placed upon Him as our substitutionary sacrifice for sin. The Holy Father could not look upon His Son as He allowed Him to pay for the sins of the Elect. This is why Jesus had cried out with the question that why did His God forsake Him. It was a time of suffering, not only physically but spiritually and none of us mortals will ever be able understand what really took place. This is because the sacrifice of Christ is still a great mystery, that God the Son had died for the sins of sinful man. Crucifixion was a painful death yet the Bible tells us that the Lord Jesus Christ looked beyond the cross to the joy that it would bring. *Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (Hebrews 12:2)*

This verse is revealing as it teaches us that Christ endured the agony of the cross for the joy it would later bring. The word “despising” carries with it the meaning of “setting aside.” The Lord Jesus Christ did not dwell upon the hardship that He was facing because of the cross, He knew that what He was doing was going to yield eternal life for millions of Christians. His final sacrifice was the catalyst for eternal joy for millions. What a great testimony this leaves for the Christians of today. Many times we ponder what ministries we want to get involved in and then instead of looking beyond the hardships of that ministry, we will dwell upon the rejection and opposition that we will face. This is the time that we need to “set aside” those hardships and continue on in the work of the Lord and look at the joys which are set before us. When your faithfulness in ministry yields fruit, that is eternal fruit, and a few minutes of sacrificed time here on earth is nothing compared to eternity with the Lord Jesus Christ.

The crucifixion of Christ not only purchased our salvation but it also yielded some principles for Christian living which is summarized in the above verse. When we read the phrase inside the verse, “and take up his cross,” it gives us the essence of the Christian life. I am sure when the Lord Jesus was walking the roads, He and His disciples probably saw some criminals be crucified and when the Lord made that statement that if someone is to be His disciple that they are to take up their cross, it probably made the disciples think a lot harder about their mission in life and what it really meant to be a Christian. Living the crucified Christian life has been a teaching which is now almost absent from any and all preaching. Let me ask you a question. What are you doing to advance the Kingdom of God in the sphere where the Lord has placed you? Could it be that your life is fruitless simply because you are not living the Crucified life? You will never hear the message of living the crucified life from TV preachers like Benny Hinn, Ken Copeland, T. D. Jakes, or others. This message is conspicuously absent from churches too. In fact, the last sermon I heard preached on that subject was many years ago from Dr. Charles Stanley. What I would like to do is look at some principles of living the crucified life from the message of the cross and see how we may apply it to our daily living.

### **You are placed there by others and the needs of others**

When a person was crucified they never walked happily and cheerfully to the cross, they were taken in chains and then laid on the cross and nailed to it. The Lord Jesus Christ was nailed to the cross by professional executioners but it wasn't the nails that held Him it was the need of the Elect who were named before the foundation of the world. Their need was salvation and God's salvation plan needed to be completed on the Earth to secure their salvation. The Lord Jesus went to the cross knowing full well it was for others He was dying. He saw the needs of the Elect. This is what we must do. We must see the needs of those who are not yet saved and bring the Gospel to them. God is the one who brings us into the Kingdom by means of salvation. He saves those He named before the foundation of the world. As the executioners placed Jesus on His cross, in essence, God Himself places us on our cross so we too can look beyond it and see the spiritual needs of others.

### **You must bear it alone**

There is one thing about the cross and that is that you must face your cross alone. No one can do it for you. Could God have sent someone else to replace Jonah when he fled? Of course He could, but God gave Jonah that assignment and He will not allow us to be rebellious or set the course of our lives according to our comfort level. If God gives you a ministry, it is yours alone and no one else can do it. Too many people think that they are bearing a cross if they have a disease or if a family member is rebellious, or something to that effect. Taking up the cross of Christ has only to do with discipleship in the Kingdom of God and has nothing to do with social circumstances. The cross of every Christian is a personally designed cross.

### **There will be suffering**

The crucified person will suffer great pain. Many times God calls on His people to do the same, not always in the physical realm but in the emotional realm when we will suffer rejection, be hated by many people, be abandoned by friends, people will make fun of you, even Christians will forsake other Christians if they try to force them out of their comfort zone. Probably one of the major sufferings you must endure will be loneliness.

You will be hated by the very people you are trying to save from the pits of Hell. *In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; (2 Timothy 2:25)*

### **You face one way**

The crucified person faces only one way because the nails are holding them fast to the cross. The true crucified Christian looks only one way and that is to Christ. They are not deterred from their mission in this life by anyone. Nehemiah knew this principle. When he was building the wall, his enemies came to him and tried to get him to stop the work for a while and come down but his response is as follows. *And I sent messengers unto them, saying, I am doing a great work, so that I cannot come down: why should the work cease, whilst I leave it, and come down to you? (Nehemiah 6:3)* As Nehemiah knew that the enemy wanted him to stop the work and have a meeting with them. How many times you have planned to do something in Kingdom work and then all of a sudden someone derails you with suggestions of their own. It may not sound bad what they are proposing, but they are really taking you away from the Lord's work. For example, you may want to take a week's vacation and go on a short term missionary trip but one of your friends comes along and tries to get you to do something else. You can't do both, you can only do one. The Christian who lives the crucified life will not be diverted from their desire to do the Lord's work. God will give you times of rest and that rest will be sweeter than your own planned rest.

### **You cannot remove yourself**

The crucified person will be unable to remove themselves simply because they are nailed to the cross. God will give you a ministry and will enable you to perform it. You may not like the ministry at first or you may feel overwhelmed but keep in mind, whatever God gives you He will enable you to do it. *Thy shoes shall be iron and brass; and as thy days, so shall thy strength be. (Deuteronomy 33:25)* There is no way that God will give you a ministry and then abandon you to your own strength, since the strength of the flesh is weak. God promises us that He will give us the strength to match every day's challenges. We must never adopt the mindset of Jonah and think that we can run from the ministry that God has given us in hopes that He will replace us. Keep in mind the principle found in the following verse. *Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. (John 15:2)* Notice the phrase within the verse "in me" which means the Lord is speaking of believers. This means that if a believer refuses to involve themselves in Kingdom work, God reserves the right to take that believer home or to remove them from any further Kingdom work which means years of reasonless existence. How bad that would be for a Christian to live a fruitless life.

### **You face the heat of the day**

When a person was crucified, it was done in the morning so they would face the heat of the day. In the Middle East, it got very hot during the day and that added to the pain of the crucifixion. When we get into the ministry, we will bear the heat of the day, in other words, we will bear the heat of ministering to a world that does not want to be ministered to. That is not our concern, we are to be involved no matter how much heat we take from the world or even other Christians. Those who hate the most are the hungriest of all.

### **The suffering will end**

As in all things in this world, the crucified person will eventually face the end of their ordeal. However, the ordeal does end in death. This principle is major in the Christian life. Once we live a crucified life, we will be dead to ourselves but alive unto the things of the Lord. The essence of Christian commitment is to be dead to oneself and alive to others. *God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? (Romans 6:2)* Another benefit of living the crucified life is that you will be dead to the things of the world. You will be dead to sin and the allurements of it. The Apostle Paul, who definitely lived the crucified life has given us this principle. *But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. (Galatians 6:14)* The principle in this verse is two-fold: The crucified Christian is dead to the things of the world and the things of the world are dead to the Christian. No longer do we live by enticements or sinful anticipations because the crucified life has removed the overwhelming desires to sin. Will we still commit sin? Yes, because we are still in a body that lusts after sinful things and is tied to the natural things of this world. However, the sin becomes the exception rather than the rule. Once sinful tendencies are reduced in strength, then you will see how wonderful the ministry of the Lord is, no matter what He has given you. Sin tends to block the beauty of the ministry of the Lord and obscures the joy that we could have. Sin always tries to replace the joy that the Christian has in Christ.

These few principles of crucifixion have barely scratched the surface of this teaching but they will suffice to convey the truth that it is necessary for a Christian, who wants to enjoy the fullness of the Christian life, must live a crucified life, one which is wholly dedicated to the Lord Jesus Christ.

### **Matthew 24:36**

But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

God states emphatically in this verse that no man will ever know the day and hour of the return of Christ. The term "no man" is in the cardinal form in the Greek making it a specific number. It is the word "oudeis." That fact illuminates the reality that not one man on earth will ever know the day or hour. Cardinal form means a specific number like one or two in contrast to the ordinal form which would be translated first or second. The word is only used in the cardinal form in seven inflections and over 100 times in the New Testament. Its meanings are "none, no one, not one, in no way, nothing, worthless, no." Some uses of the word which illustrate this are found in the following verses:

**No man** can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. (Matthew 6:24)

But of that day and *that* hour knoweth **no man**, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32)

And **no man** putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. (Luke 5:37)

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: **no man** cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)

Each of these four verses uses the same word as used in Matthew 24:36. Notice that the same word is used in John 14:6 when Jesus states that no man cometh unto the Father but by Him. This means that not one person in all of creation can come to the Father except through Christ. This is the essence of the cardinal form when it speaks of not even one. The word in Matthew 24:36 is also in the Nominative Case. The Nominative Case is the naming case. It is used to show the subject of a sentence or a clause. This means that God is emphasizing the fact that NO ONE will ever know the exact timing of the Lord's return. The word is also in the Nominative Case in the other four verses above and we see the emphasis in John 14:6 that NO MAN comes to the Father except through Christ.

So now when we do a comparison of John 14:6 and Matthew 24:36, we see that the emphasis is on NO MAN. The logic is like this, if a man can come to the Father without Christ, then that means one can also know the day and hour of Christ's return. God has written it to us very plainly and used the same words to emphasize the fact that that NO MAN can come to the Father without Christ and that same word also states unequivocally that no man will ever know the day or hour of Christ's return. One more principle concerning the word and its usage. There is absolutely no time frame connected with this word which means it is in effect until the last day.

#### **Matthew 27:11**

And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

For two millennia the normal teaching is that Jesus was the king of the Jews. This can be taken from Zechariah 9:9. *Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. (Zechariah 9:9)* Of course, this verse deals strictly with the triumphal entry of Jesus into Jerusalem on Palm Sunday, the week before Resurrection Day.

{4} All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,  
{5} Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. (Matthew 21:4-5)

So we see that in both the Old Testament and in the New Testament that Jesus is referred to as the king of the Jews. However, in these instances He is not specifically referred to as the King of the "Jews" just as their King. The term King of the Jews is used 17 times in the four Gospels and not to be found anywhere else in the New Testament.

Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. (John 19:21)

In John 19:21, we read that the Jews wanted the inscription over Jesus on the cross to be changed from “King of the Jews” to “he said, I am King of the Jews.” I have found nowhere in Scripture where Jesus ever claimed to be King of the Jews. He did, however, accept the title of “King of the Jews” from Pilate.

{2} And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King. {3} And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it. (Luke 23:2-3)

Notice in Luke 23:2-3. In verse 2 the Jews were accusing Christ of claiming to be a king but if you will notice in verse 3, it is Pilate who then adds to their words and calls Jesus “King of the Jews.”

We read the same scenario in John 18:33-34 and ask Jesus if He was King of the Jews? Then Jesus responds to Pilate by asking him if he is asking on his own or did others tell you that about me?

{33} Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? {34} Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me? (John 18:33-34)

Then Pilate continues on questioning Jesus concerning why the chief priests have delivered Jesus to him.

Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? (John 18:35)

Now the next two verses are pivotal verses in understanding the term “King of the Jews.” The first verse is John 19:15. At the trial of Christ, Pilate was trying to get Jesus released because Pilate knew that Jesus was innocent and that He was delivered to him for envy and jealousy. *For he knew that for envy they had delivered him. (Matthew 27:18)* Then in John 19:15, Pilate asks a straightforward question, “Shall I crucify your King?” Then the response comes back to Pilate, “We have no king but Caesar.” This is very important because it now shows that Jesus was not king of the physical nation of Israel.

But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar. (John 19:15)

Then what seals the deal on this subject is the final verse which deals with the kingdom that Jesus is the King of. We find the answer to that in John 18:36:

Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence. (John 18:36)

Here Jesus details the fact that His kingdom is not on this earth because if it was, then His

servants would fight to free Him from two things: Rome who is about to crucify Him and notice what other information he reveals, “that I should not be delivered to the Jews.” If Jesus came as King of the physical Jews, then why would He use the term “delivered to the Jews?” This information is also applicable to the false teaching of a mythical thousand year reign that the kingdom of Jesus is not on this earth and will not be set up as such.

Now then, if Jesus is not king of the physical Jews here on earth and His kingdom is in Heaven, then what do we do with the 17 usages of the term “king of the Jews.” Remember when Jesus said to Peter, Get thee behind me Satan? Jesus was not calling Peter Satan because Satan has no chance of ever being saved but Peter was going to be saved. So Jesus looked beyond the earthly desire of Peter of not wanting Christ to go to the cross and spoke directly to the spiritual aspect of it, and that is, if Jesus did not go to the cross, then salvation would be non-existent. Now in the Scriptures, using the same principle of interpretation, we look beyond the earthly meaning of “King of the Jews” and lo and behold, a beautiful understanding emerges.

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. (Romans 2:28-29)

Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: (Romans 9:6)

And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: (Romans 11:26)

And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise. (Galatians 3:29)

And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God. (Galatians 6:16)

For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. (Philippians 3:3)

Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. (Revelation 3:12)

And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. (Revelation 21:2)

The terms “Jew, Israel, Circumcision, Abraham’s Seed” all took on new meanings after the cross:

1. Abraham's seed is the Christian.
2. The true circumcision is the Christian.
3. A biblical Jew is a Christian
4. The Israel of God is the Church.
5. The "all Israel" that God has in view for salvation is not national Israel but it is the completion of the body of Christ at the last day.

Therefore we can safely conclude that Jesus is not the king of the physical Jews as the pre-tribbers conclude but Jesus is King of the Jews, that is, King of all the true believers who have become born again. Jesus reigns over the body of believers. *But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end. (Hebrews 3:6)* Notice that Hebrews 3:6 states that Christ is over His own house, which is the body of believers, where it reads "whose house we are," which means He rules over the Christians worldwide. This is why He told Pilate that His kingdom was not of this world because it would have been limited to one small nation, instead Christ is king over the body of believers on a worldwide scale. Today Christ rules the body of believers from the right hand of God the Father, thus making Him, "King of the Jews," that is, spiritual Israel, the Israel of God that He purchased with His own blood.

Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood. (Acts 20:28)

Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. (Hebrews 9:12)

Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate. (Hebrews 13:12)

And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, (Revelation 1:5)

Therefore the conclusion is obvious. The physical Jews have no king but Caesar. The Christian has no king but Jesus! So Jesus is the King of the Jews, that is, those who are born again!

### **John 1:12-13**

{12} But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

Those of Israel did not receive the Lord Jesus Christ because they did not know Him. Now here John turns to a different aspect of receiving Him, In the previous verse, it was speaking of receiving Him as the Messiah on a national level. *He came unto his own, and*  
218

*his own received him not. (John 1:11)* John is now making the receiving of the Lord Jesus Christ a personal thing and not something which is done nationally. He now turns to the real way a person receives the Lord Jesus Christ and that is for salvation. When a person receives the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal savior, they are given the authority or the right, to claim that they are a child of God. It is one of the cardinal tenets of salvation.

Now I have heard this verse used by many who believe in free will, that is, they believe that all you have to do is believe on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and you will be saved. Now there is a problem with espousing such a belief. First of all, believing is a work which means that a person is doing a work to initiate their salvation and this is not taught in the Scriptures. Secondly, a person is spiritually dead so it will be impossible for a spiritually dead person to activate some type of belief. *Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved:)* (Ephesians 2:5) The dead can do only one thing and that is remain dead unless they are resurrected.

There is only one way a person can receive the Lord Jesus Christ as their savior and that is a qualified response. First of all, a person becomes saved through grace and they receive it without asking for it. Secondly, that person is indwelt by the Holy Spirit and are given faith as a fruit of the Spirit. *But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, (Galatians 5:22)* Now that they have faith, they may believe because they are now spiritually alive. Faith is the basis of belief and only the saved person can believe since they are grounded in faith. The spiritually dead do not have faith since they are not indwelt by the Holy Spirit. This is why many who claim to be saved are not saved because their faith is sourced only in words and not in the Holy Spirit.

In verse 13, it continues the thread from verse 12. Here is a clear statement that a person is not saved by any act of the flesh, which would be any type of work such as those under the law. Many even believe that a person can exercise their will to be saved, that is, a free will to be either accept or reject the Lord Jesus Christ. The unbeliever already rejects the Lord Jesus Christ because of them being spiritually dead. They are in the same boat as the Pharisees, they did not receive Him because they did not recognize Him owing to spiritual deadness. The will of man is only limited to what he can do in the flesh and even that is severely limited. Have you ever seen anyone cure a cold by using their will? The will of man cannot cure a cold never mind will themselves into Heaven. However, this verse ends up stating that those who are born again, or saved, are saved by the will of God. It is God's will who initiates salvation in the life of a believer. If God wills a person to be saved, then it will happen according to His timetable. I became saved at 27 years old. I wasn't cognizant of being born again until God saved me. Salvation, then, is according to God's will and no matter how many words a person says, they cannot save themselves. We only respond to what God initiates and in his timing.

### **John 3:16**

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Whosoever - Everyone, all, or each

Verse 16 opens with a conjunction which means it continues the thread from verse 15. *That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. (John 3:15)* Those who believe on Jesus will have everlasting life. Jesus now widens the information concerning Himself and His Father. He states that God so loved the world, now God takes care of His creation by bringing sun and rain and bringing the seasons but here God's love is qualified in that it is not speaking of the creation of the world and the universe but He is speaking about those Elect whom Jesus came to save that are in the world. This verse is an intimation that eventually Jesus would have disciples in every country and that God loves His children in all the countries in the world. Now since the blood of goats and bulls could not take away sin, the only one who could remove sin from the believer is God Himself. So God the Father sent God the Son into the world to die for His Elect. The term "begotten" means that Jesus had a very unique relationship with His Father, that He is the Son of God. Many of the modern versions change "begotten" into "one and only" which is error because God has many sons but only one begotten son. *Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not. (1 John 3:1)*

This verse is used as a capstone for those who tout free will but the word "whosoever" does not mean that anyone at any time according to their will can become saved. That word "whosoever" carries with it the meaning of "everyone or all." It means everyone or all those whom God has qualified to hear the Gospel and saves them by giving them faith to believe in Jesus and this happens to everyone who God saves. Man is spiritually dead and needs to be raised from the dead and that can only happen when God makes the first move, and that is salvation. We receive salvation before we can believe. *But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, (Galatians 5:22)* A fruit of the Holy Spirit is faith and only those who are saved will receive the Holy Spirit. When we are saved, we are given faith, and then we have the ability to believe. So verse 16 is a declaration that those who are the Elect of God will never perish but have everlasting life. It is not an offer of the Gospel because there is no such thing in Scripture. God applies salvation to the Elect. I know because I did not ask for salvation before I was saved. I was the Elect of God and therefore He applied grace to my life and I became saved.

#### **John 4:24**

God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

Samaria was surrounded by many pagan nations for many years and those pagan nations all had some type of physical representations of their false god, of course, which were all idols. Some were Dagon, Milcom, and Baal. The true God is a spirit and those that worship Him, must do it according to Spirit. This means that a spiritually dead person, the unsaved, cannot truly worship God, because they are spiritually dead, and dead is dead! Those who are born again are indwelt by the Holy Spirit who makes us alive

unto God and teaches us the truth about God and as we come into more and more truth about God from the Scriptures, we continually worship Him as our understanding of God grows. We then come to a realization of what He has done for us, to take us from a hell bound sinner and make us a king and priest in His Kingdom. *And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. (Revelation 5:10)* This is why systems like the Mosaic system cannot really be considered worshipping God because those who are offering the sacrifices of animals are not really spiritually prepared to be in God's presence. If the law requires a certain sacrifice for a certain sin, then even a spiritually dead person can respond in the flesh accordingly. Only a true born again Christian indwelt by the Holy Spirit can worship God in the Spirit because they have a living spirit living in them. {16} *And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; {17} Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. (John 14:16-17)* John 4:24 has nothing to do with the modern speaking in tongues which is nothing more than satanic gibberish.

### **John 19:30**

When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

I am writing this three days before Good Friday 2019. The Lord Jesus Christ was crucified and one of the attendants gave Jesus some vinegar which would only have increased his thirst but as soon as he received it, he said, "It is Finished." This is a very important saying that Jesus made. First of all, his days of suffering were now over as he gave up the ghost and physically died.

Before I comment on John 19:30, I want to dispel a belief which is very common today among churches and Christians yet is nowhere found in the Bible. It is the belief that after Jesus died, he went to hell

For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: {19} By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; {20} Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. (1 Peter 3:18-20)

Here we have three verses which have been very misunderstood and really used in outrageous ways. I have heard these verses misused for many years by those who insist that after Christ died, He went to Hell to preach to the spirits in prison, those of the fallen angels and unbelievers. However, this is far from Biblical truth. When the Lord Jesus died on the cross, He committed His spirit unto His Father and His body went into the grave.

Spirit

And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost. (Luke 23:46)

### Body

And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid. (Luke 23:53)

There are no contradicting Scriptures which teach that anything else happened. If there were conscious souls in Hell at that time, there would be no purpose in bringing them the Gospel, since they would all be under condemnation and could never be saved.

Christ did not go to Hell but He endured the equivalency of an eternity in Hell to pay for the sins of the Believers. One thing we must realize that God never does anything which lacks purpose. The key to understanding this passage is found in verse 20. There we read about Noah who is called “preacher of righteousness.” *And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; (2 Peter 2:5)*

While Noah was preparing the ark, he was also preaching about the coming judgment. This is why he is called “a preacher.” There is one great principle found in verse 20 and I have it pasted in my Bible when I clipped it out of something many years ago, “Noah was faithful to God’s message even though there were no results.”

This is something that we must keep in mind. Many of us want to see instant results when we witness to someone. This is not always the case. Sometimes it does happen but very rarely. We are to remain faithful and vigilant even if there is no visible fruit. Now what does it mean that Christ preached to the spirits in prison? Jesus did not walk the earth at that time, so how could He have preached to the spirits in prison? The answer is simple. The Spirit of Christ was in Noah!

But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. (Romans 8:9)

{10} Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: {11} Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. (1 Peter 1:10-11)

Let us look at the very end of 1 Peter 3:18, “but quickened by the Spirit:” Isn’t every believer in the Lord Jesus Christ quickened (made alive) by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit? We read this in Romans 8:9. The same Spirit quickened the Old Testament Saints as well as all those on the New Testament side of the cross. The Lord Jesus is not walking on earth today, yet He is preaching to the world through His regenerated Saints by the quickening of the Holy Spirit. Jesus is called the “Word of God” and it is through the Word of God we bring the Gospel.

Notice 1 Peter 1:10-11 which state that the Spirit of Christ was in the Old Testament Prophets which preached the grace which would come by Christ. The idea that the Holy

Spirit did not indwell Old Testament Saints is totally disproven by these verses. With the Spirit of Christ in them, they could now preach whatever the Lord would tell them to.

Remember That Noah Found Grace in the Eyes of the Lord

But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. (Genesis 6:8)

Grace in the life of a person is what? Salvation! Noah was a saved individual who preached the word of Christ to his generation. So then what is the prison that is in view? In Isaiah 14, we read about Satan, that he would not open the house of his prisoners.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! {13} For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: {14} I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. {15} Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. {16} They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; {17} That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? (Isaiah 14:12-17)

Isaiah 14:12-17 speaks about Satan and his desire to be like God. In verse 17, the Bible states that he did not open the house of his prisoners. Did Satan have a physical place where he locked up all his prisoners? The answer, of course, is no. The prison being spoken of here is the prison of unbelief. Satan will not allow any of his prisoners to hear and understand the Gospel.

But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: {4} In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:3-4)

Satan's desire is to keep all those who are unbelievers as unbelievers by blinding their minds to the truth of the Gospel so salvation will not take place. While Satan will control many people until the last day, God has committed to save many and those that God will save will hear the Gospel and become saved which means they have been removed from the prison house or the power of Satan.

Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: (Colossians 1:13)

Now let us go back to the time of Noah. What does this translate into? It means that Noah was preaching to all the unbelievers for the duration of the building of the ark. We have seen that those in spiritual prison are the unsaved. When a person becomes saved, they become free.

But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. (Romans 6:22)

## Section Summary

So the prisoners that Christ was preaching to were all the unbelievers at the time of Noah, through Him indwelling Noah with the Holy Spirit. They were not in any special place but were all walking around the earth. How does this apply to us today? Well, it is the same principle, because all the unbelievers are still in spiritual prison and the only way a person becomes free from that prison is by receiving a full "Heavenly Pardon." Once this takes place, they are transferred from the kingdom of darkness to the Kingdom of God as we read in Colossians 1:13. When we look at 1 Peter 3:18-20, we see how much deeper they are than just a "homily in hell." These verses speak of the beauty of salvation which we can all thank God for this day. For we were once a prisoner but now we are set at liberty.

Now let us return to John 19:30. When the Lord Jesus stated that "it" is finished it marked the end of his sufferings as we noted before but the major teaching stemming from that verse is the fact that God's salvation plan was now complete, in that all that the feasts were looking forward to, all that the prophets spoke about and the teachings of Jesus himself. The free will movement believes that when Christ died, he opened the gates for anyone to walk through and that salvation was now available to the "whosoever."

Unfortunately this is another serious error being taught by the free willers because if you notice what the Lord said, "It is finished." He did not say, it is beginning. So what was finished? The Lord Jesus Christ came to save his people. *And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. (Matthew 1:21)* This is where the doctrine of Limited Atonement comes in. Jesus died for his people and not for the whole world. When he died, the Elect were now saved and sealed because Christ fulfilled the demands of God's righteous law on their behalf.

{21} Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God; {22} Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. (2 Corinthians 1:21-22)

In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, (Ephesians 1:13)

And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption. (Ephesians 4:30)

These are the ones who were named by God from the foundation of the world to inherit salvation. Christ came to specifically die for his Elect and as we previously read there is no way Christ died for everyone in the world or else everyone will be saved. This is the error of the free will movement as it is built upon randomness which if one studies the creation and the Bible will not find any. Can you imagine the universe existing by random chance? Don't they call that the Big Bang which is totally ridiculous? Can you imagine if the sun was not controlled by God but by randomness? What would keep the sun from getting closer to the earth and burning it up? How about the fact that the sun rises and sets the same way every day, is this according to randomness or according to

God being in control? Why God has saved some and not others is a mystery. One thing we must keep in mind and free willers ignore this principle too and that is, that man was the one who walked away from God in sin, God did not walk away from the human race. If he did we would all be going to hell. The great miracle is that God chose to save a great multitude from the penalty of hell. He didn't have to he could have just allowed the human race to die out by attrition.

I have a study on line called "The Last Will and Testament of Christ" and you will see according to the Scriptures that it will be legally impossible for anyone who is not named in it to have salvation. Once Christ died, his last will and testament was now in force and included only those who were named in it, that is, the Elect of God. *And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. (Revelation 21:27)* Since unbelievers cannot regenerate themselves, then they are classified as defilers, liars, and those who perform abominations. There is the separation that only those who are written in the Lamb's book of life are qualified to go into heaven.

Let us look at three verses which illustrate the reality that a believer's name is already written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven. (Luke 10:20)

The words "are written" are in the aorist tense. The aorist tense is a tense which indicates a past action.

And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. (Revelation 21:27)

The words "are written" are in the perfect tense. The perfect tense is a primary tense because it emphasizes the present, or ongoing result of a completed past action. Remember, Christ was slain in principle from the foundation of the world and therefore the Lamb's book of Life was completed before the foundation of the world.

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: (Matthew 25:34)

The words "prepared for you" are in the perfect tense which is the result of a past action which was completed. Keep in mind that in the order of the narratives when Luke 10:20 and Matthew 25:34 were penned, it was still before the time of the cross which means what is in view is the past action of the believer being named for salvation and a place being prepared for them in heaven. When you prepare for a wedding, do you prepare say for 100 guests and then throw open the doors for the whole town to come? Of course not, you prepare for those 100 invited guests and that is all you paid for. Just like Christ who paid for the sins of his Elect and that was it!

### Acts 2:38

Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Repent - Change one's mind or be converted

Remission - Deliverance, forgiveness, or suspension of punishment

Peter responded to them, not in the letter of the law concerning some kind of offering instead he responds with the Gospel message. *Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? (Acts 2:37)* The first thing he tells them that they must repent. Repentance is an act whereby your mind is changed about something which leads to a lifestyle commensurate with that change of mind. The word "repent" in the Greek is in the Imperative Mood which means it is a command and not an option. *And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:30)* Repentance is not something that is done before the moment of salvation but repentance is simultaneous with salvation. Repentance is never initiated by man but by God. *In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; (2 Timothy 2:25)* A person being spiritually dead would be unable to do any type of work for salvation. We find in 2 Timothy 2:25 that God is the one who gives repentance so the truth may be acknowledged. Only one that is saved will be able to acknowledge the truth.

Then Peter states that a person must be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sin. This is not speaking of water baptism because there is no way that water baptism can ever remove sins from a person and initiate salvation. The baptism which is in view is not water baptism but it contains two elements. *Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? (Romans 6:3)* The first element is being baptized into the death of Christ. Now this is not speaking of water baptism but the fact that we are baptized into Christ through the spiritual rebirth. That baptism into Christ affects us by giving us a death to the things of the world. We read that we were baptized into His death. When Christ went to the cross, He died for the sins of His Elect but He also showed us that He died to the things of the world. This thought is carried from verse 2 concerning the death of the believer to the things which oppose true Christianity. *God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? (Romans 6:2)* The baptizing that we receive is a uniting of the believer into Christ and into the death of the magnetism and performance of sin. Water baptism is just an outward sign of what happens inwardly when someone becomes saved and has no significance in salvation.

Then Peter goes on to preach that it is to be done in the name of Jesus. These are not just words which are appended to our prayers but the name of Jesus carries with it all the authority of Heaven and the power of Eternal God. For one to be in the name of Jesus, they must be saved by Christ. This is why Peter states that these things must be done in the name of Christ because only He has the authority to save someone. For if a person is granted repentance by God and is baptized into the death of Christ and in the name of Christ, the second element is they are given the gift of the Holy Spirit to indwell them

eternally. Christians are made alive unto the things of God by means of the indwelling Holy Spirit but those in worldly religions are attempting to reach God while remaining dead in their sins. *God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:24)* This is how we truly worship God. Once we are saved, we have the Spirit of God indwelling us and that is how we worship Him in spirit and in truth because the Holy Spirit lead us into all truth. *Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. (John 16:13)* Once we become a person who is spiritually alive, then we worship God the biblical way and not the religious way.

#### Acts 12:4

And when he had apprehended him, he put *him* in prison, and delivered *him* to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

One of the accusations which is leveled at the King James Bible is the translation of the word “pascha” as “Easter.” The word “pascha” is not a Greek word but is from the Aramaic “pascha.” The Herod in view here was Herod Agrippa who was a grandson of Herod the Great and who was Nephew to Herod Antipas who beheaded John the Baptist. They were Idumaeans, which was Edomite. This means that Herod Agrippa was not a Jew but an Edomite. The Edomites were descendants of Esau.

And Esau said to Jacob, Feed me, I pray thee, with that same red *pottage*; for I *am* faint: therefore was his name called Edom. (Genesis 25:30)

Now these *are* the generations of Esau, who *is* Edom. (Genesis 36:1)

Therefore the Herod Dynasty was not in the line of Jacob. It was the king of Edom who did not allow Israel to pass through their land when they came out of the Land of Egypt. *Thus Edom refused to give Israel passage through his border: wherefore Israel turned away from him. (Numbers 20:21)* Archaeology has dug up many clay figures in the area known as Edom. The main gods of the Edomites were the fertility gods of the region. According to Assyrian secular records, it is known that Edom had one national god named “Qos,” however they were hardly monotheistic in that they had other gods. *Now it came to pass, after that Amaziah was come from the slaughter of the Edomites, that he brought the gods of the children of Seir, and set them up to be his gods, and bowed down himself before them, and burned incense unto them. (2 Chronicles 25:14)* If you notice this verse speaks about gods in the plural. There was also evidence of Baal worship. The Bible does not mention any specific gods which the Edomites worshipped. In fact, in the early years they had worshipped Jehovah but after they refused passage to Israel, they started to descend into idolatry. Since they had taken up the local gods of the area, Astarte, would have been one of the gods of the area. Normally wherever Baal was Astarte was also found. Astarte was a deity of fertility. Astarte was known as Aphrodite to the Greeks. Astarte was also known as “Ishtar” which was the goddess of fertility.

These false gods can be found in basically all of these ancient pagan civilizations. So the region of Edom, which was south of Israel, would not have been a stranger to them. These false gods even crept into both Israel and Judah. *The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. (Jeremiah 7:18)* The queen of Heaven was also known as Ishtar the fertility goddess. In our day, we are seeing a resurgence of goddess worship. In Roman Catholicism Ishtar the Queen of Heaven is called Mary.

Now back to Herod's declaration about Peter. Herod was going to wait until after Easter to bring Peter out to the people and no doubt they would have pronounced the same sentence as the Lord Jesus Christ received. Now, there seems to be a difficulty because the word "pascha" should be translated "Passover." Correct? Absolutely not. We owe a great debt to William Tyndale who translated this verse correctly.

(1526 Tyndale) And when he had caught him he put him in preson and delyvered him to .iiii. quaternios of soudiers to be kepte entendynge after ester to brynge him forth to the people.

The reason that Tyndale had translated "pascha" as Easter in this verse was a question of timing.

And in the fourteenth day of the first month *is* the passover of the LORD. {17} And in the fifteenth day of this month *is* the feast: seven days shall unleavened bread be eaten. (Numbers 28:16-17)

And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover? (Mark 14:12)

As we can see that the Passover came first and was followed by the Feast of Unleavened Bread. So if we look at Acts 12:3, we see a very important phrase. *And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.) (Acts 12:3)*

Notice very carefully what it says in the last phrase. It states that these were the days of Unleavened Bread. The Passover was already complete. So therefore, in verse four, it would not make sense if Herod was going to bring Peter out after Passover when the Passover was already over but Peter was still in prison. Since the days of unleavened bread was a feast lasting seven days, we are not told what day this was. It could have been day 6 where Peter was still in prison.

Now enter the word "Easter." Immediately Christians think of the day the Lord Jesus Christ rose from the dead. However, the word "Easter" is a very pagan name. It is derived from "Eostra" which is a pagan festival of Spring. The Bible nowhere commands Christians to celebrate the resurrection or birth of Christ. So when Christianity was turned into a religion by the third century, these pagan holidays were incorporated in the church calendar year but with Christian meanings. For example, Christmas was really the feast

of Saturnalia but the church wanted to cover this pagan festival and therefore instituted Christmas as Christ's birth being on December 25.

Herod being an Edomite and a pagan would not care the least about what festival was taking place. After all, they crucified the Lord Jesus Christ on the preparation day for the High Sabbath and Passover. Why would a pagan king concern himself with the holidays of the Jews? He could have had Peter executed any time he wanted to and during any holiday in the Jewish calendar.

Since Herod was a pagan, he would have been celebrating a feast of Ishtar, the fertility god. This was his "Easter" as he would have been too busy celebrating Ishtar under the name Easter, that he would wait until after his pagan festival was over and then he would get back to his duties and have Peter executed. Easter was a pagan spring festival which occurred simultaneously with Passover and therefore "Easter" is the proper word for Acts 12:4 and not Passover. So the "Easter" in Acts 12:4 is not the Christian "Easter" but it is the pagan Easter.

### **Romans 9:6**

Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

Here Paul reveals that there are two Israels. Previously in Romans 9, Paul was speaking of his kinsman according to the flesh and the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ according to the flesh. The Bible is now revealing that there are two different Israels. The name "Israel" means "prince with God."

There is Israel according to the flesh and Israel according to the Spirit. This is a very important verse as Paul begins by stating that the Word of God was effective in doing what it was supposed to do. When we look back at the history of the nation of Israel from the time they came out of Egypt, we will see two distinct populations. One of them was the people who built the Golden Calf and were the ones who disobeyed God right down through their entire history. Men such as Korah, King Saul, Baalam, etc. Then you also have the history of the men who obeyed God during their history. Men such as Moses, Joshua, David, Nehemiah, etc. What Paul is saying here is that God's Word reached His Elect among the ancient nation of Israel, even though it looked more like it failed in keeping the nation of Israel as a holy people. Nothing could be further from the truth.

The word of God, made a distinction between the Israel in the flesh which was disobedient and the Israel of God which was in the Spirit who were the obedient of God. Thus, we see that Paul speaks of two Israels, one according to the flesh and one according to the Spirit. Those who are born again are of Spiritual Israel, which is the eternal Israel. Paul is saying that just because a person was born in national Israel, does not mean they are part of the eternal Israel. One enters the eternal Israel through redemption through the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ. The true chosen people of God are those chosen for salvation and that is the only chosen people God has. The idea that the modern Talmudic Jews are God's chosen people is nothing more than political heresy which is embraced by

many preachers simply because they will not approach these verses in Romans in truth, instead they approach them through the eyes and writings of well-paid false prophecy pundits who receive much money from the Zionists to make sure Christians keep thinking that the modern Talmudic Jews are God's chosen people. *Which in time past were not a people, **but are now the people** of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy. (1 Peter 2:10)* Notice in this verse it states "the people of God." The direct article means there is no other people of God. {28} *For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. (Romans 2:28-29)* Romans 2:28-29 defines plainly who the real Jews are. Christ came from the tribe of Judah and the name "Jew" is a shortened version of "Judah" so therefore those in Christ are the real Jews.

### **Romans 10:17**

{14} How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? {15} And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! {16} But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? {17} So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:14-17)

Many who advocate free will believe that all you have to do is just hear the gospel being preached and then based on what you hear you make a decision to either accept or reject Christ. The problem is that they do not understand what the word hearing means. Yes there is a physical hearing of the gospel and if a person is deaf then they can read the gospel or have it signed to them. In the Bible there is a word behind the word "hearing or hear" which is tied specifically to the gospel.

For a person to become saved they must understand the Scriptures being expounded and we have learned that an unsaved person is spiritually dead and unable to understand spiritual things, namely the Scriptures. *But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. (1 Corinthians 2:14)* Since the natural man is unable to receive the things of the Spirit of God, then how can a person accept the Lord if they are divinely deprived in that area?

This is explained very well in the following Scripture. *Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, (Luke 24:45)* This Scripture is taken from the section where the two disciples were on the road to Emmaus and met Jesus. They were traveling to Emmaus which would have been about 7½ miles (12 km) from Jerusalem. They were discussing the events which took place over that weekend namely the crucifixion. While they were discussing these things Jesus had joined them and an interesting thing happened. *But their eyes were holden that they should not know*

*him. (Luke 24:16)* At this point they did not recognize Jesus because their spiritual eyes were not yet opened. The word in the Greek text for “were holden” carries with it the meaning of “were restrained.” Now that word is in the passive voice which means that their spiritual eyes were intentionally kept closed by the Lord and not attributed to the ignorance of the disciples. At this time He did not want them to recognize Him.

Why would the Lord keep their eyes closed? Those in the free will movement would not understand this because the initial meeting with the two disciples was not the time of their understanding. They must have travelled a long while because they also decided to make camp for the night and invited Jesus to stay with them. It wasn't until we get to verse 45 when we read that the Lord opened their understanding to the scriptures and at that point they recognized him. Just like He did to the two disciples from Emmaus, if the Lord Jesus does not open the Scriptures to us, we will not understand them and always come to a wrong conclusion. They would now be able to read the Hebrew Scriptures and then come to a proper conclusion concerning the Messiah when they came to passages about Him. No longer would the Scriptures be shrouded but by the Holy Spirit, they will all be open.

{13} Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. {14} And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: {15} For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. {16} But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. (Matthew 13:13-16)

The free willers believe and teach that God wants everyone to be saved. If that is the case, then why in the above verses is the Lord disdainful of the idea of all of Israel becoming saved. Notice the term in verse 15 where it says “...lest at any time...” The free willers throw around the word “whosoever” as if it means any time and any place. Here the Lord is rejecting that idea of salvation being initiated by themselves. Notice in verse 16, the Lord speaks to the disciples that they are blessed because their spiritual eyes and spiritual ears are open.

We finally get to the essence of this chapter concerning the word “hear or hearing” found in Scripture. In the above verse Matthew 13:16 notice the Lord says to the disciples that their ears hear. This is not just speaking about physically hearing the gospel but is speaking about spiritually hearing the gospel. The word behind “hear” in Matthew 13:16 is the Greek word “akouw” which is pronounced “ah-koo-oh” and is used 438 times throughout the New Testament. It means hearing with understanding versus just physical hearing. Remember 1 Corinthians 2:14 at the beginning of this section? If a person is unsaved, that is, in the flesh they cannot understand the things of the Spirit and it is the Holy Spirit who inspired the Scriptures and therefore they must be spiritually discerned. The problem is that unsaved man cannot spiritually discern them because they are not given understanding. When a person becomes saved, then the Lord opens the Scriptures to them as he did to the two disciples on the road to Emmaus. They were with Jesus a while before he opened their understanding. The key is that a person must

become saved first before they can understand the Scriptures because the Holy Spirit will indwell them and then be able to give them understanding of the Scriptures. So it is not just a question of physically hearing the gospel, it is the fact of hearing with understanding and the only way a person understands is when salvation takes place first.

The two disciples on the road to Emmaus were with the Lord Jesus Christ a while before he opened their understanding. This teaches us that a person can hear the gospel being preached a number of times before they are given understanding, that is, before they become saved. Some may hear hundreds of sermons and never become saved because they were not predestined to be saved. Let me give a personal testimony here. When I was 12 years old I purchased a crystal AM radio receiver. When you connected the alligator clip to the screw on an electrical outlet, the whole house then became an antenna. After I went to bed, I would connect the alligator clip and would then listen to the stations I could pick up. At that time I lived 25 miles (40 km) south of New York City where I picked up WOR 710 AM which was a clear channel powerful station. Every Sunday night I would listen to them and they had broadcasted the ministry of blind evangelist Ralph Montanus. He was preaching the true gospel and at the age of 12 I heard the true gospel presented for the first time. However, at that time I did not become saved because it was not my time of visitation. I became saved at the age of 27. So I physically heard the gospel at 12 but did not have the hearing with understanding till I was 27 which was the predestined time of my salvation. If a person hears the gospel and does not respond, it does not mean they are lost for good, it may mean that that particular time was not their time of visitation.

There is another verse which the free willers like to toss around and they believe that it shows that anyone at any time can become saved. It is Revelation 22:17. *And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. (Revelation 22:17)* If you recall I wrote the following. The word “whosoever” does not mean “anytime, anyplace, anywhere, or any time according to their will can become saved.” That word “whosoever” carries with it the meaning of “everyone or all.” That rules out the word “whosoever.” Then we came to another word which we have looked at in detail in this chapter and that is “heareth” which in this verse also is the Greek word “akouw.” Notice how Revelation 22:17 is worded. The word “heareth” is before “come” and “take.” This means that the prerequisite for those is to hear first which means only those who are saved will be thirsty to take the water freely.

*Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. (Matthew 5:6)* Matthew 5:6 answers “And him that is athirst” from Revelation 22:17.

*But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. (John 4:14)* John 4:14 answers “...the water of life freely” from Revelation 22:17.

The fact that it is the “Spirit and the bride” who are bidding means it is only those who have become elected to salvation will respond. *He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous*

*still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. (Revelation 22:11)* Those who are not elected to salvation will remain in their sinful state and those who are saved will remain in their righteous state.

This is personal, when I speak about the doctrine of predestination to someone I tell them I had a hand in saving both my parents before I was even born. I was born May 1, 1953. My father served in World War 2 in the Pacific. One day he was pinned down by a Japanese sniper until the mud Marines came in and quickly rectified that situation. Then in 1947 when my brother Rod was being born, my mother heard the nurse yell to the doctor that they were losing her as she was fading but she was revived. Now how did I save both my parents when I was not yet born. I look back with 20/20 hindsight and in understanding the doctrine of predestination knowing I had to be born so God could save me since he named me before the foundation of the world. *The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Peter 3:9)* 2 Peter 3:9 is erroneously used by the free willers to prove that God wants everyone saved. The real understanding of 2 Peter 3:9 is that none of the Elect whom God named before the foundation of the world will perish and I think that has been proven out in my life. Now I say it jokingly that I saved my parents because it was all of the Lord, after all how could I do any saving or anything if I was not born yet. The bottom line is that the biblical doctrine of predestination saved both my parent's lives. If either of them died, I could not have been born, and if I could not be born, then one of the Elect would perish and that would mean the scripture would be broken. Isn't it amazing how the doctrines of the Bible affect our lives and those around us?

### **Romans 11:26**

And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

The word "so" in the Greek carries with it the meaning of "in this manner" or "in this way." Paul is stating that in this manner, all Israel shall be saved. What manner is that? Now many have erroneously interpreted this verse to mean that sometime in the future all of national Israel is going to be saved. This is a very fallacious interpretation because God is not giving salvation based on a race. The Israel that is going to be saved, is the entire body of Christ and not a physical nation. The body of Christ is an amalgamation of saved Gentiles and Jews. This is how the entire body of Christ is going to be saved. Below are some verses which teach that the Israel in view, is the body of Christ and not a physical nation.

And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God. (Galatians 6:16)

*For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. (Philippians 3:3)* Philippians 3:3 answers the

promise found in Deuteronomy 30:6. *And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. (Deuteronomy 30:6)*

{28} For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. (Romans 2:28-29)

Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: (Romans 9:6)

And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise. (Galatians 3:29)

That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: (Ephesians 2:12)

But Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end. (Isaiah 45:17)

The verse then goes on to say that the Deliverer will come out of Zion and drive ungodliness from Jacob. *And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD. (Isaiah 59:20)* The Deliverer is the Lord Jesus Christ, also known as the Redeemer in Isaiah 59:20. Jacob is another term for the body of Christ because only those whom the Lord saves shall have ungodliness turned away in their lives. Jacob was the believing line where Jesus came through. In other words, the Redeemer makes them clean. Zion is another term for the body of believers. The LORD is great in Zion; and he is high above all the people. (Psalm 99:2) The Israel in view then is not the modern nation of Israel but speaks about the Israel of God which is the body of believers in the Lord Jesus Christ. We also saw that Deuteronomy 30:6 speaks about the LORD circumcising the heart which means making a person spiritually alive and then Paul states in Philippians 3:3, that we, which is the body of Christ, are the recipients of that spiritual cardiac circumcision.

## **Part 2**

### **1 Corinthians 14:21-22**

{21} In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. {22} Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.

There is nothing more divisive in the modern church than the question of tongues. The question which must be posed is, are the tongues of today equal to the tongues of the first century? Before we continue, we should learn a little about the nature of tongues. The word "tongue" or "tongues" in the entire book of 1 Corinthians is the word "glossa" [□□□□□□] which means "language." It is a legitimate, established language. The proof of this lies in Acts 2:1-13. In verse 6, we read there the apostles were heard speaking the languages of all those present at Jerusalem. The word language in vs. 6 is the Greek word "dialektos" [□□□□□□□□□□] which is translated language or tongue. We derive the English word "dialect" from it.

There were about seventeen languages among all those who were present at Jerusalem. We see this according to Acts 2:4, 7, 9-11. The bottom line is that in Acts, the tongues (languages) were all legitimate, established languages. Now comparing the tongues of Acts with modern day tongues, we find an inconsistency to the biblical paradigm. The tongues of the modern day church are unintelligible gibberish and therefore do not identify with the biblical standard. Any teaching which does not conform to biblical standards does not find its source in God but in Satan. The tongues in Corinth were an aberration of the biblical standard set forth in Acts. About 22 years had passed between Pentecost and the letter to Corinth which is sufficient time to create a false doctrine.

The tongues of Acts did not require an interpreter, while those of Corinth did. The tongues of Acts edified while the tongues of Corinth caused confusion. When someone spoke in tongues, whether in Acts or in Corinthians, it was a legitimate gift from God to send forth the gospel. All biblical tongues until the completion of the Bible were legitimate and carried messages from God, which is considered revelation. However, when the Bible was completed with the book of Revelation about 95 A.D., God declared there would be no more revelation. He declares this in Revelation 22:18-19; Deuteronomy 4:2; 12:32; and Proverbs 30:6. If today's tongues are legitimate, then we have a contradiction in the Bible because God said verbal discourse would cease.

Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it. (Deuteronomy 12:32)

Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar. (Proverbs 30:6)

{18} For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: {19} And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this

prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. (Revelation 22:18-19)

There are no contradictions in the Bible and revelation has ceased. There are many false gospels in this world which boast of speaking in tongues. This fact alone would cause me to be suspect of tongues. How could I be sure what I am doing is of God if those who hold false gospels that reject Christ are doing the same thing. The answer is simple, I would want nothing to do with it. I once held a discussion with a charismatic and I asked him the following question, "Have you obeyed everything in the Scriptures?" He said, "no," then I proceeded to ask him why would he want more revelation? Tongues must be avoided because on the coat tail of tongues come the other companions in false ministry: visions, dreams, signs and wonders, false prophecies, and miraculous healing. The easiest method for determining whether a church is true or not is if they seek these supernatural events. If they do, they are false. If the authority of the church is confined to the Bible alone with no other authority, except Christ, then you have a true church. The two most warning packed verses in 1 Corinthians 14 are Verses 21 and 22.

In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. (1 Corinthians 14:21)

An interesting insertion is made by Paul under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit which seemingly has nothing to do with the flow of discourse in Chapter 14. Paul makes reference to Isaiah 28:11-12 which was a warning to Jerusalem.

{11} For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. {12} To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. (Isaiah 28:11-12)

They rejected the words of God's prophets which were sent to them in their own language and now judgment was to come on them. The vehicle of judgment God used were the fierce Babylonians who spoke in a different language or tongue. What must be transferred from the Babylonian epic is the principle God is enunciating, which is the fact that judgment did happen. Now what does that have to do with tongues? Let's see. The fact that God mentions the destruction of Judah in conjunction with the church must be seriously considered. There is nothing written in the Bible incidentally, ALL has a reason for being there. As Paul continually brings to light that edification of the people is more important than tongues, this teaching must be factored into the equation. When a person walks into a church where people are speaking in tongues, they are not edified but confused. Since God is not the author of confusion, the confusion of tongues in the modern church must be of different origin.

For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints. (1 Corinthians 14:33)

The event of tongues in the modern church causes divisions which means it cannot be of God. The awesome principle which God is transferring from the Babylonian captivity of Judah to the church is that the judgment of God is on all those churches which have willingly accepted tongues as part of their spiritual composition. Those churches who

accept tongues have widened their authority from the Bible alone to the Bible plus! The same principle applies to the church as it did to Judah. Why? Look at the following verse which the charismatics always misuse to foster their tongues belief.

Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever. (Hebrews 13:8)

Jesus is the Great I Am of Sinai and the Great I Am does not tolerate disobedience nor spiritual fornication, whether yesterday, today, or tomorrow. Many churches have rejected the Bible as their sole authority which was written in their own language resulting in God judging them by the vehicle of other tongues. "Other tongues" is the Greek word "heteroglossos" [□□□□□□□□□□] and this is the only place in the New Testament this word is used.

Those churches which have widened their authority are false churches. They are under the judgment of God and have had their candlestick removed.

Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. (Revelation 2:5)

One of the most devastating verses in the Bible which is aimed at the corporate church is Revelation 3:3:

Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. (Revelation 3:3)

This verse states the Lord Jesus Christ will visit a church in judgment and that church will be unaware of the moment they went from being a true church to a false church. When a church accepts tongues normally the other false signs will follow which I have already listed. It is these which cause a church to go from true to false. This is the primary reason God placed verse 21 in the midst of the tongues discourse. It is a testing program for the church to see whether they will remain faithful to the Scriptures or will seek other revelations which will cause it to become adulterous. If they fail the test, they become a false church and you must leave quickly.

Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe. (1 Corinthians 14:22)

Here the Bible gives another serious principle regarding tongues. It says they are a sign for those who do not believe. The word "sign" is the Greek word "semeion" [□□□□□□] which means an indication of a sign, wonder, token, or miracle. So we see that tongues are a miraculous phenomenon to those who are unbelievers. He also says that prophesying (declaring God's Word) is for believers. Those who seek signs and wonders are unbelievers because they are seeking what God has forbidden plus they are attempting to widen the authority of the Bible which God has completed with the book of Revelation. Jesus deals with this mindset in Matthew 12 as he faced the Scribes and

Pharisees who wanted a sign of His authority and authenticity. The same word for sign in Matthew 12:38-39 is used in this verse.

{38} Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. {39} But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: (Matthew 12:38-39)

How did Jesus respond to this? He told them to refer to Jonah. How would they refer to Jonah? By reading the Hebrew Scriptures. What principle is Jesus giving us? The principle is, DO NOT LOOK OUTSIDE THE SCRIPTURES FOR UNDERSTANDING THE THINGS OF GOD.

This is precisely what those in the tongues movement do, they search outside the Bible for revelation from God and as a result they are considered adulterous by God. Have no union with the teachings of the Charismatic Movement. If you find yourself seeking the supernatural phenomenon of this movement, the possibility exists you were never saved. If you were truly saved, you would be seeking what God allows not what He forbids.

And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: (2 Thessalonians 2:11)

THINK ABOUT IT!

#### **Galatians 5:4**

Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

This is a contrast verse concerning the Law versus Grace. In this particular verse we are seeing that if a person seeks to be justified by the Law, then they are fallen from Grace. The term “fallen” carries with it the meaning of “fall off or from, drop away.” A person cannot be justified by the Law. If a person tries to work their way to heaven by keeping the Law, then the sacrifice of Christ is of no effect because the person is attempting their own atonement. This person has become estranged from Grace because they are attempting to keep the Law. This verse also has nothing to do with loss of salvation. It basically deals with a person attempting to become saved by avoiding the Grace of the Cross and embracing the letter of the Law.

Paul here makes a solemn declaration that those who choose to justify themselves according to the law, Christ has become useless to them and therefore they have fallen from grace. This means that those who attempt to keep the law have no chance of salvation in keeping the law unless it is kept perfectly. By falling from grace, they have exchanged the only way of salvation for a completely dead end. Now many try to use this verse to prove that you can lose your salvation. This is false because a true believer can never lose their salvation, hence the term, “eternal life” used 26 times and “everlasting life” is used 11 times in the New Testament. Never in the New Testament do we ever

read the term “temporary life” but only eternal and everlasting.” Paul is making a comparison between salvation plans, those who keep the law are diametrically opposed to grace and the two can never meet or compromise. Either you are saved by grace alone or you are attempting to save yourself by keeping the law. If you choose the law, then you have nothing to do with grace which means your doom is sure.

### Ephesians 2: 1 & 5

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; (Ephesians 2:1)  
Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved; ) (Ephesians 2:5)

In both of these verses the word behind “dead” is the word “nekrous” which means “lifeless, useless, dead.” The majority of Christians claim that for a person to become saved all they have to do is hear the gospel and then make a decision as to whether they want to believe or not. According to these verses, that would be an impossibility since a person before salvation is “spiritually dead” which means they have a dead will and there is no way they can “accept Christ” because they are dead. When Lazarus was in the tomb, he was dead and he could do nothing to raise himself. The story of Lazarus is an event which describes the condition of unsaved man. They are spiritually dead and can do nothing to raise themselves. What is needed is a spiritual resurrection from an outside source just as Lazarus needed the Lord Jesus Christ to raise him from the dead. The unsaved person can never believe until they obtain a spiritual resurrection. For us to find biblical evidence of the spiritual resurrection, we must look to the Scriptures.

{5} But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. {6} **Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection:** on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:5-6)

With most church theology leaning toward the two resurrection theory, when this verse is happened upon in a discourse on eschatology, it is always taken as a physical resurrection of the believer rather than the spiritual resurrection of the believer.

{24} Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. {25} Verily, verily, I say unto you, **The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.** (John 5:24-25)

And you hath he quickened, **who were dead** in trespasses and sins: (Ephesians 2:1)

Even when **we were dead in sins**, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved; ) (Ephesians 2:5)

And you, **being dead in your sins** and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; (Colossians 2:13)

These five verses give us insight as to the nature of the first resurrection which is not a physical one but a spiritual one. The believer was once dead in their sins but because God had quickened (or made alive), the Christian is not subject unto the second death or eternal damnation. So the first resurrection is not physical, it is the moment when we receive our **resurrected souls** and now we are alive unto God whereas before we were dead to the things of God. When Revelation 20:5-6 is interpreted correctly as a spiritual resurrection, then it harmonizes with the rest of Scripture and we don't have to twist any Scripture or fabricate a doctrine to make it fit.

### **2 Thessalonians 2:3**

Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;

Deceive - Deceive thoroughly or delude

Falling away - Apostasy, departure, rebellion

Revealed - Uncovered or disclosed

Perdition - Destruction, ruin, or waste

Man - Person, mankind, or a specific man (anthropos)

First, Paul begins this verse by telling the Thessalonians that they are not to be deceived or deluded on this subject by any means. In verse 2, he gave three of those means, spirit, letter, or word. He is admonishing them to reject the false teachings which they have accepted. Now Paul begins to go into the signs by which one may know that the second coming of Christ is very near.

### **Falling Away**

The first major sign which Paul gives is that there must come a falling away. The word "falling away" is the word "apostasy." The word "apostasy" carries with it the general idea of a departure or abandonment of what one has learned. In this case it would be the orthodox teachings of Scripture. Up until the mid 1800's, there was a general orthodoxy in the churches and it did not matter what Protestant denomination, they basically taught the same things with the same Bible. Then Satan began to make his move and in 1859, Charles Darwin published his "Origin of Species" and many clergy began to adopt the teachings of his book and that began the concept of 1,000 years for each of the creation days, the gap theory between Genesis 1:1 and 2, the questioning of the first three chapters of Genesis. With these began the questioning and the rejection of significant parts of the Bible. Then on top of that apostasy, in 1870, in England, two professors, Hort and Westcott, both of whom accepted Darwin, had taken two of the most corrupt manuscripts, Vaticanus and Sinaiticus, and created their Revised Version which was published in 1881 and on the tails of that version, in America there was a translation made from the same corrupt manuscripts called the American Standard Version of 1901. Then in 1906 came the Azusa Street Mission phenomenon with the resurgence of the speaking in of tongues but these were not the tongues of Acts or Corinth which were legitimate languages, but these modern tongues were nothing but gibberish. Along with these tongues came signs,

wonders, dreams, visions, and prophecies. The modern charismatic movement was now on its way with the founding of the Assemblies of God in 1914.

Then came the rise of liberalism in the church with men like Harry Emerson Fosdick and another liberal unbeliever named William Sloan Coffin. By this time already, the true Bible and Biblical truth was already under attack from many different areas. Then came the rise of women preachers in the church and the feminization of the male clergy. Now the truth of the Gospel was being replaced with the emotional gospel which would appease the hearers. In 1948, when the political nation of Israel was founded, the dispensationalists claimed it was a fulfillment of prophecy and since it was formed, it has become an idol in most churches and has usurped the place of Christ. In 1967, Satan made another major move and that was the introduction of the New Testament of the NIV, which was completed with the Old Testament in 1973. This counterfeit Bible was going to replace the King James Bible in the majority of Churches. Then with the false versions coming into the church, the old hymns have been expunged. Now the same churches which sang the old hymns are now using overhead projectors and rock bands to lead the singing.

As we can see by this short history, that the age of apostasy is in full session. This means, based upon this verse which teaches that the falling away must come first, we are living in the day when this apostasy is alive and well, not only in the churches but also on TV and radio ministries because many of the programs are based upon what many churches teach and use these mediums for outreach. So we are living in a day when the true teachings of Scripture have been set aside for many spurious teachings. This is why the return of Christ could not have happened at any time before our day. Now this first part of the verse, dovetails right into the second half of this verse.

### **And that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;**

Since I became a believer in 1980, and for many years before that we were taught and will be taught that the man of sin is going to be an individual who is going to be indwelt with all forms of satanic power and that he is going to rule the world by setting himself up in a newly built temple in Jerusalem. They call him the Anti-Christ. Fantasy preaching can yield billions of dollars for the publishers and authors, and these false teachings have been the catalyst for launching many ministries. The teaching of an Anti-Christ is alive and well in every dispensational church in the world. However, based upon the line of thought in these verses in 2 Thessalonians, no such world ruler is in view.

The word in the Greek for “be revealed” is in the subjunctive mood which means it is a mood of condition. The condition being is that the man of sin will be revealed based upon the fact of the apostasy happening first. Well as we saw that the apostasy started really early in the church but it never came to fruition with the zeal it has today. Let us go back to the words “be revealed“ Not only is it in the subjunctive mood but it in the aorist tense. The aorist tense speaks about an action without specific reference to its duration, repetition, or completeness. It has little or no emphasis on time. So with this word being in the aorist tense, it shows us that the revealing of the man of sin is not a singular event which will break out onto the world scene, but it is a continuing event.

Before we “reveal” who the man of sin is, let us look at the second title which is “son of perdition.” As soon as we hear that title we think of Judas.

While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. (John 17:12)

Now let us look at how he became the son of perdition. First of all, the Lord had prophesied that Judas would be the only lost one among His disciples. This gives us good insight into predestination. Judas walked with the Lord for three years, so why didn't Judas become saved and why didn't the Lord save him? The answer is simple. He was not one of God's Elect. *And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.* (Revelation 13:8) The names of all those who were to be saved were written in the Lamb's book of life from eternity and since the name of Judas was not written there, the Lord could not save him because he was not named.

Now back to the son of perdition. Since Judas was the only unsaved man walking with Jesus, he was open to satanic suggestion.

Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. (Luke 22:3)

At the Last Supper, Satan had entered into Judas and with that entry, he caused Judas to betray the Lord into the hands of the religious leaders. Isn't that interesting that the Lord was betrayed into the hands of religion. Just like today, religion usurps the rightful place of the Lord Jesus Christ. So after Judas betrayed Christ, he was filled with remorse and tried to return the money and then hung himself. The son of perdition can be called the son of ruin or destruction.

Now since we have seen that the revealing of the man of sin is a continual thing and not a singular event, then we can state firmly that there will be many who will be men of sin and sons of perdition. The man of sin can be found, as we have previously seen, rejecting the truths of Scripture and replacing them with false teachings which can only bring destruction to a person's life. *But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.* (2 Peter 2:1) 2 Peter 2:1 speaks of damnable heresies and the words “damnable” and “destruction” are the same words as “perdition” in 2 Thessalonians 2:3. The man of sin in a church can be a false preacher or even a woman preacher since the word for man is the general term for mankind “anthropos.” The man of sin can be found on the radio bringing a false gospel. The man of sin can be found on TV bringing a false Gospel. The man of sin on the Internet can be found bringing a false Gospel. There have been men of sin all during the present church age but in our day, it has mushroomed tremendously to the point that you can scarcely find a ministry which is teaching the truth. These are the men of sin and the sons of perdition who bring false gospels to keep the unbelievers in unbelief through satanic influence of false gospels.

### 2 Timothy 4:2

Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine.

Preach - Proclaim

Be instant - Be urgent, Stand by or near, or be present

In season - Conveniently or appropriately

Out of season - Inappropriately timed, not convenient, or untimely

Here Paul tells Timothy that he is to focus his ministry on proclaiming the word of God. The word “proclaim” is in the Imperative Mood making it a command. Timothy is not to be one of those people who will not proclaim the word unless it is in a certain environment. He is to always be standing by with an attitude of urgency knowing that he could be called upon to preach. There were two conditions by which Timothy was to be ready to preach. The first one, was that of an appropriate setting which could be a church or a home where he had been called to proclaim the word. The second condition for preaching was an inconvenient time such as defending the Word of God, challenging a false teacher when he hears one teaching, maybe he would be put in jail for his testimony and from there, like the Apostle Paul, he would proclaim the word. Both in season and out of season means that a Christian is to be ready at all times to proclaim and defend the truths of God’s word, in any situation, even if it costs him something, even his life. Then Paul gives Timothy three subjects which he is to preach.

**Reprove** - Paul charges Timothy that he is to refute or convict anyone who is teaching God’s word incorrectly or to confront and challenge the false teachers and their teachings. He is also to confront those who are living a life of sin while claiming to be Christians since this would bring shame on the name of Christ and the Christian community. Timothy is not just to proclaim sweet words but must proclaim the word of God with the authority it carries.

**Rebuke** - Paul charges Timothy that he must also rebuke, which carries with it the meaning of warn or admonish. If someone is holding on to a false teaching, then they are to be rebuked, that holding to false teachings will cause both the speaker and the hearer to face condemnation. Timothy is also to warn his hearers about the false teachers and that it is not a joking matter when someone takes the word of God and teaches it in error. Christians must be warned not to entertain any of the teachings of the false teachers.

**Exhort** - Paul also charges Timothy with not only rejecting the false teachers but also to exhort the Christians, which carries with it the meaning of encouraging them. Churches who constantly condemn their people are the ones you want to stay away from because while there are things we must be aware of, we are also to encourage the brethren in their endeavors. We are also to bring comfort and edification to the brethren so they may grow. If you consistently hit somebody over the head, they will always remain at the same height but our responsibility is to help them grow in the Lord. This theme is also to be remembered if you are called to proclaim or defend the word of God out of season. Christianity is not comprised of rebuke and rejection only, but there is much encouragement in the Bible for Christians and that must be brought to light.

Paul ends this verse by telling Timothy that he is to proclaim these things from the word of God, but he is to have much patience with those who are hearing, since it is a good possibility that many are hearing the truths for the first time. He is also to teach the doctrines of the Bible and not his own personal opinion. It is the personal opinion of the false teachers which has caused them to stray and their hearers to stray. So when Timothy begins to refute the false teachings, it must be done from the scriptures and with much patience toward his hearers. It is Bible doctrine which changes a person and not our commentary.

### **Hebrews 6:4-6**

{4} For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, {5} And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, {6} If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

The three verses seem to be the leading proof texts for those who believe a person can lose their salvation. For us to gain a better understanding of these verses, I am going to break these three verses down into parts and we will look at each section individually to see if these verses are actually speaking of salvation or of something else.

#### **For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened**

The word “impossible” carries with it the meaning of “powerless, weak, or impossible” as it is translated “impossible” in other verses such as Matthew 19:26. The word “enlightened” simply means “give light to or bring to light.” When we look at this sentence instantly two things come to mind:

(Matthew 19:25-26) When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved? {26} But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

The first term deals with the subject of salvation. In the Hebrews verse we see that it is impossible for a person to come to Christ on their own. Man in his unsaved state is powerless or weak to initiate such a salvation. This is the underlying meaning as we will see it unfold in the next few sections. Salvation is impossible with man but with God salvation is possible.

The second term deals with a person being enlightened. When the gospel is preached, the truths of it are brought to light by someone who is saved. The truths of Scripture are always hidden to the unbeliever. So unsaved man sits in church or listens to the radio in his car and hears the gospel proclaimed. The unsaved man now hears with his ears which means he is being enlightened to the truths such as hell, heaven, or whatever the subject matter may be. The teacher or preacher is enlightening his hearers but he is not saving his hearers.

#### **and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost**

This section of Scripture deals with the dissemination of the true Gospel. Let us look at two words in this section: “Tasted” carries with it the meaning of “eat, enjoy or experience.” “Partakers” carries with it the meaning of “sharing or participating.”

The first term deals with the “religious affection” an unsaved person might feel when they are in a spiritual setting. They are enjoying or experiencing the spiritual milieu. Many unbelievers sit in churches every Sunday and hear the gospel, they may even take communion, and that may give them a good feeling as they experience the heavenly peace and learn of Christ who is the Heavenly Gift of the Father.

The second term deals with sharing or participating in the Holy Spirit. This term does not mean “indwelling.” The sharing or participating in the Holy Spirit may be those unbelievers who are involved with believers on some type of project in their church. It may be clothing the homeless or volunteering time to help in another capacity. The unbeliever can partake in spiritual works without being regenerate. They can partake in the fruits of the Spirit.

### **And have tasted the good word of God**

The word “tasted” is the same word used in verse 4. Here we have a setting where the word of God is preached and those under its hearing are benefiting from it. The unbeliever may feel good while hearing the truth being expounded. They will not understand everything that is being taught, but they are tasting or enjoying the teaching in that spiritual setting. The word “word” actually carries with it the meaning of “a thing spoken.”

### **and the powers of the world to come**

When a person sits in church or gathers with saved people, they are, in essence, experiencing a little bit of heaven. The true believers, on the last day, will be taken directly to heaven. The congregation that the unbeliever is sitting in, represents the entire body of believers worldwide. So they are experiencing the heavenly body of Christ on Earth that will someday live gloriously in Heaven.

### **If they shall fall away**

This phrase should be translated “and having fallen away.” It is an Aorist tense which means the action happened in the past and continues for an undetermined amount of time. This word is used once in the New Testament and it carries with it the meaning of willful and deliberate. The word “Parapipto” also means to “commit apostasy.” These people are falling away not because they have fallen into sin, but because they are still willful sinners. How many unbelievers go to church on Sunday morning, and continue in their sins right after they leave church? All of them, because if they have not been regenerated by God, then they are still fallen away or unsaved.

### **to renew them again unto repentance**

The term “renew” carries with it the meaning of “restoring to a former condition.” This is the only time this word is used in the New Testament. The group in view here are unbelievers. The term “repentance” is only used in connection with those who are saved. Repentance is something that is done as a result of salvation and not prior to salvation. Here we are reading that it is impossible to renew them to repentance. Even those who

believe the Arminian error believe a person can get their salvation back. Those who proclaim the Doctrines of Grace believe you cannot even lose your salvation. So what we have in view is that those who are in willful sin cannot come into salvation by themselves through repentance, unless God saves them first. Until then, when the unbeliever is under the hearing of the gospel and that proclamation is finished, they are then returned from experiencing spiritual things to their former condition which is sin. The difference is when they were in church, they were religious sinners. Outside of the hearing of the gospel, they are just plain unregenerate sinners. One other thing, if they are not God's elect, then they can never come into salvation.

**seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.**

Here is the unbeliever's only respect for Jesus. If they could crucify Him again and put Him to open shame again, they would. The unbeliever does not show any reverence or respect for the Lord Jesus instead they show contempt. When they sit in church and hear the hymns being sung or the organ being played, they experience a spiritual euphoria. When the preacher begins to expound the Scriptures and teaches that Christ wants total commitment even unto death, that is when unbelief draws the line. When Jesus is taught that he loves everyone that doctrine is palatable to the unbeliever. When Jesus is being taught that He does not love everyone, and everyone outside of salvation is going to hell, then that is where unbelief draws the line. This closing section seals the fact that these three verses are not dealing with those who have lost their salvation, but for those who are still living in an unregenerate state.

There is one more verse which must be added to this which teaches us plainly that this section deals only with unbelievers. Let us look at verse 9:

But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. (Hebrews 6:9)

The writer to the Hebrews is making it clear that he was addressing the unbelievers in the previous section as he states in verse 9, that "we are persuaded better things of you." He is showing the distinction between the two groups. The group in verse 9 is associated with the things that accompany salvation and the group in verses 4-6 are associated with the things that accompany "religious unbelief."

As we looked at these passages, there was absolutely no intimation that salvation was in view. The Holy Spirit was not indwelling these people but the people were partaking. This was an action on their part, not God's, which means that salvation could not happen to this group unless God initiated it. The group in view was definitely one of unbelieving apostates. The language of those verses do not indicate in the least, that anyone in view was ever previously saved.

### Hebrews 10:26-27

{26} For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, {27} But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

These verses are not teaching a loss of salvation. These verses are teaching that after a person hears the Gospel, that the Lord Jesus Christ is the only way to Heaven and rejects him as the only way of salvation, there is no other way for them to get to Heaven. We see this happening all around us. Cults and Eastern religions have their own systems of reaching Heaven. None of them acknowledge that the Lord Jesus Christ is the only way and because of this rejection, there is no sacrifice for their sins, no atonement, which means they will be judged on the last day and will have to pay for their own sins with an eternity in hell. Verse 26 speaks of receiving "the knowledge of the truth" and not actual salvation. Remember, sinners who are not elect will also hear the gospel. They are receiving the knowledge of the truth but are rejecting it because they are dead in their sins and a dead man cannot regenerate himself nor understand spiritual truth.

So when we look at these two verses we are not dealing with the loss of applied salvation because that cannot happen. Salvation is not mere knowledge but a transformation of the sinner to Saint. Salvation by knowledge is nothing more than Gnosticism. Nowhere in the Bible do we ever read of a Saint becoming a sinner, it is always the opposite. We go from rags to riches, never riches to rags. This is the inheritance of the Saints.

### James 2:24

Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

Back in verse 14, James asks the question "can a dead faith save anyone?" *What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? (James 2:14)* The answer is found in this verse because no one is saved by any type of intellectual belief which lacks appropriate actions. Saving faith is more than giving mental assent to a doctrine. Saving faith is a compelling force in the life of a Christian and causes them to want to do what the Lord assigns them. True salvation is a motivating salvation. Even bed bound people in nursing homes have prayer ministries which shows evidence that they are children of God. Religious people get tired of religious things after a while but the Child of God cannot rest until their ministry is complete and then we fly away. *The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. (Psalm 90:10)* If a Christians claims to have faith or claims to be saved but never builds upon that faith in the area of faith based works, then they are giving evidence that they are unsaved. For example, if a person says to you that they are great at handling money yet their finances are all in disarray, then their works do not match their words. A person says to you they are a great car mechanic yet their car is always broken down or is in someone else's repair shop, then their works do not match their words. If a person claims to be a Christian yet never gets involved in any ministry or does nothing for the Kingdom of God, then they are proving they are not Christians. The works that a true Christian does confirms the fact they are saved because

they are building the kingdom of God. {12} *Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; {13} Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. (1 Corinthians 3:12-13)*

### **1 Peter 1:2**

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

Elect - Chosen beforehand

Foreknowledge - To have knowledge beforehand

Sanctification - Setting one apart

Sprinkling - Used in a ceremonial sense as the sprinkling of blood on the Old Testament sacrifices - Hebrews 12:24

Multiplied - Increase, grow, or spread

Here Peter is telling us that the Christians are elect or chosen beforehand by the foreknowledge of God. God already knew before the foundation of the world who He was going to choose for salvation. When a person's time to become saved came, the Holy Spirit would indwell them and they would become instantly sanctified or set apart from the world and for the Work of God. This sanctification would cause a true believer to become obedient to the Word of God and the ceremonial sprinkling means that they were cleansed from their sins which would give them the ability to serve the Lord in true purity of spirit. Peter goes on to desire grace and peace upon them. Both Gentile and Jewish believers would respond to this as the Gentiles would respond to Grace and the Jew would respond to Peace (Shalom). Peter was praying that the Grace and Peace would continue to grow in their lives as they face persecution. One can tell how close they are walking with the Lord when facing persecution. If a person is scared, they are not walking closely. If a person is calm and resting in the Lord, they are walking closer. This verse never conveys a meaning that God looked down the corridors of time and knew who was going to accept him. This verse specifically states that God already knew who he was going to save, even before he created them.

### **1 Peter 1:11**

And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the **Spirit of God** moved upon the face of the waters. (Genesis 1:2)

{10} Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you: {11} Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ **which was in them** did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. (1 Peter 1:10-11)

Here we have the Holy Spirit active in two ways. First, He was active in the creation of the world as we read in Genesis 1:2. Then He was active in the salvation of the Old Testament Saints. So many preachers teach that the Holy Spirit was among them or just

temporarily came on someone and then left. Those in the Old Testament were saved by the sacrifice of Christ just like those in the New Testament and beyond. We read in 1 Peter 1:11 that the Spirit of Christ was “in” the Old Testament Prophets not among or by them. It is also a biblical truth that the doctrine of election was alive and well in the Old Testament. Amos was an Old Testament prophet and was a herdsman and gatherer of Sycamore fruit. God chose him to bring a message to the ten northern tribes. He didn’t go looking for the position of prophet. If he was not inspired by the Holy Spirit then what did he do, make a bunch of “lucky guesses?” Moses was the author of the first five books of the Bible, David penned the Psalms, Solomon wrote the book of Proverbs, then there was Joshua, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Hosea, Joel, Ezra, Nehemiah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Zechariah, Malachi, Micah, Jonah, Obadiah, Daniel all penned books of the Bible because they were indwelt by the Holy Spirit.

Just as the New Testament Books were divinely inspired, so were the books of the Old Testament. If you deny the fact that the writers were indwelt by the Holy Spirit as Peter states, then you must also deny the inspiration of the books of the Old Testament. The bottom line is that those who believed God in the Old Testament did so because they were indwelt by the Holy Spirit which means they were qualified to hear and understand God to be able to follow him. Abraham is called the “father of faith or faithful” and we know from Galatians 5:22 that “faith” is imparted to the believer only after they become saved and indwelt by the Holy Spirit. *But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, (Galatians 5:22)* How could Abraham be the father of faith or faithful without the Holy Spirit indwelling him and giving him the gift of faith to believe God? If the Holy Spirit did not indwell him, then he was still spiritually dead and could not be the father of anyone except dead religion which God freed him from by saving him. 1 Peter 1:11 removes all doubt concerning the fact that the Holy Spirit indwelt the Old Testament Believer. *But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. (Romans 8:9)* Romans 8:9 puts the icing on the cake that if one does not have the “Spirit of Christ” (same description as 1 Peter 1:11) they are not his, meaning they are not saved and still in the kingdom of Satan.

### **1 Peter 3:18-20**

{18} For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: {19} By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison; {20} Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.

Here we have three verses which have been very misunderstood and really used in outrageous ways. I have heard these verses misused for many years by those who insist that after Christ died, He went to Hell to preach to the spirits in prison, those of the fallen angels and unbelievers. However, this is far from Biblical truth. When the Lord Jesus died on the cross, He committed His spirit unto His Father and His body went into the grave.

## Spirit

And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost. (Luke 23:46)

## Body

And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid. (Luke 23:53)

There are no contradicting Scriptures which teach that anything else happened. If there were conscious souls in Hell at that time, there would be no purpose in bringing them the Gospel, since they would all be under condemnation and could never be saved.

Christ did not go to Hell but He endured the equivalency of an eternity in Hell to pay for the sins of the Believers. One thing we must realize that God never does anything which lacks purpose. The key to understanding this passage is found in verse 20. There we read about Noah who is called “preacher of righteousness.” (2 Peter 2:5)

And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; (2 Peter 2:5)

While Noah was preparing the ark, he was also preaching about the coming judgment. This is why he is called “a preacher.” There is one great principle found in verse 20 and I have it pasted in my Bible when I clipped it out of something many years ago, “Noah was faithful to God’s message even though there were no results.”

This is something that we must keep in mind. Many of us want to see instant results when we witness to someone. This is not always the case. Sometimes it does happen but very rarely. We are to remain faithful and vigilant even if there is no visible fruit. Now what does it mean that Christ preached to the spirits in prison? Jesus did not walk the earth at that time, so how could He have preached to the spirits in prison? The answer is simple. The Spirit of Christ was in Noah! Remember 1 Peter 1:11?

But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. (Romans 8:9)

Let us look at the very end of 1 Peter 3:18, “but quickened by the Spirit:” Isn’t every believer in the Lord Jesus Christ quickened (made alive) by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit? We read this in Romans 8:9. The same Spirit quickened the Old Testament Saints as well as all those on the New Testament side of the cross. The Lord Jesus is not walking on earth today, yet He is preaching to the world through His regenerated Saints by the quickening of the Holy Spirit. Jesus is called the “Word of God” and it is through the Word of God we bring the Gospel.

Remember That Noah Found Grace in the Eyes of the Lord

But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD. (Genesis 6:8)

Grace in the life of a person is what? Salvation! Noah was a saved individual who preached the word of Christ to his generation. So then what is the prison that is in view? In Isaiah 14, we read about Satan, that he would not open the house of his prisoners.

{12} How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! {13} For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: {14} I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. {15} Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. {16} They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; {17} That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? (Isaiah 14:12-17)

Isaiah 14:12-17 speaks about Satan and his desire to be like God. In verse 17, the Bible states that he did not open the house of his prisoners. Did Satan have a physical place where he locked up all his prisoners? The answer, of course, is no. The prison being spoken of here is the prison of unbelief. Satan will not allow any of his prisoners to hear and understand the Gospel.

{3} But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: {4} In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:3-4)

Satan's desire is to keep all those who are unbelievers as unbelievers by blinding their minds to the truth of the Gospel so salvation will not take place. While Satan will control many people until the last day, God has committed to save many and those that God will save will hear the Gospel and become saved which means they have been removed from the prison house or the power of Satan.

Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: (Colossians 1:13)

Now let us go back to the time of Noah. What does this translate into? It means that Noah was preaching to all the unbelievers for the duration of the building of the ark. We have seen that those in spiritual prison are the unsaved. When a person becomes saved, they become free.

But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. (Romans 6:22)

### Summary

So the prisoners that Christ was preaching to were all the unbelievers at the time of Noah, through Him indwelling Noah with the Holy Spirit. They were not in any special place but were all walking around the earth. How does this apply to us today? Well, it is the same principle, because all the unbelievers are still in spiritual prison and the only way a person becomes free from that prison is by receiving a full "Heavenly Pardon." Once this takes place, they are transferred from the kingdom of darkness to the Kingdom of

God. *Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: (Colossians 1:13)* When we look at 1 Peter 3:18-20, we see how much deeper they are than just a “homily in hell.” These verses speak of the beauty of salvation which we can all thank God for this day. For we were once a prisoner but now we are set at liberty.

### **2 Peter 3:9**

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

This scripture verse has been one of the most misused in the entire Bible. Unfortunately, this verse is left to stand alone and in its isolated state, seems to be the source for a wide teaching, that God wants everyone to be saved. The problem with that theory is that not everyone is becoming saved. The word “willing” is the Greek word “boulomai” which carries with it the meaning of “willing desire, intention, or inclination” and it is from the Greek root word “boul” which indicates a “planned desire.”

Now if it is God’s plan that everyone become saved, then we have a problem with God’s plan, it is simply not working. If God plans something, then it will come to pass as we have many examples in Scripture. The universal flood, the destruction of Egypt, the destruction of Jericho. All these events happened and no human intervention could stop them. Even Abraham could not prevent the destruction of Sodom, Gomorrah, Admah, and Zeboim.

Now let us go back to our Scripture above. When it speaks of the longsuffering of God, it does not mean that he is waiting for people to accept Him. This would never happen because of the following Scriptures.

There is none that understandeth, **there is none that seeketh after God.** (Romans 3:11)

Why?

And you *hath he quickened*, **who were dead in trespasses and sins:** (Ephesians 2:1)

**Even when we were dead in sins,** hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) (Ephesians 2:5)

The reigning condition of unsaved mankind is that they are spiritually dead and that condition will disallow them from seeking God. The dead can do nothing but remain dead, unless they are raised to life from an outside source. This means that unless God raises a person, they remain dead. Did Lazarus raise himself or did the Lord Jesus Christ give him back his life? We know it was Christ who did it. Lazarus was a rotting corpse which is representative of people being spiritually dead corpses. This disallows anyone from giving themselves spiritual life by raising themselves. Dead is dead and that is it.

The longsuffering of God that we see in this verse, has nothing to do with God waiting for an individual “to accept Him” simply because it is impossible for the spiritually dead to make themselves alive. What the Bible is telling us here is that God has a timetable when He is going to end the world. The long suffering or patience of God is that when the Bible was written, there were many hundreds of years left for Earth's existence. God's patience is that He is waiting for the last one to become saved and then He will end it all up. The same principle of time is found in the following verse.

Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. (1 Pet 3:20)

What does this verse above teach about the longsuffering of God? He wasn't waiting for people to accept Him or turn to Him, He was waiting for the completion of the Ark. Let me give a quick analogy. If we were to understand the longsuffering of God to mean that He sits in Heaven waiting for some dead sinner to accept Him, then we can liken that to a person who loses a friend or loved one in death. Instead of them burying that person, they take the coffin and the body to their home and then sit by it day and night waiting for the deceased person to come alive. Now how long do you think it will be before the deceased comes to life by themselves? NEVER! Unless God raises up a person spiritually to newness of life, they too will just remain dead.

So the longsuffering of God means He patiently waits for the redemption of all those who were named in the Lamb's Book of Life before the foundation of the world and have yet come into physical existence according to His time table.

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, **whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.** (Revelation 13:8)

This verse is speaking of the “planned desire” of God to save all His Elect. Now when we leave 2 Peter 3:9 alone, it doesn't seem to be saying this, therefore, we look for other corroborating verses to see if we are on the right path.

And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, **that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.** (John 6:39)

We did not have to look far for the biblical evidence. When we read John 6:39 and compare it with 2 Peter 3:9, we see that God is giving the Elect to the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Lord Jesus Christ will not lose one or “not willing that any should perish.” The ones who will not perish are those whom God gives to the Lord Jesus or otherwise known as “The Elect.”

### **Summary**

To isolate 2 Peter 3:9 and then try to create some mythical free will theology on it, makes one guilty of eisegesis which means “placing meaning where it does not belong.” The biblical rule of hermeneutics is to compare Scripture with Scripture. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Corinthians 2:13) The most

dangerous Bible interpretation method is to interpret something though emotion or human desire without doing a study in Scripture. 90% of the time we will find that Scripture will always discredit what we want to believe. Remember it is God's Bible and God's message to us, not ours to Him!

### **1 John 2:2**

And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for *the sins of the whole world*.

Propitiation - Expiation or sin offering

It is a sad thing that this verse is very misused by those who advocate free will. If you will notice in the beginning of this verse it talks about the Lord Jesus being the sin offering for the believer. The word "our" is in the genitive or possessive case which means it belongs to us. So what is in view here is that the Lord Jesus Christ was the sin bearer for all the believers. Now the second part of this verse could trip a person up if they do not connect what the rest of the Bible teaches on this. It is a given fact in Scripture that not every person in the world is going to be saved, in fact, there is only going to be a small remnant saved out of all the billions in population. The second part of this verse is not teaching universal atonement because that is simply not true based upon the Scriptures and what we see in life. We can see unbelievers all around us who die in that state. What this verse is simply teaching, based upon all the other biblical evidence, is that the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ was not only sufficient for the believers in John's time, but that sufficiency will extend to the end of time to all the Elect all around the world. It in no way implies universal atonement, in that Christ paid for the sins of every person in the world and all they have to do is "accept Christ" and the atonement will be applied. This is taught nowhere in Scripture because saying a few words does not apply the forgiveness of God. God Himself is the one who chooses whom He is going to save and applies the sacrifice of Christ to that person and then indwells them with the Holy Spirit. Man has no part whatsoever except to receive it.

### **1 John 3:9**

Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

One of the key words in this verse is the word "cannot." The word "can" is a word of ability making the word "cannot" a word of ability also. This verse states that a person who is born of God cannot sin. To gain a better understanding of this verse we need to go back to 1 John 3:6.

Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him. (1 John 3:6)

We can look at the word “abideth” and see that as a synonym for salvation. The only ones who abide or remain in Christ are those whom the Father has saved. Here we read in this verse that those who are truly saved will not sin. Both uses of the word “sinneth” are in the present tense. This means that those who are truly in God will not live a life of practicing sin. A Christian may sin because we are still in the flesh and face all the temptations of the world. When a Christian does sin, they will not make it a practice as the unbeliever does. Those who claim to be saved and live a life in sin are proving, by their actions, that they have never been saved. If they truly knew God by means of salvation, then they would know a life of sin is inconsistent with the regenerated life.

Now another aspect of this must be introduced. When Christ went to the cross, He completely removed all of our sins.

As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12)

I, *even I, am* he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25)

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; *{14}* Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; (Colossians 2:13-14)

This means that our souls have been totally cleansed because every sin has been removed and paid for. The sins we commit in the future have also been paid for and removed. Now since we still live in the flesh, it means that we will still be subject to sinning. The Apostle Paul had this situation where he struggled with sin because the flesh was still prone to sin but his soul was totally cleansed. *Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. (Romans 7:17)* Notice Paul states that it is no longer he that is sinning but sin which dwells in him. The sin dwells in the flesh. *For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. (Romans 7:18)* This is why upon the death of the believer, the body must go into the ground to face corruption but the believer, in their spirit essence goes directly into the presence of the Lord. This is because the spirit essence of the believer has been totally cleansed of all sin and is made ready for Heaven. *For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: Paul delighted himself in the law of the inward man: (Romans 7:22)*, that is, grace because he knew that it made him sinless in his soul existence. This is why it is important for a Christian to know that not only were all their sins forgiven but they were extracted and totally removed. This is why John could state that those who are truly saved will not commit sin because their souls are sinless. Sin cannot come out of a source of sinlessness. I am definitely not speaking of the sinless perfection that John Wesley believed in because in their belief of “entire sanctification,” the body was also included in that sinless existence. This, of course, is untrue because we see the body still decaying every day as the spirit grows stronger. *For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day. (2 Corinthians 4:16)* If the body was regenerated

along with the soul, then death would never take place because the body would have been transformed at that moment but as you can see in your own body, that it is dying by means of disease or age but your soul is totally unaffected by death.

Now back in verse 6, we saw that Paul had struggled with sin in the flesh, therefore, if we try to understand verse 9 as a Christian being unable to sin in their body owing to some type of spiritual maturity, we will have a great contradiction because even in the Scriptures, prominent Christians have sinned, such as David with Bathsheba, Solomon with all the false gods, Moses disobeying God by striking the rock twice, etc.

What is in view here in 1 John 3:9 is what we discussed in verse 6. When Christ cleansed the soul of the Christian by means of His sacrifice on Calvary, the soul of the Christian was purified and made sinless. The Holy Spirit indwells the true believer, so sin and the Holy Spirit cannot occupy the same place, remember the principle of darkness and light. Light always displaces darkness, no matter how small the light. No true believer can ever sin in their soul because it has been completely cleansed of sin but they may sin in their flesh, as we have previously saw in Romans 7:19, that is where sin abides until we are changed or experience physical death.

This verse also speaks of God's seed in us. What seed is that? It is the seed of the new nature or the regeneration of the inward man. When a person becomes saved, at that moment salvation is like a small planted seed. As the seed becomes watered with the word it begins to grow, that is, it starts to manifest a spiritual life in the recipient and as they continue to grow in the faith, the seed begins to really grow and then begins to manifest an outward righteous life based upon the cleansing of their soul they received at the moment of salvation and their growth in sanctification in the faith. As they continue to grow, it is like the seed turning into a plant or maybe a tree. As they continue to mature, the seed continues to grow in all areas of their life. Then as they mature, they will not commit sin, that is, live a life of sin because they will reflect the transformation which took place in their soul. If a Christian commits a sin, it does not mean they are living a life of sin but momentarily fell prey to the flesh. Always keep in mind that Christ is the seed that indwells you. *Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. (Galatians 3:16)*

### **Revelation 20:5-6**

{5} But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. {6} Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:5-6)

In this verse we read when the resurrection of all people will occur. The Bible is very clear that the resurrection of both the believers and unbelievers will be on the last day.

{28} Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the

resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (John 5:28-29)

He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. (John 12:48)

So we see that the thousand year reign and the New Testament period are the same, since the resurrection is stated as being at the end of both. This verse also points out the unbelievers, "the rest of the dead," will not be raised till the thousand years are completed. So till that time, where do they go? Psalm 115:17 tells us:

The dead praise not the LORD, neither any that go down into silence. (Psalm 115:17)

This verse shows us that the unsaved dead go to a place of silence until the resurrection. I do not know where this place is but God declares it is a place of silence. The word "silence" in the Hebrew means "to be dumb." It is figuratively used as "death." So the unbeliever is in a place of silence which is comparable to the silence of death until the last day. The balance of this verse continues to speak of the first resurrection which will be clarified in verse 6.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:6)

In this verse we will discover what the first resurrection is. The Bible clearly teaches a single, general resurrection and we must seek to understand if the first resurrection is something different from a resurrection of believers. Let us explore some unique characteristics of the first resurrection. The key to understanding the first resurrection is in the part of this verse which states, "on such the second death has no power."

Who is unaffected by the second death, which is a synonym for judgment and hell? Only the born again Christian is unaffected by judgment because Christ has already paid for our sins. Therefore, our abode will be heaven not hell. Every born again Christian on earth has experienced the first resurrection. I saw a famous Pre-trib theologian on a talk show mockingly put down this biblical view by saying something has to be dead before it can be resurrected. He offered no alternative teaching but just a pseudo-intellectual put down.

I am glad he said it because it is based on truth, whether he knows or not. Let us look at Ephesians 2:1-3:

{1} And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins: {2} Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: {3} Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. (Ephesians 2:1-3)

We read in verse 1 that we were dead in our sins. It seems that something was dead, and it was us. Now were we physically dead or spiritually dead? The answer is simple, we were spiritually dead. Paul tells us that we walked in the deadness of our sins, until something happened. We read in Ephesians 2:5:

Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) (Ephesians 2:5)

God made us alive or resurrected our dead souls. The phrase "quickened us together" may also be translated "to make alive together." That theologian who mockingly discounted this truth should have done his homework and would have discovered that something was dead, and was made alive. When you received Christ, did your physical body change? Of course not, but you did receive your resurrected soul, and before you did, you were dead to the things of God, whereas now you are alive to the things of God. Let us look at Ephesians 2:6:

And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: (Ephesians 2:6)

As a result of being made alive, we are raised up to sit together with Christ in heaven, as if we are already up there reigning with Him. The rest of Rev. 20:6 tells us that we are on the right track since when a person becomes saved, they become: priests of God and Christ (1 Peter 2:5); blessed (Eph. 1:3); and holy (Eph. 1:4). So as we see the believer is already reigning with Christ as a result of their position, and since this reigning is in effect at present, it also tells us that the thousand year reign is also in effect at present. The two cannot be separated.

### **Revelation 20:7-8**

{7} And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, {8} And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. Revelation 20:7-8

### **Revelation 20:7**

{7} And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

The thousand year reign in Revelation 20 is representative of the entire New Testament period. One of the greatest errors of the dispensational belief system is that they push everything to the future. Remember the verse in Daniel 7:25 where it states that Satan will change times and laws? *And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.* (Daniel 7:25) Well he has done this by introducing the dispensational view and since he did this in 1830 through the Glasgow Prophecy meetings, Christians, mainly prophecy preachers,

258

have been forcing this mythical belief system on the Bible with their twisted meaning of Scripture. They claim the loosing of Satan will be 1,007 years in the future but brethren look around at what is going on in our present day society.

Verse 7 reveals that right at the end of time Satan will be allowed to continue his deceptions. He will blind the minds of the people of the world on a grander scale. This is how God will wind down His salvation program by saving less and less toward the last day. When God saves the last one, then this will usher in the last day, and then the prophetic events will unfold rapidly and it will be the end of recorded history. We are very close to the end as we see the increase in false gospels, New Age philosophies, attacks on Christians and Christianity, attacks on the Scriptures, Sodomy out in the open with no shame, and mounting perversions creeping into the church which are being embraced by both clergy and congregations.

When it says that Satan will be loosed out of his prison, it is telling us that the great chain which kept him tied has now been taken out of the way which is the Holy Spirit who applies salvation to the Elect. *For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.* (2 Thessalonians 2:7) Satan will no longer be hindered as he makes the final attempt to make war against the Lord Jesus Christ and the body of believers. The Holy Spirit has been taken out of the way as the great restrainer of evil because now comes the final battle with Satan and he must be allowed to muster whatever forces he can for this battle. For thousands of years the Holy Spirit has restrained evil but now He is slowly removing his restraining hand from the earth as sin is now reigning like it never did before. One of the reasons that Satan wants abortion and homosexuality is because abortion murders babies and homosexuals cannot have children thus he believes if he can limit population by these methods, then the last of the Elect cannot be born which means, in his mind, God cannot save the last one which spells the doom of Satan and therefore he will not face the lake of fire but he forgets one thing, that God is not willing that any of the Elect shall perish.

The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Peter 3:9)

#### Revelation 20:8

And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

After Satan is loosed out of his prison, he is allowed once again to deceive the nations. Notice the verse states that Satan “shall” go out and deceive the nations and that includes all the nations of the world which is stated by the term “four quarters of the earth.” The words “shall go out” is one word in the Greek and it is in the Indicative Mood which is the mood of fact, that is, Satan will go out to deceive the nations in a final attempt to gain world domination over the believers and win the war against Christ which he thinks he can win in his mind.

In Ezekiel 38 and 39, Gog and Magog were nations who were going to come against ancient Israel. Magog was a nation from the north. Here though, Gog and Magog are representing the entire world. This verse tells us that Satan is going to attempt to muster every evil spirit he can to come to the great and final battle. We see this battle as Armageddon. Satan will apparently be able to muster a countless number of demons who will attempt one final battle against the Kingdom of God. This deception right before the return of Christ will see many false religions, false gospels and perversions come into existence. If you notice that Satan's last weapon in his repository is deception, so the extreme final days of earth will produce pandemic deception in the area of the gospel as he will try and make one major attempt to attack the body of believers by trying to deceive them. He will have great success in deceiving the unbelievers with many perversions. Satan has been loosed at present and that is why sin is abounding like never before in history.

### **Revelation 22:17**

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

Many like to use this verse as an invitation to "accept Jesus." This is not what it is teaching. This verse is teaching that all those Elect whom God named before the foundation of the world will thirst after the Gospel and they will be given the water of life freely, which means they will be saved by free grace. No one can will or work themselves into Heaven, it comes by the effectual grace of God. The key phrase in this verse is "let him that heareth say." Only those who God qualifies to hear the Gospel will become saved. The word "heareth" in this verse in the Greek is the word "akouo" which carries with it the meaning of "hearing with understanding." Notice the order in the verse. "Hearing" comes before "come and take." Only those who will "come and take" will be those who have been given spiritual understanding, that is, those who have already become saved and have been raised to newness of life in Christ.

Those who are saved will be the only who will hear the Gospel with spiritual understanding. It is not an academic understanding otherwise then it would be by "free will." Those who hear the Gospel are those who have already become saved and are able to understand by means of the Holy Spirit indwelling them. Remember the two disciples on the road to Emmaus were with Jesus quite a long time and then when the time was right according to the timing of Jesus, he opened their understanding to the Scriptures. *Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, (Luke 24:45)* The word "whosoever" does not mean "anytime, anyplace, or whenever someone wants to" but carries with it the meaning of "all or everybody."

**Adam and Eve**  
**Fear or Repentance?**

by Dr. Ken Matto

*(Gen 2:17 KJV) But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

*(Gen 3:6 KJV) And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

We all know the situation, that Adam and Eve had disobeyed the Lord by eating of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. If they would eat from this tree, then they would surely die. This was the penalty associated with disobeying the Lord's command about that tree.

Eve had made one fatal mistake and that was instead of instantly rebuking the serpent, she held a dialogue with him. This is called dialoguing which leads to compromise which leads to disobedience. Whenever cults or false teachers attempt to get Christians into a dialogue, it is the Christian who always compromises. Dialoguing is a major and effective tool of the ecumenical movement.

Satan had entered the serpent and apparently Eve did not have a problem speaking with the serpent since this was in a time before the fall. Since everything was perfect, then there would have been nothing to cause her to fear since fear is associated with sin. So the serpent gets her into a dialogue by questioning what God had said by asking her, "Yeah hath God said...?" Eve then added to God's words by stating that:

*(Gen 3:3 KJV) But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.*

God never stated that if they touch it, that would also effect a death penalty. So Satan goes on and tempts Eve and tells her that:

*(Gen 3:4 KJV) And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:*

The die has been cast and now the stage was set in Eve's mind that there will be no penalty attached to her actions. So now Eve was convinced that it was permissible to eat from that tree and so she ate of it and gave some to her husband.

*(Gen 3:6 KJV) And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*

With the disobedience of Adam and Eve, God's salvation plan was about to be revealed in its early stages.

What was the first thing which Adam and Eve did after they sinned?

*(Gen 3:7 KJV) And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.*

Did they repent? No, as soon as they sinned and their eyes were opened, the first thing was that they knew they were naked. To be naked is akin to being unsaved.

*(2 Cor 5:2-4 KJV) For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven: {3} If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked. {4} For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.*

So we see that spiritually speaking Adam and Eve were now in need of salvation because they were naked and in their feeble attempts to cover themselves, they had made aprons or loincloths to cover their nakedness. They were not aware that what they were portraying was man's feeble attempt to cover or atone for their own sins. We will see how poorly this matches up with God's salvation plan. At that point Adam and Eve just wanted to cover their nakedness and knew nothing about what their actions had represented.

*(Gen 3:7-8 KJV) And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. {8} And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife **hid themselves** from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.*

Here is an interesting verse. Even though they had sewed fig leaves together and had covered their nakedness, yet they hid themselves from God. If they were covered, why would they still hide themselves from God? Should not they have approached God and tell Him what happened and then repent of their sin and find salvation? The problem was that they knew nothing about salvation, they were only concerned with the physical and what they could do to keep themselves out of trouble. In other words, they thought that by sewing fig leaves into an apron, then that would appease God.

*(Gen 3:9 KJV) And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou?*

Even after Adam and Eve made themselves aprons to cover their nakedness, they were still separated from God because they were still in sin. Verse 9 does not mean God did not know where they were but He was teaching that there was now separation between Him and the human race. God is holy and the human race just became unholy. There was now a great gulf between the two and even though Adam and Eve were now covered, there was still that gulf which Adam and Eve could not cross.

*(Gen 3:21 KJV) Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.*

Now previously we saw that Adam and Eve had made their own aprons or loincloths to

cover their nakedness. Here in verse 21, we read that God made “coats of skins” and clothed them. What God did here was to replace their loin cloths with something more thorough.

Coats - This word in the Hebrew denotes that these were full tunics with sleeves.

Skins - These are animal hides or leather.

Clothed them - Hebrew word “wayalbishem”

1) Hiphil Stem in Hebrew - When this word is in the Hiphil stem, it presents one person clothing another person with different garments which normally reflect a change in their status.

2) Imperfect tense - It denotes an incomplete action.

3) Passive - No Action on their part, they just received the action from God.

### **Summary**

Previous to verse 21, we saw that Adam and Eve had made loin cloths for themselves to cover their nakedness AKA their sin. However, their attempts to appease God did not work. They still suffered the penalty of their actions. Now in judgment there is mercy. What God did was took away their aprons and changed their garments to full clothing. However, while on this earth they had to live in accordance with the sins they committed, that is, the judgment God pronounced is still valid today.

### **The Lesson**

What we have here is an object lesson on free will. The first thing that got Adam and Eve into trouble was they chose sin over obedience. Once sin entered into the world, man no longer had a free will, it was captive to sin. (*Rom 6:20 KJV*) *For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.* Romans 6:20 teaches that an unsaved person serves sin and not righteousness and this is because they are still unsaved and in Satan’s kingdom.

God did not accept the attempts Adam and Eve made at covering their sin with small loin cloths. What God did was He made them tunics which completely covered them. These tunics were made from animal skins which means that because of their sin, blood had to be shed. So when God clothed them in the tunics, it was an action which was yet incomplete, which is implied by the imperfect tense of the word. (*Heb 10:4 KJV*) *For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.* Hebrews 10:4 states that it is not possible for the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins. This is why the word is in the imperfect tense, which means that the action which God took, was to be completed in Christ on Calvary. The animal skins or sacrifices would only be a foreshadow of the coming of Christ who would remove all our sins at Calvary. Even though God clothed them, it was only a foreshadow of the sacrifice of Christ for the Elect.

Another question arises, did Adam and Eve repent of their sins? The answer is no because they did not know what it was to repent and their action was to cover their sins and not repent of them. They knew something was wrong and that is why they hid from

God. They could not repent because they were now in sin and became spiritually dead. You do not read anywhere in Genesis 3 that there was any remorse on their part for what they did. They may have felt sorrow for what happened but they knew nothing about how to rebuild their relationship with God. *(2 Cor 7:10 KJV) For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.* Godly sorrow is under girded by salvation and only those who are saved are truly sorry for their sins.

If you also notice in the account, God was not satisfied with their attempts to cover themselves with fig leaves. So God, in anticipation of the Lord Jesus Christ coming to earth to die for the Elect, had clothed them in skins which required the shedding of blood. This action was all done by God because the requirements were now set for atonement.

It is the same today, the unsaved are unable to do anything for salvation which God will accept. A person becomes saved when the blood of Christ is applied to them and then they are fully clothed in Christ's righteousness. *(Isa 61:3 KJV) To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.*

*(2 Tim 2:25 KJV) In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; Unless God gives a person repentance, they cannot repent on their own because of their dead spiritual condition. Adam and Eve were given repentance when God clothed them as a foreshadow of Christ's sacrifice. In no way did they repent on their own. Repentance is a gift from God which is given at the time of salvation along with faith. Faith and repentance are fruits and gifts to those who are saved. (Gal 5:22 KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, The unsaved do not have faith nor can they repent of their sins unless God gives it to them and since Adam and Eve are part of the fallen human race, they did not have either until God acted on their behalf.*

Keep in mind that repentance means "a change of mind." So until God changes a person from spiritually dead to spiritually alive, there is no change of mind about sin. Those who believe in repentance for salvation are actually creating a transitional phase in God's salvation program. No one transitions into salvation, it is instantaneous. You have either received it or you have not, you are either saved or unsaved, there is no middle ground. Something to keep in mind!

**Assumptive Hermeneutics**  
**Interpreting the Bible without Biblical Facts in Evidence**

By Dr. Ken Matto

Nehemiah 8:8 (KJV) So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading.

Distinctly – To give instructions, to show, to declare

The Sense – Insight, understanding, wisdom

Abigail is described by this word – 1 Sam. 25:3 -1 Samuel 25:3 (KJV) *Now the name of the man was Nabal; and the name of his wife Abigail: and she was a woman of good understanding, and of a beautiful countenance: but the man was churlish and evil in his doings; and he was of the house of Caleb.*

Caused to understand – To perceive, have intelligence, discern, prudent

*Nehemiah 8:4-8 (KJV) And Ezra the scribe stood upon a pulpit of wood, which they had made for the purpose; and beside him stood Mattithiah, and Shema, and Anaiiah, and Urijah, and Hilkiah, and Maaseiah, on his right hand; and on his left hand, Pedaiah, and Mishael, and Malchiah, and Hashum, and Hashbadana, Zechariah, and Meshullam. {5} And Ezra opened the book in the sight of all the people; (for he was above all the people;) and when he opened it, all the people stood up: {6} And Ezra blessed the LORD, the great God. And all the people answered, Amen, Amen, with lifting up their hands: and they bowed their heads, and worshipped the LORD with their faces to the ground. {7} Also Jeshua, and Bani, and Sherebiah, Jamin, Akkub, Shabbethai, Hodijah, Maaseiah, Kelita, Azariah, Jozabad, Hanan, Pelaiah, and the Levites, caused the people to understand the law: and the people stood in their place. {8} So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading.*

In Nehemiah 8:4-8, we read of the time when many Jews went back to Jerusalem from Babylon and had repaired the walls of the city. Here we have the scenario where Ezra the Scribe was now attending to the reading of the word of God which at that time was the Law of God. Ezra was given a high wooden pulpit to begin the reading of the word of God to the people. As we plainly see in verses 4 and 7, Ezra was not the only one who did the teaching. In verse 7 it names 13 other teachers plus the Levites which caused the people to understand the law. Verse 4 tells us that there were 13 others on the platform with Ezra but it is not known if they were temple workers or if they joined in and helped Ezra to teach the word of God to the people. All in all Ezra had 26 people to help him in this task.

If you notice there was no division among them as the people stood and listened to the word of God being interpreted and proclaimed unto them by as many as 26 preachers or as little as 13. It did not matter because they were all teaching the same message which affected all the people as many of them wept knowing they had broken God's law.

In our theme verse which is Nehemiah 8:8 we find the following three very important words.

Nehemiah 8:8 (KJV) So they read in the book in the law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading.

The first word we will look at is the word “distinctly” which carries with it the meaning in the Hebrew of “to give instructions, to show, to declare.” The first thing that Ezra and his entourage did was to read directly from the word of God, in other words, their first task was to declare the word of God to the people. There was no fooling around with commentaries or spurious interpretations. It was a direct reading from the word of God.

The second word we will look at is “the sense” in the Hebrew it is one word and carries with it the meaning of “Insight, understanding, wisdom.” Not only did they read the word of God but they interpreted it in such a manner that the people received insight and understanding. They understood the word of God and the meanings of the passages which were read to them. You can tell that the people received the straight understanding of the Scriptures because it affected them to the point of weeping. A neutralized interpretation would not do that to someone.

The third word we will look at is “caused...to understand” which is one word in the Hebrew and carries with it the meaning of “To perceive, have intelligence, discern, prudent.” After you hear the straight word of God and are given the proper interpretation, which is what hermeneutics is supposed to supply, then you will have the discernment and intelligence of a good solid Christian who will now possess good understanding of the word of God. This, of course, depends upon two important factors: 1) That you are hearing the true word of God and not a counterfeit; and, 2) that the hermeneutic you are being subjected to is not biased but based strictly on the word of God regardless of the fact that it may come up against established belief systems which are derived from Assumptive Hermeneutics.

What is Assumptive Hermeneutics? Since I have not read the name then I will coin that phrase. Assumptive Hermeneutics is the interpretation of the Bible based upon supposition rather than directly harmonizing links of Scripture to each other. The 1913 Webster Bible states the following definition of assumption:

1. The act of assuming, or taking to or upon one's self; the act of taking up or adopting.
2. The act of taking for granted, or supposing a thing without proof; supposition; unwarrantable claim.

Number two fits perfectly as it is used in modern biblical hermeneutics today. Let me give a definition of Hermeneutics before we go on.

In ancient Greece there was a mythological god named Hermes and he was the messenger of the gods. The name Hermeneutics is derived from his name. Hermeneutics is the science of interpretation of the Scriptures. It concerns itself with exegesis, that is, extracting the true teachings from passages of Scripture and giving the meaning of those

truths. In other words, true hermeneutics is concerned with bringing the message of Scripture directly from Scripture without any buffers of bias such as theological systems or denominational peculiarities. True hermeneutics is the only thing that stands between the Scriptures and a Christian's understanding of them.

Many times you may hear or read the following statement, "If the Plain Text Makes Perfect Sense, Seek No Other Sense." That statement is totally violated by the very ones who espouse it. You will see that in this study when I give two examples of the plain text making sense but being ignored in favor of biased interpretation.

Assumptive Hermeneutics has literally supplanted true hermeneutics in our day. How you ask? When theologians write books, pastors preach, or any Christian who belongs to a certain belief system, they will read and write only within the confines of their chosen theology. Let me give some examples:

1) A dispensationalist will only write according to their belief system. They will interpret verses, correctly or incorrectly, according to dispensationalism. They will train themselves so that everything they read will be filtered through dispensational belief.

2) A Preterist will see only eschatology as far as 70 A.D. believing that all prophetic events were fulfilled by that time and that nothing is future. So when they look at eschatological passages, they only see verses understood within their system of beliefs.

3) A person who believes that Christ died for every person in the world will look at all passages of Scripture within that belief system. They will eschew the idea that Christ only died for a certain group of people, namely His Elect.

4) A person who espouses a belief in free will believes that all a person has to do is just "accept Christ" and that person has the ability to receive salvation any time before he or she dies. So when they read the Scriptures, whether Old or New Testament, they will read them with the understanding that God have given mankind free will. This why when free will preachers preach, they will make incessant altar calls believing that a person can make that decision.

These four examples prove that the understanding and interpretation has become compartmentalized in our day and Christians only see through the glasses of their chosen belief systems. The belief systems are no longer subject to the Bible but the Bible has become subject to biased belief systems, whether personal or denominational.

### **Assumptive Eschatology**

Revelation 4:1 (KJV) After this I looked, and, behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

If you look at every prophecy book written by a dispensationalist, pre-tribulationist, or Pre-millennial, you will read in every instance that Revelation 4:1 is pointing to a pre-tribulationist rapture which supposedly comes 7 years before the Lord's return. Now here is where assumptive hermeneutics comes in. There is no connecting verses which

specifically point to this as the pre-trib rapture of the Saints. Not one! They just say it and it sounds good, so the Christian accepts it without any questions whatsoever. Whether it is written in a book or given in a sermon, it is never challenged. First, of all pre-tribulationism is a total myth and is not found in the Bible. Yet, millions of Christians adhere to it. Why? Simply because it is nothing but an escapist theology removing the command of the Lord to go forth into all the world with the gospel. The majority of these are waiting for the rapture and have become nothing but spiritual couch potatoes. Pre-millennialism is a created belief system and verses must be interpreted by force to fit into this system. Another important question surfaces. Look at the following verses:

*Mark 16:15 (KJV) And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.*

*Matthew 28:19-20 (KJV) Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: {20} Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.*

If you notice the Christian has a command from the Lord to take the Gospel to all the world and the Lord states that he will be with the Christian even unto the end of the world. How then, can the gospel to every nation be completed if the Lord has taken the very vessel by which He is reaching the world to Heaven, that is, the church? If the church is in Heaven, then how is worldwide evangelism going to be accomplished? Why would the Lord state that he would be with them unto the end of the world if He has taken them to Heaven while the world is still going on and they are all now in His presence? Do you see the questions that arise when assumptive hermeneutics is not challenged?

Now here is a clear hermeneutic on Revelation 4:1:

John was already given information on the things which were and the things which are and now he is going to be given the information on what is going to happen in the last days. The "last days" is the period from the cross to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. In chapters two and three letters were sent to the existing churches on Earth but now the scene shifts to Heaven. This verse has been so misunderstood by the pre-tribulation crowd. They have taught for so long that it represents the rapture and they attempt to tie it in with 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18. Revelation 4:1 has nothing whatsoever to do with the idea of a pre-tribulation rapture. This verse is teaching us that the scene now shifts from earth to Heaven. Just as Ezekiel had heavenly visions, John is now having them. (*Ezek 1:1 KJV*) *Now it came to pass in the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I was among the captives by the river of Chebar, that the heavens were opened, and I saw visions of God.*

John now states that after the letters to the seven churches he looked and then he saw a door opened in heaven and the first voice was that of one which was as a trumpet. (*Rev 1:10 KJV*) *I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,* John is repeating what he had previously saw. Remember the trumpet sounded

a true sound and it was a call to battle. In the rest of the book of Revelation, we are going to see how the church is at constant war with the powers of evil. John is told to come up hither, that is, he is commanded to enter into the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ who is now going to show him the final chapter of the war between God and the powers of evil. This war continues until the last day when the Lord will destroy Satan and his entire host of demons. Notice John is told that these things “must take place.” That means, there is going to be persecution, both physical and spiritual, of the believer. Since these things must take place, the believer better stop looking for an easy escape such as the pre-tribulation rapture. It simply does not exist in Scripture. The true Christians are going to be on earth until the last day and we will suffer persecution until the last day. These are things which “must be hereafter.”

Now where do we find in Scripture the truth about the rapture? In the book of John, we are told plainly 6 times that the believer is going to be raised on the last day and you do not even need to force fit any other verses.

*John 6:39 (KJV) And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.*

*John 6:40 (KJV) And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.*

*John 6:44 (KJV) No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.*

*John 6:54 (KJV) Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.*

*John 11:24 (KJV) Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.*

*John 12:48 (KJV) He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.*

And here is icing on the cake:

*John 5:28-29 (KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.*

The pre-tribulationists claim that the unbelievers will be raised 1,000 years after the rapture of the church when the believers who have physically died will also be raised. That is not the teaching of John 5:28-29. It plainly teaches that there is going to be one general resurrection, when both the unbelievers and the believers will be raised from the dead, not 1,000 years apart. Now we can clearly see when the believers are going to be raised and it will not be at separate times. Now did we have to create

thousands of words to over-justify this plain teaching? No we didn't, we just had to read it and there it was, but you see, the plain teachings of Scripture do not sell books and make false prophecy preachers millions of dollars with their sensationalizing of the Scriptures. Remember the statement about the plain teachings of Scripture? Well here is a prime example of it being ignored!

One more point on this subject which the pre-tribber cannot answer.

*John 11:24 (KJV) Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.*

Martha said to Jesus that Lazarus will rise again in the resurrection at the last day. If Lazarus, who was a believer in Jesus, according to pre-tribulationism should be raised in the pre-trib rapture, but according to Martha, he will not be raised until the last day, which is supposedly 1,000 years after the believers. Why then, if Lazarus is a believer, is he not being raised with all the other believers in the pre-trib rapture? Ask a pre-tribber that and see if they have an answer.

So you see when we relied totally on the Scriptures without the bias of a system of beliefs, we have seen how easy it is to know when the end shall come and when the believers are going to be raptured. We saw 6 times that the believer is going to be raised on the last day and we also saw in John that the rapture of the Saints and the resurrection of the unbelievers will be on one single day. This is the reward of clear hermeneutics that we will always come to truth without over-justification by man.

### **Assumptive Soteriology**

Another major assumption which Christians count on is in the area of Soteriology which is the doctrine of salvation. You will hear free will preachers claim that all you need to do is believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and you will be saved. This is true there are many verses which speak about believing on the Lord Jesus Christ.

*John 1:12 (KJV) But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*

*Romans 10:9 (KJV) That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.*

*Romans 10:13 (KJV) For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.*

Here are three familiar verses which we normally hear connected with an invitation which is normally given at the end of a service. Romans 10:13 speaks about calling upon the name of the Lord. Romans 10:9 speaks about confessing verbally with your mouth the Lord Jesus Christ and believing in your heart that God raised Him from the dead. John 1:12 speaks about believing on the name of Jesus. These three verses definitely look as if one only has to believe and they will be saved. By the way, John 1:12 is never quoted with verse 13. *John 1:13 (KJV) Which were born, not of blood,*

*nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.* Now a major question arises. Do these three verses represent pre-salvation or post-salvation? In other words, by assuming the contents while isolating these verses, do they lead to salvation or are they a result of salvation? It is a serious question that needs to be answered and it is answered clearly according to the Scriptures.

When we preach a sermon or when we witness to someone, how do we view those that are hearing us? Do we normally view the hearers as ones who have basic intelligence? When we preach that those without Christ will be spending an eternity in Hell, do we believe the people listening can assess their spiritual condition properly and then turn their lives over to Christ to avoid the eternal penalty of Hell? If you ask any free will Christian that question, they will answer in the affirmative because they automatically assume the hearer has the ability to make that decision simply because they did along with many others. So they will use as their criteria, their own salvation and possibly referencing others.

Now instead of using assumptive hermeneutics, we now engage in clear hermeneutics to see if the above conclusion is correct. The first question which is totally disregarded, must be asked and answered, and that is, what is the spiritual condition of people before salvation? The simple answer to that is that they are spiritually dead! So let us now attend to what the Scriptures teach.

*Ephesians 2:1-5 (KJV) And you hath he quickened, who were **dead** in trespasses and sins; {2} Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: {3} Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. {4} But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, {5} Even when we were **dead** in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)*

The starting point that free will proponents completely ignore is the fact that before salvation a person is spiritually dead. In Ephesians 2:1 & 5, the word for “dead” is the Greek word “nekrous” which means “lifeless, useless, or dead.” A person who is spiritually dead is one who cannot do anything toward their salvation. Just as a physically dead person cannot do anything to make themselves alive, the spiritually dead person is incapable of anything except being dead. Now is this borne out in other places in the Scriptures? The answer is a resounding yes.

### **Nekrous - Lifeless, Useless, or Dead**

Ephesians 5:14-15 (KJV) Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the **dead**, and Christ shall give thee light. {15} See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

Matthew 8:22 (KJV) But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the **dead** bury their **dead**.

Luke 15:32 (KJV) It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy

brother was **dead**, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

John 5:21 (KJV) For as the Father raiseth up the **dead**, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will.

Colossians 2:13 (KJV) And you, being **dead** in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

### Thnesko - Be Dead or Die

1 Timothy 5:6 (KJV) But she that liveth in pleasure is **dead** while she liveth.

### Thanatos - Death

1 John 3:14 (KJV) We know that we have passed from **death** unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in **death**.

Here we have just looked at seven verses where God uses three different words to describe the condition of those who are not saved. The Bible teaches us here that the only condition that the unbeliever is in is a state of spiritual death. This applies to every person who has ever lived and goes back as far as the Garden of Eden.

*Genesis 2:16-17 (KJV) And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: {17} But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*

The Hebrew word for “die” is "mooth" which means “to die.” So we see that when Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, they entered into a state of spiritual death. It was not physical death at that moment because they had lived quite a number of years after their sin but because of their disobedience to God, they instantly went into a state of spiritual death. This spiritual death has been passed on to every human being down to the present. Physical death came at a later date.

Since the Bible covers this subject thoroughly, we cannot understand these verses to mean anything else but that the whole human race was plunged into spiritual death and remains there until a person becomes saved. Now that we know that people are spiritually dead, and reading the words for dead and death in the text, how can we come to any other conclusion than the fact that unsaved man is spiritually dead?

Now that we know that unsaved man is spiritually dead, then the question remains how could one believe by themselves or generate faith when they are dead? When Lazarus was in the tomb, did he have the ability to actually raise himself from the dead? The answer is a resounding no because he was physically dead plus his sister Martha stated that by now, a time of four days, he would stink because of decomposition. *John 11:39 (KJV) Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.* The reality is that when dealing with the subject of salvation, to reject the starting point of spiritual death is to literally bypass a cardinal truth of the Scriptures. Free willers do not like to think of themselves as spiritually dead. They think that because you can put on a blue tie or buy a steak for lunch that is somehow exercising free will and they erroneously equate

that type of choice with the ability to “accept Christ.” Nothing could be farther from the truth and more heretical because we have plainly seen from the Bible that a person, before salvation, is spiritually dead or lifeless which means at that point they are incapable of making any spiritual decisions from the state of being spiritually dead. You cannot even will the common cold from your body and you think you can will yourself into Heaven?

So now we see the Bible is teaching clearly that the state of mankind before salvation is that they are spiritually dead and the only thing dead people can be is dead. So then the next question is, if a person is spiritually dead, then how is it possible for them to become saved? Several things must happen first but not by us, by the hand of God alone. This next point is the moment the person really becomes saved.

When one is physically dead, the only way to make them alive again is through resurrection. The same principle applies to the spiritually dead. The soul must be resurrected from the dead but since the dead person does not have the ability to resurrect themselves, it must be done from the outside inward.

*Revelation 20:6 (KJV) Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.*

In Revelation 20:6, we read about a resurrection on which the second death has no power. The second death is to be sentenced to an eternity in Hell but because a person is resurrected from a state of spiritual death, the second death has no effect on that person. Why? Because they have now become saved eternally and the threat of Hell is now removed forever. This is not speaking of a future physical resurrection because of the language in the rest of the verse. It states that those who are partakers in the first resurrection will be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Christ a thousand years. *Revelation 1:6 (KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.* The thousand years is symbolic of the time period between the first and second coming which means during that time period as millions of Christians are called by God, they shall all reign with Christ.

*Romans 6:4 (KJV) Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.*

One of the most open verses about a person becoming born again from the dead is Romans 6:4 where it speaks about Christ being raised from the dead by God the Father, it goes on to state that we, being raised, like Christ should walk in newness of life. The words “even so” in the Greek text carries with it the meaning of “in this way or after this manner.” Now that we have been resurrected from the dead, we now take on a new life and new purpose and in Christ we are to walk in that manner.

Now that a person has been spiritually resurrected what is the next event that happens in the new believer’s life?

*John 14:17 (KJV) Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.*

Now that a person has been resurrected from spiritual death, where there was once a void in their soul is now filled with the Holy Spirit. He is called the Spirit of truth in John 14:17 and He now indwells the believer. It is the indwelling of the Holy Spirit that allows the Christian to function in the spiritual realm. It is through His power that the Christian will be able to perform the duties of Christianity and to perform their assigned ministry, which every Christian has. Let us now attend to what the Holy Spirit brings the Christian in the way of primary abilities. He doesn't indwell us in dormancy but gives the Christian their spiritual abilities.

Before a person is saved, they are spiritually dead and that makes it impossible for them to generate believing faith. The free willers always talk about exercising faith to believe in Christ yet not one of them has ever stated where the faith comes from. It cannot come from one who is spiritually dead just as physical life cannot be generated out of one who is physically dead such as Lazarus or the son of the widow of Nain. *Luke 7:12 (KJV) Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.*

So then the question remains, if the faith a person needs to believe is not generated from the person, where does it come from? The answer is simple and found in Scripture.

*Galatians 5:22 (KJV) But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,*

Faith is a fruit of the Holy Spirit and one can only have faith if they are already indwelled with the Holy Spirit, which means one can only have faith after they have become saved and not before. The spiritually dead person does not have the Holy Spirit indwelling them which means that only the one that the Holy Spirit indwells will have the fruits of the Spirit. Now that a Christian has faith as a fruit of the Holy Spirit, he or she is able to do something else which the spiritually dead person cannot do.

Now that one has a bedrock of faith given to them by the Holy Spirit, they may now believe the things of God. The word "believe" in the Greek text is "pisteuo" which is a verb denoting a work. If a person could believe in Christ without having the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, it would mean they have performed a work and that would mean they have worked for their salvation which is totally against what the Bible teaches in many places. *Ephesians 2:8-9 (KJV) For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: {9} Not of works, lest any man should boast.*

So then the question might be raised, if after the moment of salvation, we do a work, does that count against us as if we are trying to work for salvation? A group of people had asked Jesus what they could do to work the works of God and His response was very simple.

*John 6:28-29 (KJV) Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? {29} Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.*

So we see in this verse that the work of God is to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ. Now this is not the same as one who tries to believe without being regenerated. A person can believe because they now have the faith which can be exercised to believe. Why is this? Simply because they now believe by building on the faith they have been given from the Holy Spirit who indwells them when their souls were resurrected to newness of life from being spiritually dead. In other words, the Bible is teaching us that we cannot believe the things of God unless we have already become saved.

*1 Corinthians 2:14 (KJV) But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*

1 Corinthians 2:14 tells us plainly that the natural or unsaved man cannot receive or understand the things of God because they are spiritually dead and this means that a person cannot believe from a state of spiritual death. They must be indwelt by the Holy Spirit as a result of salvation.

*Romans 10:9 (KJV) That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.*

Let us look at one of our key verses from above. Romans 10:9 is a verse which teaches us that we must believe in our hearts that God raised Jesus from the dead and that we must confess it with our mouths. The word for “confess” in the Greek text is the word “homologeō” which literally means “to say the same thing.” In other words our testimony must be in line with the Word of God. That principle is found back in Amos. *Amos 3:3 (KJV) Can two walk together, except they be agreed?* To be agreed is to agree with the Word of God. Before salvation, the Bible was a book we were unable to understand and our lives were in opposition to the Bible but once we became saved, we are in agreement with the Scriptures.

Then we are to believe in our heart that God raised Jesus from the dead but with the old heart we were at enmity with God. However, when God saves us and resurrects our souls, He also gives us a new heart which would be able to ingest the things of God. *Ezekiel 36:26 (KJV) A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.* Now Romans 10:9 tells us to confess and believe. If we did these things from a state of spiritual death, it would be an attempted work for salvation but because God has already saved us and then given us spiritual abilities, they would be considered exercising the faith that we have and it would not be a work for salvation but a work in salvation which is what the believer is to be engaged in.

*Ephesians 2:10 (KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.*

We have plainly seen, without any verse manipulation, that before a person is saved they are spiritually dead and dead means dead. They do not have the ability to generate faith, to believe, or will themselves into salvation. We have also seen that a person must be saved prior, and it could be just a few seconds, to believing by means of faith which is given as a fruit of the Holy Spirit who indwells the believer and then gives them the ability to believe the things of God, simply because regeneration has already taken place. So let me just list the order of effectual salvation it is from Spiritual death to Spiritual resurrection to receiving the Holy Spirit to be given faith as a fruit to be able to believe the things of God. No unsaved person can will themselves into spiritual resurrection. It must be performed by God or the person stays spiritually dead. It is that simple. We did not have to assume anything but in our investigation of the doctrine of salvation, we found in the Scriptures, by means of a clear hermeneutic that before one can believe, God must perform a resurrection on our souls and that all takes place simultaneously. So when a person responds to a gospel call and is truly saved, that means God has resurrected that soul and because of the indwelling Holy Spirit, they now know their need for a Savior whereas before they became saved, they didn't even care about the things of God being in a state of spiritual death.

We have looked at two examples of assumptive hermeneutics whereby two teachings are prevalent and they are both without biblical foundation. Christians cannot continue to interpret the Bible in the way that we want God to write or the way we want the Scriptures to mean. If the church is ever going to get back to a place of strength, it must begin to look at the Scriptures from the way God wrote them and not the way we want to read them. The majority of Christianity has become very man-centered in that we view the Bible in a way that placates man instead of the way God wrote them. The fact that man sinned against a thrice holy God means that the way back to God is not one of ease because it cost the life of the Son of God to pay for the sins of His people. *Matthew 1:21 (KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.* Living the Christian life does not wholly consist of jumping up and down in church on Sunday or hearing some false preacher pacify his audience in a mega-church with all kind of sweet platitudes while completely ignoring the reality of sin. The true Christian will search the Scriptures diligently before accepting any teachings to ascertain whether they have heard the Scriptures being interpreted according to assumptive hermeneutics or through clear, harmonious hermeneutics which connect the teachings of Scripture without over-justification with many words.

Christians assume that everything they hear, especially from a well-known preacher, is correct according to the Scriptures and that is just not true. In fact, the more famous a preacher is, normally the sloppier they are with the Scriptures but because they are famous, everything they teach is accepted willy-nilly. For example, go to John MacArthur's church and say he is wrong about Mark 16:9-20. You will be escorted out the door. Go to Joel Osteen's church and say he is a false teacher. You will be escorted out the door.

This is why the Christian must spend time searching and researching the Scriptures to either confirm or reject what they heard. We looked at two popular teachings which are taught thousands of times each day and yet neither of those teachings have any biblical foundation but they are accepted as is without any question.

God gave us the Bible for wisdom and understanding, neither of these can be obtained if we refuse to research the Scriptures and accept everything we are told. The reality is that when we hear a popular preacher speak, we automatically go into assumptive mode, that is, based upon who is speaking we assume they are correct. This is very dangerous territory and is the reason that Christianity has so many confused Christians. There are a great number of teachings which are taught from the pulpits that are just not true and the reason that Christians become confused is because these teachings do not create a harmonious hermeneutic and if they clash with one another, it creates confusion and results in weak Christians and churches. This is why Christians can no longer rely on what we hear preached or what we read without confirming the teaching in Scripture. If the findings go against a popular preacher then so be it. This is why it is important for Christians to know whether they heard a teaching through assumptive hermeneutics or through real hermeneutics. If they pass on a false teaching, then they have become a false teacher themselves and no true Christians wants that moniker attached to them. Brethren, let us get serious!

## The Suffering of Christ

by Dr. Ken Matto

(John 19:30 KJV) When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

Today is called Good Friday and it is the day the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross to pay for the sins of His people all over the world. (*Mat 1:21 KJV*) *And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. (1 John 2:2 KJV) And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.* So not only was the death of Christ for those Elect in the first century, His sacrifice will have the power to save all those that God named before the foundation of the world for salvation. Actually, the name “Good Friday” is really not what it should be called. The word “good” is actually the word “God” which is from the Old English which would be early middle ages before the twelfth century. Today is God’s Friday. It is when God enacted the beginning of the end of His salvation program. So many think that it was only the Jews who delivered Christ up and the Romans cruelly treated Him and finally killed Him. All that is true, but it was God who was the one who had to do it for the sins of His Elect.

(*Isa 53:10 KJV*) *Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand.* The word “pleased” in this verse actually means “to be pleased or delighted.” It almost sounds cruel that God took pleasure in this horrible moment. Yes, because God knew what was to take place after that far outweighed the moments of pain and suffering. (*Heb 12:2 KJV*) *Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.* The word “despising” here means “to set aside or to ignore it” because the momentary shame of the cross was to yield an eternal, redeemed church. As a woman brings a child into the world, she suffers much pain and blood is shed in the process but those few moments of pain brings forth a new life into the world. The pain and suffering of Christ, brought into His Kingdom, a redeemed people without spot or wrinkle.

There are going to be a number of church services tonight all around the world and I can almost guarantee that the great majority of them are going to focus in on the sufferings of Christ to the neglect of the necessity of those sufferings and why He suffered and died. We need to really get passed the sufferings aspect of God’s Friday and get to the heart of the matter. In the Hebrews verse, even Christ set aside those few moments of sufferings knowing what the yield was going to be. We are never going to understand the deepness of the suffering of Christ on the cross because He and His Father have always been together throughout eternity and those few hours when Christ was abandoned by His Father while He became sin for us, is absolutely unknowable by any human being, redeemed or not. So why don’t we go into the churches tonight and see if we can focus on the aspect of why Christ was there to die and let us not only focus on the way He died but the reason and the result should be the foremost in our minds. May you have a blessed God’s Friday and Resurrection Sunday! (4/18/03)

## Back Sliding

By Dr. Ken Matto

The subject we are going to broach is back sliding. We have all heard at one time or another about a Christian who backslides and that is taken to mean they have either temporarily or permanently gone back into the world. The question then remains, is it possible for a Christian to do a 180 degree turn about in their walk? First, we need to get the definition of the term "backslide."

Backslide from the dictionary means "to revert to a worse condition or retrogress (which means to move backward).

Backslide from the Scriptures has three general meanings:

Proverbs 14:14 "to be disloyal or to deviate"

Jeremiah 2:19; 3:11 "toward or with apostasy"

Hosea 4:16 "to be stubborn or obstinate"

These three biblical definitions cover the meanings in Scripture of the term backsliding. There is a great spiritual principle concerning backsliding and that is, except for Proverbs 14:14 God is always speaking corporately about national Israel and not to individuals about backsliding. We will look at Proverbs 14:14 at the end of this study to see if that single verse can be applied to believers who go back into sin.

### Backsliding in the Old Testament

To give us an understanding of what God deems backsliding we must go to the Old Testament where the term "backsliding" is exclusively used. Since there are quite a number of verses dealing with this subject I am going to limit them to a few which will give us the general idea of what is in view.

#### Jeremiah 8:5

(Jer 8:5 KJV) Why *then* is this people of Jerusalem slidden back by a perpetual backsliding? they hold fast deceit, they refuse to return.

Here is the word which means "apostasy." Prior to the Babylonian capture of Judah she was steeped in idolatry and many were involved in the cult of Tammuz. Tammuz was the shepherd-god of vegetation and it was believed that Tammuz incarnated the creative powers of Spring which was the renewal of life that delivered the earth from the curse of the sterility of winter. There were also those involved in the Cult of the Queen of Heaven which was the Babylonian goddess "Ishtar." In Ephesus she was known as "Diana." Today, this false goddess is glorified in the Roman Catholic Church and is known as Mary. Many in both Israel and Judah were sacrificing children to the Ammonite god Molech in the Valley of Hinnom. It was these things that God condemned Judah for. They once walked in the knowledge of God but their lust for the world caused them to go into apostasy so they would be like the surrounding nations.

#### Jeremiah 31:22

(Jer 31:22 KJV) How long wilt thou go about, O thou backsliding daughter? for the LORD hath created a new thing in the earth, A woman shall compass a man.

The meaning of the word "backsliding" in this verse means "apostate or heathenous." As we saw in the previous Jeremiah verse that Judah was in an apostate position with their worship and adoration of the false gods of both the Assyrians and Babylonians. This can be seen openly in the books of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel.

#### **Hosea 4:16**

(Hosea 4:16 KJV) For Israel slideth back as a backsliding heifer: now the LORD will feed them as a lamb in a large place.

The term backsliding in this verse means "stubborn or obstinate." These terms are applied to those on an immovable course. Israel and Judah refused to listen to the prophets which God sent among them. God finally showed Judah their whoredoms by commanding Hosea to marry a prostitute. God showed them they had abandoned the way of righteousness and were no better than a prostitute. It is interesting that God uses the term "heifer" because the Israelites were not out of Egypt very long when they fashioned a calf to worship it. The golden calf itself was a picture of the hearts of the unbelieving Israelites. This shows that God's law cannot be obeyed from the external instead it has to be planted on the inside to radiate outward.

#### **Proverbs 14:14**

(Prov 14:14 KJV) The backslider in heart shall be filled with his own ways: and a good man *shall be satisfied* from himself.

Here is the back slider who deviates from the truth. The heart of the true believer is filled with the things of God because they are indwelt by the Holy Spirit. Notice this verse states that the backsliding person will be filled with their own ways. (Prov 1:31 KJV) *Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices.* In other words, the unbeliever will be filled with the fruit of lies and deceit. The unbeliever builds his life on many false teachings and philosophies to the point they start to live in them because they believe them and after a while they begin to embellish them and these embellishments normally lead to a false religion or system of beliefs such as evolution. This verse is telling us that this backslider is steeped in false beliefs since a deviation from the truth has taken place. The true believer can never deviate from the true teachings of God. There may be a misunderstanding but that is a far cry from accepting false doctrine. The back slider in this verse speaks of one who is unsaved.

#### **Backsliding in Contemporary times**

Now I would like to bring the biblical reality of backsliding up to today. God in His wisdom gave us two scenarios concerning backsliding and neither one concerns the true believer. First, the corporate backsliding of Israel and Judah is a picture of the backsliding of the corporate church today. Has not the modern church embraced a massive amount of false teachings? Isn't it also a major parallel how the corporate church is also trying to ally itself with the Roman Catholic Church which is the modern counterpart of the worship of ancient Ishtar. As Judah and Israel ran to the false gods of Ishtar and Tammuz, the modern Protestant church is running to the false god of Mary of the Roman church. I think this is a significant sign of the approaching end of the world. Israel and Judah both went into captivity for doing this and the modern church will be cut

off for doing this also. (Rev 11:7 KJV) *And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.* It is obvious from this one major parallel that many churches which were once faithful have succumbed to massive deceptions. However, the true believer in the church will not be part of this end time apostasy (a meaning of backsliding) because they have the testimony of Christ within them and they will not be able to be deceived by the backsliding of the corporate church. Let us look at some verses which detail this.

(Mat 24:15-17 KJV) When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) {16} Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: {17} Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:

Today we see the abomination of desolation standing in every church as each assembly falls prey to some form of false teaching. This verse tells us that those who are spiritual Israel or of Judaea must leave these churches and flee to the mountains. The mountains represent the Kingdom of God. (Psa 48:1 KJV) *Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in the mountain of his holiness.* The true believer is also admonished to not return to his house to take anything out. As the true believers leave the churches which are falling at an exponential rate, they are not to take anything from them such as their false teachings, their false traditions, their false philosophies and their true whoredoms. We must make a complete and final break from the false church even those which we grew up in and have many friends in. Our obedience to God in this area is paramount to our social life.

### Carnal Christians

A teaching which follows on the heels of backsliding is the idea of a carnal Christian. This basically means that a person who is saved has chosen to walk in the ways of the world. This stems from a belief that a person can lose their salvation. Normally, the teaching is that a person can be saved and living in sin. First, we did not find one passage in Scripture which states that a true believer can backslide into sin since we saw the meaning of backslide in the only verse which is aimed at an individual. The meaning of that verse (Prov. 14:14) showed us that only an unbeliever can be categorized as a backslider since backsliding is sin against God.

Secondly, the term carnal Christian is an oxymoron. If a person is walking in the flesh they are not a Christian and if they are walking in the spirit they are not carnal. It is like the term "proven theory" in reference to evolution. If it is proven then it is no longer a theory but if it is a theory it has not been proven. The trashing of biblical language in the church is horrendous.

(Rom 8:1 KJV) There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, **who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.**

(Rom 8:6-7 KJV) For **to be carnally minded is death**; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. {7} Because **the carnal mind is enmity against God**: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

Romans 8:1 tells us that a person faces no condemnation if they walk after (according to) the spirit because the Christian walks according to the spirit but there is condemnation to those who walk according to the flesh. Why? Those who walk according to the flesh are unsaved.

Romans 8:6-7 tells us that the carnal mind is enmity against God. Romans 5:1 says that the true believer now has peace with God and is no longer at enmity with Him. This in itself proves that someone who is in the flesh is still an enemy of God while the true believer is at peace with God because they are in the Spirit. The carnal mind is death but God gives His children life. There is the great dichotomy. If you are carnal you are unsaved, if you are in the Spirit you are saved. Therefore, there is no such thing as a carnal Christian, either you are carnal unto death or in the Spirit unto life. There is no middle ground. You are either serving Christ or Satan. Now I am not saying that Christians do not sin but I am saying they do not sin as a lifestyle. Pastors that label their congregants as carnal Christians should be confronting these people in their sin instead of comforting them in their sin with a non-biblical label.

### **Going Backwards**

Closely related to the idea of backsliding in Scripture is going backwards otherwise known as "Slain in the Spirit" which shows that those in the charismatic movement believe they are being made more spiritual as they go backward believing it is of the Holy Spirit. However, when we searched the Scriptures we found that going backwards is a sign that a person is under the judgment of God. We will look at that in more detail in another chapter.

Here are verses which speak of going backwards under the judgment of God: Genesis 49:17; 1 Samuel 4:18; Psalm 40:14; Psalm 70:2; Isaiah 1:4; Isaiah 28:13; Isaiah 44:25; Isaiah 59:14; Jeremiah 7:24; Jeremiah 15:6; Lamentations 1:8; John 18:6

### **All The Verses**

Here are all the verses which use the word backslider and derivatives:

Proverbs 14:14

Jer 3:6, 8, 11-12, 14, 22; 8:5; 31:22; 49:4

Hosea 4:16; 11:7; 14:4

### **Summary**

When God spoke about backsliding, He spoke to the corporate people of Israel and Judah. He did not single out any particular person. The Scriptures teach us that backsliding is a state of unbelief and not a temporary lack of belief on the part of a true believer. When a person is backsliding they are in rebellion to God and are in an unsaved state. Nowhere did we find in the Scriptures that a backsliding person is a carnal Christian either. "Carnal Christian" is another contrived term to ease the conscience of the sinner so they are still welcome in the local assembly. If anyone has ever studied the life of some gangsters they will find an interesting quirk in their lives. Many of them were regular church goers. For example, Hymie Weiss of the North Side Gang which opposed Al Capone in the 1920's went to mass almost every day. He was personally responsible for the murder of over 20 men until he was gunned down in 1926 going to his

church. Would we consider him a carnal Christian or an unbeliever? That is an extreme case right? So what is the difference between killing men and standing at a slot machine? They are both lives of sin and need to be labeled as such. There is therefore no such thing as a carnal Christian or a backsliding Christian since neither are found in the Scriptures.

## Biblical Absolutes

The following is provided as food for thought. The logic is a bit deep here and there and who's to say the conclusions are correct? It is merely an exercise of the mind starting with the three main attributes of God and then drawing conclusions. The information is provided here to provoke your thought. Consider it if you choose.

The 3 Attributes of God are:

**Omnipotence** - He has the power to do anything He desires (Job 42:2; Luke 1:37).

**Omnipresence** - He is in all places, all the time (1 Kings 8:27; Psalm 90:2).

**Omniscience** - He knows all things (1 John 3:20).

Out of these attributes flow His works:

**Election** - choosing who is saved (John 6:37-40; Eph. 1:4; 11; Rom.. 8:29-30; Acts 13:48).

**Creation** - bringing the universe into existence (Isaiah 44:24; Col. 1:16-18).

**Providence** - guiding and providing for His creation (Psalm 135:7; Ecc. 3:13; Acts 14:17).

**There are natural conclusions to be drawn from God's attributes.**

**A.** If He is omnipotent, then He has the power to accomplish anything He desires. He can create, alter, or uncreate a universe and all that is in it.

\*\*\* *Therefore He is able to Create whatever He desires.*

**B.** If He is omnipresent, then nothing is hidden from Him - this means every dimension; all time whether past, present, or future; and every form of existence either thought, action, or substance.

\*\*\* *Therefore He encompasses all He creates.*

**C.** If He is Omniscient, then He eternally comprehends all things actual as well as potential.

**1.** All things actual means all things that do exist.

**i.** This includes all combinations of all objects and events that exist.

**a)** This includes every dimension; all time whether past, present, or future; and every form of existence either thought, action, or substance.

**2.** All things potential means all things that could exist.

**i.** This includes all combinations of all events that might exist but do not.

**a)** This includes all that exists only in the mind of God but was not chosen by Him (through His creative action) to exist outside of His mind.

\*\*\* *Therefore, He knows everything about everything He has created.*

**Conclusion:** With all knowledge, God has absolute control over all He encompasses.

**In creation God brought into being a finite set of actualities derived from an infinite set of potentialities.**

(By actuality I mean all that does exist. By potentiality I mean all that could exist.)

- A.** The combinations of the actualities are not infinite,
1. because the actualities are finite to begin with and are, therefore, incapable of infinite combination.
  2. because having been created and set in motion by God the actual number of combinations has been decided upon by Him.

- B.** None of the actualities are accidental, nor can they be accidental,
1. since accident would suggest something beyond God's omnipotence, omnipresence, and omniscience.
  2. since accident would imply another creator outside the knowledge, presence, and control of God.

- C.** None of these actualities can function in a manner that is outside the knowledge, presence, or control of God
1. because they have been brought into being by Him.
  2. because God cannot make something greater than He.
- \*\*\* Therefore all that exists is under His knowledge and control.*

**All that exists, exists not because of accident, but because God has chosen it to exist.**

- A.** including any result of any combination of events.
1. since that result would have been foreknown and, therefore, brought about by God as He selected the causes that brought that result.
- B.** Therefore, all results are foreknown; that is, they are known because they are brought about by God, and, by logic, must be what God has caused to occur
1. therefore it is foreknown to occur.
- C.** This includes those events which are the results of creatures with wills because,
1. no will could exist apart from the knowledge or control of God because God created all wills and/or the condition that provides for the existence of the will.

**It follows then that evil is something permitted by God and under His absolute control.**

- A.** Evil is the permitted rebellion against God, yet it is not greater than He, nor is it out of the reach of His control, nor beyond His knowledge.
- B.** God encompasses all that is, including evil. That is, evil is like a circle within a circle.
1. Evil, apart and separate from God, operates within His controlled realm.

2. Since nothing could exist outside God's control.

C. Evil, then, operating within the realm of God, can be used by God for His good (Gen. 50:20; Acts 2:23).

**Additionally, it also follows, then, that everyone is either elected or not elected into salvation.**

A. This is because in God's infinite control of all things in all time, nothing can exist that He has not brought directly or indirectly into existence, through direct creation or the consequence of His creation.

1. This includes the person with the will to choose or reject God.

i. Each person is created by God with tendencies, preferences, and abilities.

a) This includes the "tendency" to believe or not as some maintain.

ii. Each person is put, by God, in an environment that is helpful or not helpful to receiving the gospel.

iii. God is aware of all these variables, knows the outcome, and places the person there.

iv. Therefore, salvation is dependent solely upon God.

a) because God is in control of all variables of all situations including the wills of His creation.

**It could be no other way.**

## **Christians Need to Become Biblicists**

By Dr. Ken Matto

When I mention “The Bible” I am referring to the King James Bible not the modern versions which are a prison unto themselves.

Definition of Biblicist in the 1913 Webster Dictionary “One skilled in the knowledge of the Bible; a demonstrator of religious truth by the Scriptures.”

The Free Dictionary states “a person who strictly follows the teachings of the Bible.”

The majority of Christians are slaves to theological systems because all churches are based upon a theological system.

Believe it or not, modern Christianity is not based upon the teachings of Scripture but is based on the skewed teachings which are taken from the Bible in its purest form and then run through a collator of a theological system thus creating the teachings for whichever the interpreter wants. All one has to do is look at the subject of end times and you will find many interpretations of the end times. A preacher once told me that there is Scripture which backs up the pre-tribulation view, the mid-tribulation view, and the post-tribulation view. Can someone tell me how the Bible endorses three different return dates for the Lord Jesus Christ? If he is coming back mid-trib, then the other two are wrong. If he is coming back post-trib then the other two are wrong. If he is coming back pre-trib then the other two are wrong. Do you see the problem with relegating your beliefs to a theological system? Each one claims they have the truth and can prove it, yet they all differ from each other. So how do you come to the actual truth? In other words, we need to celebrate the Passover except in a different format. If we are to come to truth, then we need to pass over all these theological systems and go directly to the Bible which is what God ultimately intended for all his believers.

For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints. (1 Corinthians 14:33)

Theological systems are the sources of all confusion within Christianity. Each one is different than the others therefore they all cannot be true. Theological systems are based upon a “round peg in a square hole” philosophy. Theological systems force their beliefs upon the Bible and then twist scriptures to adapt to their beliefs. For example, let’s look at some really aberrant teachings within Christianity.

### **Willful Sin Cult**

<sup>26</sup> For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins, <sup>27</sup> But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. (Hebrews 10:26-27)

They teach that if a person receives the knowledge of the truth and continues to sin, then they are no longer able to be saved. Verse 26 does not say they became saved and then continued in sin but that they just received the knowledge of the truth which is there is no

sacrifice for sin except the Lord Jesus Christ. Let me tell you how bogus this teaching is. I will use myself as an example. I first heard the true Gospel when I was 12 years old and did not get saved till I was 27. Believe me, I did a lot of willful sin in those 15 years but according to this cult, I should not have been able to be saved because I continued on in my sin for 15 more years.

### **Water Baptism Saves**

Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. (Acts 2:38)

This verse is the capstone of those who advocate the concept that water baptism saves. Peter responded to them, not in the letter of the law concerning some kind of offering instead he responds with the Gospel message. The first thing he tells them that they must repent. Repentance is an act whereby your mind is changed about something which leads to a lifestyle commensurate with that change of mind. The word “repent” in the Greek is in the Imperative Mood which means it is a command and not an option. Repentance is not something that is done before the moment of salvation but repentance is simultaneous with salvation. Repentance is never initiated by man but by God. *In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; (2 Timothy 2:25)* A person being spiritually dead would be unable to do any type of work for salvation. We find in 2 Timothy 2:25 that God is the one who gives repentance so the truth may be acknowledged. Only one that is saved will be able to acknowledge the truth.

Then Peter states that a person must be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sin. This is not speaking of water baptism because there is no way that water baptism can ever remove sins from a person and initiate salvation. The baptism which is in view is not water baptism but it contains two elements. *Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? (Romans 6:3)* The first element is being baptized into the death of Christ. Now this is not speaking of water baptism but the fact that we are baptized into Christ through the spiritual rebirth. That baptism into Christ affects us by giving us a death to the things of the world. We read that we were baptized into His death. When Christ went to the cross, He died for the sins of His Elect but He also showed us that He died to the things of the world. This thought is carried from verse 2 concerning the death of the believer to the things which oppose true Christianity. *God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? (Romans 6:2)* The baptizing that we receive is a uniting of the believer into Christ and into the death of the magnetism and performance of sin. Water baptism is just an outward sign of what happens inwardly when someone becomes saved and has no significance in salvation.

Then Peter goes on to preach that it is to be done in the name of Jesus. These are not just words which are appended to our prayers but the name of Jesus carries with it all the authority of Heaven and the power of Eternal God. For one to be in the name of Jesus, they must be saved by Christ. This is why Peter states that these things must be done in the name of Christ because only He has the authority to save someone. For if a person is granted repentance by God and is baptized into the death of Christ and in the name of

Christ, the second element is they are given the gift of the Holy Spirit to indwell them eternally. Christians are made alive unto the things of God by means of the indwelling Holy Spirit but those in worldly religions are attempting to reach God while remaining dead in their sins. *God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:24)* This is how we truly worship God. Once we are saved, we have the Spirit of God indwelling us and that is how we worship Him in spirit and in truth because the Holy Spirit leads us into all truth. *(Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. (John 16:13)* Once we become a person who is spiritually alive, then we worship God the biblical way and not the religious way.

### **Baby Dedication**

Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: *and the fruit of the womb is his reward.* (Psalm 127:3)

This is one of the verses used in baby dedication which means that the parents present the baby in front of the church and dedicate it to the Lord. It sounds religious but has absolutely no spiritual benefit. There is nothing to indicate if that child is going to become saved in which they will be dedicated to the Lord by means of salvation or if they never become saved they will be dedicated to Satan. Baby dedication is just another “feel good” ritual.

### **Grave Sucking**

And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band *of men*; and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet. (2 Kings 13:21)

This has got to be one of the most aberrant beliefs ever taught in the church. It is called “grave sucking” where a person lays upon the grave of a famous Christian pastor or teacher or evangelist and then a transfer takes place, the anointing of that dead person is then transferred to the person laying on top of the grave. This is satanic to the core and this is how low many Christians have sunk. 2 Kings 13:21 is the verse they point to for validation of this macabre act. Here is a full article on it:

<https://pulpitandpen.org/2018/04/19/bethel-pastor-contradicts-bill-johnsons-narrative-infamous-grave-sucking/>

Once a saved person dies then their soul goes to be with God instantly and their body then decomposes in the grave. There is no anointing or any spiritual power in a dead body. This is nothing but occultism.

### **Soaking Prayer**

Starting in the 1990s there has been a tremendous interest in mysticism within the Christian church. Soaking prayer is no exception. Soaking prayer is when a Christian sits down in solitude and may have some background music on and then just sits there and attempts to empty their mind and then when they feel a tingling, a sensation of hot or cold, or a gentle breeze blowing through them, then they believe that God is present with them and they are to sit there and just soak in God’s presence. This is satanic in nature

because if you read about people that have had demonic encounters, they will have temperature inversions, touched by demons even scratched, there is also wind present which gives the demonic entity a presence, and then soaking prayer with your mind going blank makes it open season for satanic suggestion. Nowhere in Scripture is a person of faith to ever let their mind go blank. We pray using words and a focus of our prayers if for a specific reason. We are to be thankful, seek the Lord, ask about our ministry, etc. We never sit with a blank mind because then how will you ever communicate with God if we never say a word or if demonic interference is present?

I have given 5 examples of how far the church has sunk simply because they have forsaken the Bible and would rather subject themselves to the false theological systems which are now getting worse in the modern church. The Bible is used not to learn and study but it is used as an instrument to prove aberrant teachings in false churches and that is why modern versions are so desired because they go right along with every false teaching.

### **What are the Positive Aspects of Becoming a Biblicist?**

When one forsakes the life of living within the prison walls of a theological system there are many positive things which take place within the believer's life. I wish to give you some of the encouraging things that take place. Becoming a Biblicist is for any Christian at any stage in their walk. One can be saved 1 year or 50 years and can enjoy the great benefits of becoming a Biblicist. When you become a Biblicist it transfers to you from the pages of Scripture the real teachings of the Bible without any filtering through a theological system.

### **Freedom**

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)

The word "free" in this verse carries with it the meaning of "liberate." What are we liberated from? When Christ went to the cross all the Jews at that time were liberated from keeping the law just as all those who became saved and would become saved in the future. No longer did the Jews have to keep the law of Moses since Christ fulfilled all the demands of God's righteous law. The Jews actually became free in 33 A.D. but chose to remain in bondage. The same situation exists today in Christianity. Ask any Christian how they understand the things of God and they will all claim they get it from the Bible. No they don't! A very small percentage of Christians actually study the Bible, not just read it but study it. The great majority get their understandings from prophecy books, theology books, media ministers, their home church, friends in a Bible study who just parrot what they read. I know because when I became saved the first thing I did was buy theological materials at a Christian bookstore and then filtered my biblical understanding through them. So I speak from experience when I state that most Christians get their understanding from their chosen theological systems. I was a theological slave to dispensationalism and I did not realize it. The time of my liberation came in 1986 when I rejected my usage of the New American Standard Bible and then started using the King James Bible.

I started studying the Scriptures according to the Scriptures and found out that the beliefs I held were diametrically opposed to the Scriptures. The subjects that the Bible debunks

were the core beliefs of dispensationalism such as the pre-trib rapture, the millennial reign of Christ, modern Israel was a fulfillment of the promise of God for the Jews to come back to the land, who the Antichrist is, the tribulation period, etc. The fact that the Bible completely rejects the teachings of dispensationalism became a time of deliverance from an erroneous theological system. Now as I continue to study the Bible alone, the Scriptures which were forced to create some type of theological system now became understandable within the context of the entire Bible. I was free to connect Bible verses which were forbidden under the prison walls of dispensationalism. For example the Christian Zionists are ecstatic that there are plans for a third temple. When I studied this further, according to the Scriptures, I found out the third temple was being built since the time of Christ. Let me show you:

First Temple – Solomon’s

Second Temple – Zerubbabel

Third Temple built after the sacrifice of Christ:

Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? (1 Corinthians 3:16)

What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Corinthians 6:19)

When I was dispensationalist I was looking for the Third Temple to be built in Jerusalem but once you study the Scriptures, you find that Christ has been building the third temple for 4,000 years when you factor in the believers in both the Old and New Testaments.

### **Scriptures Open Up**

Once you stop filtering the Bible through theological systems, the Scriptures open up because your spiritual mind has been liberated to accept biblical truth outside the parameters of whatever system you have been freed from. How many times have you heard Christians blame themselves because someone they witnessed to had died unsaved? I have heard that countless number of times. They claim if they would have just witnessed more the person would have accepted the Lord. Here is another liberating teaching from Scripture. Many Christians feel guilty because someone died unsaved and they believed that it was up to them to bring them into the kingdom by consistent witness.

The Bible removes that mindset by teaching us the condition of man before salvation.

And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; (Colossians 2:13)

Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved; ) (Ephesians 2:5)

The Bible clearly teaches that a person is spiritually dead and no Christian has the ability to raise the dead. Lazarus was physically dead and did he raise himself? No, the Lord Jesus Christ raised him from the dead. The reason this is so liberating because when I witness to a person or send a tract or give money to a tract producing ministry that sends

them all over the world, my responsibility is done and God's responsibility begins. If that person behind me reads the bumper stickers on my car then they have been witnessed to and if they do not become saved, my job was done. My job is to present the gospel whether by voice or by written word or supporting legitimate ministries and it is God's responsibility to save them. If they do not become saved, it is not because I didn't witness to them but they were not the Elect of God. Free will is a prison and causes people to think it is up to them to make converts. The words "make disciples" is not found in the Bible simply because we do not make them, God does! Once we understand this truth there is no guilt on our part if someone we witnessed to dies unsaved. It removes a lot of remorse from a Christian to know that if they witnessed to a person, they fulfilled their responsibility. Satan likes to use that guilt and literally push Christians into depression rendering them unusable in ministry.

### **Biblical Understanding Increases**

Once you breach the parameters of a theological system and extract studies from the Bible alone, your biblical understanding will soar. Not only will your biblical understanding increase mightily, once you establish a truth you will be unable to be moved from it. When I was a young Christian I heard people speak in tongues and even inquired at a ministry as to why tongues were needed. One man said to me "That's evidence of the Holy Spirit." I was saved about a year when I received that answer but in the following years I started to investigate the subject of tongues from the Scriptures alone. I had found out that tongues in the Scriptures were legitimate, established languages. When you compare modern tongues to the biblical tongues, they are totally opposite. Biblical tongues in both Acts and 1 Corinthians were established languages but modern tongues is nothing but gibberish and is of no value because they are obviously satanic in nature. Oh but the charismatics claim it is heavenly language. The Bible answers that in Acts 2 there were seventeen languages mentioned and they were all established languages at that time. They were languages spoken here on earth not Heaven but where does gibberish of modern tongues originate? No one knows except there have been missionaries that have heard speech like that in heathen tribes and even Roman Catholics have spoken in tongues. So you know if unbelievers are doing it, then it is not of the Holy Spirit. Since I have done the studies from the Scriptures on this, no one can change my beliefs about modern tongues knowing it is all fake.

### **No Longer Ruled by the Teachings and Interpretations of Men**

Once you begin to take your studies from the Bible, then the interpretations and teachings of men now become filtered through the Bible. You can listen to the pastor or listen to a media minister armed with your Bible. You are no longer at the mercy of their interpretations. If they say something in line with the Bible then you can agree but if they stray from truth, then you can reject it based upon the Scriptures. The Bible is the only authority a Christian needs. I remember some years ago a man asked Ravi Zacharias a question concerning the Roman Catholic Church. He asked if the Roman Catholic Church was a cult? Ravi took him around in circles and never gave him a straight answer. The answer is simple, it is because it is a cult of the Virgin. There have been many virgin cults down through the ages such as:

1. Isis - Egypt
2. Shing Moo - China

3. Parameta - Hindu (many others also)
4. Diana - Ephesians
5. The Celestial Virgin - Blavatsky - New Age
6. Mary - Roman Catholicism
7. Hestia - Greece
8. Vesta - Rome
9. Ishtar - Babylon

So as we can see that Roman Catholicism is a cult because it lines up with the other virgin cults from ancient times right up to the present. *For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; (1 Timothy 2:5)* There is only one mediator between God and man and that is the Lord Jesus Christ, not Mary as the Roman Catholic Church teaches. Mary is not mentioned after Acts 1:14. If she was a co-redeemer with Christ, then she should have been mentioned further on in the New Testament. See how the Bible refutes the idea of a virgin cult!

### **Understanding the Bible from God's Point of View**

One of the major mistakes that many Christians make is that they look and understand the Bible from their point of view. When God gave us the Bible, he did so for the express purpose of changing our understandings to God's teachings and not to use the Bible to enforce our own preconceived beliefs. It is a shame that Christians look to their desires, emotions, and feelings as the filters for their biblical understanding. God gave us the Bible so we would understand his viewpoints on many different subjects. Let me give a major example of this. How many times have you heard some Christians proclaim that they are "sinners saved by grace?" The reality is that we were saved by grace from a life of sin and salvation happened only one time in our life. Christians who continue to proclaim themselves as sinners are being arrogantly humble. Christ did not go to the cross to make us sinners but went to the cross to take his Elect from sinner to Saint. Nowhere in the Scriptures does God ever refer to his redeemed children as sinners. The term "sinners" is applied to unbelievers only. *But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly. (Genesis 13:13)* Notice the term "sinners" is used to describe the wicked men of Sodom.

Now of course some biblically illiterate person will come at you and in a belittling manner and ask you, "does that mean you don't sin anymore?" The difference in being a wicked sinner like the men of Sodom and sinning after salvation is a wide gulf. The unregenerate sinner, if they die without salvation, will be cast into everlasting damnation. The redeemed Saint in Christ when they sin have had all their sins paid for plus they no longer live a life of sin. The unbeliever goes from sin to sin but the believer goes from faith to faith.

Now how does God view the believer? Remember the Bible is written from God's point of view and not ours.

But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: (1 Peter 2:9)

To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace *be* unto you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. (Colossians 1:2)

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful. (Revelation 17:14)

When we look at these three representative verses, do we find the term “sinner” compatible with any of these descriptions of the redeemed believer in Christ? The answer is no! Those Christians who walk around claiming they are just “sinners saved by grace” are making it easier for them to justify their sin. *For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he: Eat and drink, saith he to thee; but his heart is not with thee. (Proverbs 23:7)* If they continue to think they are still sinners, they will act on those beliefs but if they realize God has made them Saints, then they will have a hard time finding affinity with this world and its sin traps. If we think like a sinner, we will act like a sinner. If we think like a Saint, we will act like a Saint.

I once debated a pastor who used the term “sinner saved by grace” and stated it was false humility. He rejected my analysis and but he believed that drinking Highballs and women wearing short skirts was Christian Liberty. There it is, as he thinketh in his heart, so is he. God sees his children in Christ as redeemed Saints on the way home and never classifies them as sinners because that would be an affront to the Lord Jesus Christ’s sacrifice on Calvary. Saints are on their way to Heaven and sinners to hell. This is what I mean interpreting the Bible as God meant it to be interpreted, void of all man’s fallacious notions.

### **We only Need One Source for all Truth**

The Bible is the only authority not the final authority! If Christianity is to be united, it must stop compartmentalizing itself. God gave us the Bible to guide us into all truth but it was man who turned it into a theological sourcebook. We need to look at the Bible as God’s Holy Word to his children and not 31,102 verses of proof texts to endorse what I want to believe. God’s word solves all the theological problems and confusion created by men. The Bible needs to be our only source for truth and understanding. Once we adopt a Bible Only understanding, confusion and chaos will disappear and our understanding will open up. The Holy Spirit penned the Scriptures, not theological systems. Those are man’s blunders. This is not to say that reference books are not helpful like Bible dictionaries, Bible almanacs, Bible maps, Bible handbooks, or Bible guides. God gave us the method to interpret the Bible and that is comparing Scripture with Scripture. *Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Corinthians 2:13)* Comparing the Bible with newspapers, prophecy moguls and their prison interpretations, news broadcasts, TV news, etc. are not spiritual and anyone who looks at secular sources and tries to apply their findings to the Scriptures will never come to truth. *Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. (2 Timothy 3:7)* This is why there are so many false interpretations out there but it doesn’t have to be that way.

### **What are the Negative Aspects of Becoming a Biblicist?**

Just as there are tremendous positive aspects about being a Biblicist, there are also some negative aspects that you will have to get used to because others will come against you.

### **You will be Misunderstood**

Many Christians will think you are trying to tear down their belief systems when in essence you are trying to improve their biblical understanding. They will believe that you are trying to get them to have faith in some cultic belief systems when in reality you are trying to get them to transfer their understanding from man's words to God's words. The majority of Christians you speak with will misunderstand your motives simply because theological systems have been around for 2,000 years and the great majority of Christians have come to place their trust in them not realizing they have short circuited their belief horizon and have placed serious limitations on their understandings along with many false understandings.

### **Accused of Being a Know It All**

You will be listening to something some preacher or media minister will be saying and if it doesn't line up with Scripture, you will definitely challenge the teaching from the Scriptures. Then those who hear you will categorize you as a know it all simply because you are pointing out a discrepancy between the teaching and the Bible. *I have more understanding than all my teachers: for thy testimonies are my meditation. (Psalm 119:99)* The Lord didn't put this verse in the Bible to make arrogant people but he put it there to confirm that if you study the Bible and some teacher is quoting or teaching from man's words, then your understanding will surpass theirs by means of learning from the Bible.

### **A Troublemaker**

This is probably the most used moniker given to Bible based Christians. If your church teaches something which is contrary to the Bible and you challenge those teachings, then you will be considered a troublemaker and most likely escorted out the door. The reality is that those who dispense false teachings are the ones who are the real troublemakers. A situation like that happened back in the Old Testament.

<sup>17</sup> And it came to pass, when Ahab saw Elijah, that Ahab said unto him, *Art thou he that troubleth Israel?* <sup>18</sup> And he answered, I have not troubled Israel; but thou, and thy father's house, in that ye have forsaken the commandments of the LORD, and thou hast followed Baalim. (1 Kings 18:17-18)

Ahab had exchanged the worship of the true God with the worship of the false god Baal. When Elijah confronted Ahab, Ahab asks Elijah if he was the one who is troubling Israel? Then Elijah responded that it was Ahab who troubled Israel by forsaking the commandments of the LORD and following Baal. The same situation has happened in the church whereby much of the teaching has replaced the Bible and in its place is man's teachings. So those who do not teach the Bible or create wrong interpretations of the Bible are actually troubling the church because they have forsaken the commandments of the LORD which is the Bible for the teachings of men.

## **A Non-Conformist**

If you are ever called a non-conformist then you are in good company. That is exactly how the Pilgrims were viewed by the clergy of the Church of England. The Pilgrims would not conform to unbiblical teachings so they moved to the Netherlands and then on to America. True Christianity is supposed to conform to the Bible and not to anything else including theological systems. This is why God gave us the Scriptures. The reality is that those who do not conform to the Scriptures are the actual non-conformists and not those who adhere to the Scriptures. *Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. (Acts 5:29)* Peter knew that obedience to God must always eclipse obedience to man.

## **Summary**

This study was penned for the purpose of showing Christians how far Christianity has strayed from the actual teachings of Scripture. If Christianity is to become strong again in this world, it needs to place biblical teachings above man's desires, preferences, and emotions. It is very hard to find any media ministry which is not compromised and I included non-charismatics as well. The vast majority of churches are compromised in that they have adopted theological systems and replaced the true word of God with Roman Catholic counterfeits called versions. It is imperative that the individual Christian must do their own biblical studies and not leave it to others. Reading a theology or prophecy book is not doing true Bible study. There must be no man-made filters between the Bible and your understanding. If the Bible states election, then it is election. If the Bible speaks about everlasting punishment, then it is everlasting punishment. If the Bible states that marriage after divorce is adultery, then it is adultery. Changing the word of God or softening the word of God so it does not sound offensive is akin to adding or subtracting to the word of God which carries eternal penalties. In the Middle Ages when the Reformers were bringing the truth it was "Thus Saith The LORD." Today it is "let me check my 12 translations and then think about what is in view." If you are going to be strong in the LORD, then you must adhere to the Bible alone no matter what others think of you or accuse you of. It was Christ who died for you, not your pastor or your best friend. Serving the LORD requires you to serve him in truth and if you know the truth of Scripture, you have been freed up to accomplish whatever task he gives you.

Remember John 8:32 again:

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)

The word "free" in John 8:32 also carries with it the meaning of "liberate." To be a truly liberated Christian, the Bible must be your only source of truth whether others accept you or not.

## Contrast between the Physical and Eternal Covenants

### Conditional Abrahamic Promise to Physical Seed Only

(Gen 12:7 KJV) And the LORD appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the LORD, who appeared unto him.

(Gen 15:18-21 KJV) In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: {19} The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, {20} And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, {21} And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.

(Deu 8:18-20 KJV) But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. {19} And it shall be, **if** thou do at all forget the LORD thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. {20} As the nations which the LORD destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the LORD your God.

(Deu 9:4-5 KJV) Speak not thou in thine heart, after that the LORD thy God hath cast them out from before thee, saying, For my righteousness the LORD hath brought me in to possess this land: but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD doth drive them out from before thee. {5} Not for thy righteousness, or for the uprightness of thine heart, dost thou go to possess their land: but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee, **and that he may perform the word which the LORD sware unto thy fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.**

(Josh 21:43-45 KJV) **And the LORD gave unto Israel all the land which he sware to give unto their fathers; and they possessed it, and dwelt therein.** {44} And the LORD gave them rest round about, **according to all that he sware unto their fathers:** and there stood not a man of all their enemies before them; the LORD delivered all their enemies into their hand. {45} **There failed not ought of any good thing which the LORD had spoken unto the house of Israel; all came to pass.**

(Neh 9:7-8 KJV) Thou art the LORD the God, who didst choose Abram, and broughtest him forth out of Ur of the Chaldees, and gavest him the name of Abraham; {8} And foundest his heart faithful before thee, and madest a covenant with him to give the land of the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Jebusites, and the Girgashites, to give it, I say, **to his seed, and hast performed thy words;** for thou art righteous:

### Unconditional Abrahamic Promise to Abraham and His "Seed"

(Gen 13:15 KJV) For all the land which thou seest, **to thee** will I give it, **and to thy seed for ever.**

(Gen 15:5 KJV) And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell **the stars, if thou be able to number them:** and he said unto him, **So shall thy seed be.**

(Gen 17:4 KJV) As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be **a father of many nations.**

(Gen 17:5-7 KJV) Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. {6} And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee. {7} And **I will** establish my covenant **between me and thee** and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.

(Rom 4:13 KJV) For the promise, that he should be the **heir of the world,** was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

(Psa 37:11 KJV) But the meek shall **inherit the earth;** and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.

(Mat 5:5 KJV) Blessed are the meek: for they shall **inherit the earth.**

(Gal 3:8 KJV) And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall **all nations** be blessed.

(Gal 3:16 KJV) Now to **Abraham and his seed** were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, **which is Christ.**

(Gal 3:28-29 KJV) There is **neither Jew nor Greek,** there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are **all one in Christ Jesus.** {29} **And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.**

(Rom 4:16 KJV) Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure **to all the seed;** not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of **Abraham; who is the father of us all,**

(Gal 3:7 KJV) Know ye therefore that they which are **of faith,** the same are the **children of Abraham.**

(Eph 3:6 KJV) That the **Gentiles should be fellowheirs,** and of the **same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel;**

(Deu 10:16 KJV) **Circumcise** therefore the **foreskin of your heart,** and be no more stiffnecked.

(Rom 2:28-29 KJV) For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one **inwardly;** and **circumcision is that of the heart,** in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

(Phil 3:3 KJV) For **we** are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and **rejoice in Christ Jesus,** and have no confidence in the flesh.

#### Israel

(Isa 45:17 KJV) But **Israel** shall be saved in the LORD with an **everlasting salvation;** ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

(Rom 9:6-8 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. **For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:** {7} Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, **In Isaac shall thy seed be called.** {8} That is, They which are

the children of the flesh, these are **not** the children of God: **but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.**

(Rom 11:26 KJV) And so **all Israel shall be saved**: as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

(Rom 2:28-29 KJV) For he is **not** a Jew, which is one **outwardly**; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} **But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit,** and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

(Deu 30:6 KJV) **And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed,** to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

(John 8:38-44 KJV) I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and **ye do that which ye have seen with your father.** {39} They answered and said unto him, **Abraham is our father.** Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. {40} But now **ye seek to kill me,** a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: **this did not Abraham.** {41} Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. {42} Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. {43} **Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.** {44} **Ye are of your father the devil,** and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

(Phil 3:3 KJV) For **we** are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

(Gal 6:16 KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon **the Israel of God.**

## Allegory Its Use and Abuse

**By Dr. Ken Matto**

One of the methods which is used to interpret the Bible is the use of allegory. The word “allegory” appears only once in the Scriptures. It is found in Galatians 4:24:

(Gal 4:24 KJV) Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

The word “allegory” in the Greek is the word “allegoreo” and it means to speak figuratively or what is spoken is representative of something. The definition from the Merriam Webster dictionary is:

- 1 : the expression by means of symbolic fictional figures and actions of truths or generalizations about human existence; also: an instance (as in a story or painting) of such expression
- 2 : a symbolic representation : EMBLEM

Basically, allegory is used to teach something in a figurative or emblematic sense. Allegory can be a great asset when interpreting the Bible but unfortunately it is one of the most abused methods of Bible interpretation. Let me give a quick example of how allegory has been abused. In the Roman Catholic church they teach that Mary is co-redemptrix with the Lord Jesus Christ and that she reigns as Queen of Heaven with the Lord Jesus Christ. This teaching is based upon a verse which we find in 1 Kings 2:

(1 Ki 2:19 KJV) Bathsheba therefore went unto king Solomon, to speak unto him for Adonijah. And the king rose up to meet her, and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his throne, and caused a seat to be set for the king's mother; and she sat on his right hand.

They teach that Solomon was a figure of Christ and that Bathsheba was a figure of Mary and therefore based upon those figures, Mary is reigning in heaven with Christ.

This is an example of a heretical conclusion based upon the abuse of allegory. Now I want to focus in specifically on three types of allegory, two are biblically legitimate and one is biblically abusive. The three types are “Exegetical Allegory,” “Comparative Allegory,” and “Eisegetical Allegory.”

### **EXEGETICAL ALLEGORY**

First we need a definition of the word “exegetical.” Exegesis is the proper extraction of truth from a verse, exposition of truth from a verse, and explanation of that truth from a verse. Exegetical allegory is the legitimate allegorical method because the figures used can be traced back to the Scriptures.

### **Lamb**

(John 1:36 KJV) And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of

God!

(Rev 5:8 KJV) And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

(Isa 53:7 KJV) He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth.

In Revelation 5:8, we read that the twenty four elders and the four beasts had fallen down before the Lamb. Now were they worshipping an animal? The answer is no because in John 1:36, we are told specifically that the Lamb is the Lord Jesus Christ. When we look at Isaiah 53:7, we see the same symbol for the Lord Jesus and we now have proof from the Old Testament. So there is no question when we exegete that symbol for the Lord Jesus Christ.

### **Shepherd**

(Heb 13:20 KJV) Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

(John 10:14 KJV) I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

(Ezek 37:24 KJV) And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.

The next figure we have is that of the shepherd. In Ezekiel 37:24, we read that the redeemed body of believers will have one shepherd. Now in Ezekiel 37:24, we read that David will be king over them, so are we looking at David as the shepherd? Now for the answer to that we look at the two verses above: Hebrews 13:20 and John 10:14. These two verses give us the answer as to who the shepherd of the redeemed body will be and it will be the Lord Jesus Christ. So when we speak of the shepherd of the sheep, we know that we are speaking of the Lord Jesus Christ. So here we have another proper exegetical allegory.

### **Sheep**

(Heb 13:20 KJV) Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

(1 Pet 2:25 KJV) For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

(John 10:27-28 KJV) My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: {28} And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

The next figure we have is that of a sheep. Now we know that tending sheep as a

shepherd was very common in Israel. Here we have four verses above speaking about sheep. Now are we reading about the animal? The answer is given to us plainly in John 10:28. The Lord Jesus is speaking concerning giving His sheep eternal life. Now does He give animals eternal life or does He give His Elect eternal life? The answer is obvious that he gives eternal life to those He has saved, therefore, what we have represented by the sheep are the true believers. How do we know that? In Hebrews 13:20, Jesus is called the great shepherd of the sheep and in 1 Peter 2:25, we are told that before salvation we were going astray just like sheep that have no shepherd. Now let us look at one more verse concerning sheep.

(Acts 8:32 KJV) The place of the scripture which he read was this, He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:

If you notice in Acts 8:32, Jesus is also called a sheep because this quote comes from Isaiah 53:7 which we quoted under the word "Lamb." So what we have learned is that one symbol may fit multiple persons, therefore, it is very critical to look at the context of the verse to determine who or what is in view. To take one allegorical symbol and attempt to apply it universally in the Bible, with only one application, will engender a false interpretation. Context!! Context!!! Context!!!!

### **Comforter**

(John 14:16 KJV) And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

(John 15:26 KJV) But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:

(John 16:7 KJV) Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

(John 14:26 KJV) But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

The next figure we have is that of Comforter. In John 14:16, 15:26, and 16:7 we are told that a Comforter will be given to the true believers. Now what or who is this comforter? Is it another person brought into our life to bring us comfort? Well, when we search the Scriptures and look at John 14:26, we are told specifically that the Comforter is the Holy Spirit. So here too we have another proper allegory.

We have taken four examples of a proper allegory based upon the Scriptures revealing the real person behind the allegory. There is no need to wonder if we have done it correctly because the Scriptures have backed up the symbolic names. These are only four examples but there are many in the Scriptures and each one must be evaluated properly to see if how we are interpreting them is according to the Scripture. This is the essence of 1 Corinthians 2:13:

(1 Cor 2:13 KJV) Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

Comparing spiritual with spiritual is comparing Scripture with Scripture as we have done in these four examples. We did not compare Scripture with magazines, newspapers, prophecy books, or other writings of man. The writings of man are not considered spiritual writings on the same level as the Bible, therefore they cannot qualify as being part of the spiritual which the spiritual is being compared with.

### **COMPARATIVE ALLEGORY**

The second type of biblically legitimate allegory is called "Comparative Allegory." Now this second classification is for allegory which specifically points to a personality or event but has no clear defining Scripture as exegetical allegory does. Now this type of allegory is based upon Scripture according to principle or synchronized events. What do I mean by "synchronized events?" It is an event which parallels another event in the Scriptures thus giving it a clear identification with what is in view. Let us look at a few examples:

#### **Joseph - A Type of Christ**

Joseph was hated by his brethren and sold for twenty pieces of silver into slavery into Egypt. He arose to become the Governor of Egypt and as a result, God had used him to keep many people alive during the seven great years of famine. The Lord Jesus was also hated by his brethren and was betrayed for 30 pieces of silver. He also kept many people alive but His death caused the many to be made spiritually alive. (Heb 9:28 KJV) So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation. Now there are no specific verses linking the two stories together but when we compare them, we will see that Joseph was a type of the Lord Jesus Christ.

#### **Babylon - A Type of the World and the Kingdom of Satan**

(Jer 51:7 KJV) Babylon hath been a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad.

Jeremiah 51:7 is a representative verse concerning Babylon. It states that it made all the earth drunken and the nations are mad because they drank her wine. This is language to indicate that Babylon, even though it existed as a kingdom in the time of Jeremiah, is also a type of the world. This definition fits in perfectly with Revelation 14:8 which also states that Babylon had made all the nations of the earth to drink of the wine of her fornication.

(Rev 14:8 KJV) And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

There is no way that Babylon could make every nation drink of its fornication if the verse was pointing only to a physical kingdom. By the time the Roman Empire was flourishing, Babylon was reduced only to a remote city. So then how in the book of Revelation, written during the reign of Domitian (81-96 AD) could Babylon affect the entire world? It could not unless both Jeremiah 51:7 and Revelation 14:8 (and other verses in

Revelation also) are picturing the world system otherwise referred to as Babylon in many places in the Bible, especially Revelation 17 & 18. The Kingdom of Satan is tied to the world as it causes evil practices in every nation. When Adam and Eve sinned, that gave a portal to the kingdom of Satan to begin the fight against the body of believers. The two kingdoms are eternal enemies.

### **The Desert**

Whenever we look at the desert, we instantly think of a dry, barren area where nothing could grow. Probably three of the most famous deserts in the world are the Sahara Desert in Egypt, the Gobi Desert on the border of Mongolia and China, and Death Valley in Southern California. In the Bible God speaks of the desert in a similar way that it is barren and cannot sustain life. In Jeremiah 50:10-12, we read that God is going to make Chaldea (Babylon) a wilderness, a dry land, and a desert. Where life once flourished in Babylon, the judgment of God will now make it a wasteland.

(Jer 50:10-12 KJV) And Chaldea shall be a spoil: all that spoil her shall be satisfied, saith the LORD. {11} Because ye were glad, because ye rejoiced, O ye destroyers of mine heritage, because ye are grown fat as the heifer at grass, and bellow as bulls; {12} Your mother shall be sore confounded; she that bare you shall be ashamed: behold, the hindermost of the nations shall be a wilderness, a dry land, and a desert.

(Isa 43:19 KJV) Behold, I will do a new thing; now it shall spring forth; shall ye not know it? I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert.

(Isa 40:3 KJV) The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

(Isa 35:1 KJV) The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose.

In the three Isaiah verses, God is speaking of doing something new to the deserts. He states that He is going to make rivers and a straight highway in the desert, and as a result the desert is going to rejoice and blossom like a rose. Now, is God speaking about a physical desert? The answer is no because deserts which were deserts after the Noahic flood, are still deserts today and what desert would He be referring to? He does not name a specific desert. However, from Jeremiah 50:10-12, we can easily see that the desert is the world. After sin entered the world, the world went from being a pristine place to a spiritual wilderness where no truth about God was being preached but then in the Isaiah verses we are told that something good is going to happen in the deserts.

(Luke 9:12-13 KJV) And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place. {13} But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

In Luke 9:12-13, we are reading that the people followed the Lord Jesus into a desert place and the time came that they should be fed but there was not enough food to feed

them. The Disciples then asked the Lord to send them away but the Lord's response was that they should feed them. What then is in view here? This little scenario is a type of the true believer bringing the Gospel to the world and the Lord is the one who supplies the seed to the sower as He supplied the food for the crowd. (Luke 8:11 KJV) Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. As the Disciples doled out the physical food, the true Christians throughout the ages will sow the infinite word of God to the world. 2 Corinthians 9:10 just about sums it up and shows we are on the right track.

(2 Cor 9:10 KJV) Now he that ministereth seed to the sower both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness;)

We have successfully compared three different types as allegory and did not do any injustice to the word of God because the great work which God is going to accomplish in the desert of this world is that of sending forth the true Gospel. The Gospel will cause the desert to bloom with spiritual flowers which means those who become saved will also bloom and bring forth fruit. (Isa 27:6 KJV) He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root: Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit. The Israel in view is the body of believers which is the true world wide Israel of God.

### **Eisegetical Allegory**

Allegory based upon eisegesis is the most dangerous type of allegory there is and is used to introduce a person's personal ideas into the Scriptures. This method is combined with the Inductive method of bible study. The Inductive method is a method whereby someone approaches the Bible with their own ideas and tends to take all the Scripture verses and mold them into their personal belief system. Basically, eisegesis is telling the Bible what it means in contrast to exegesis where the Bible tells us what it means. The cults have been very successful in doing this. The Jehovah's Witnesses do not believe in Hell so they have geared their teachings toward annihilation even though their own translation speaks of a fiery hell about 23 times. Their teachings and their Bible differ. The danger arises when someone teaches and states not what the Bible is teaching but what they say the Bible is teaching which is a vast difference. We have already seen that Roman Catholics believe Mary is reigning with Christ in Heaven based upon an improper allegory. Since they believe that Mary is co-redemptrix with Christ because of all the teachings geared in that direction, 1 Kings 2:19 when misapplied fits perfectly into their system.

(1 Ki 2:19 KJV) Bathsheba therefore went unto king Solomon, to speak unto him for Adonijah. And the king rose up to meet her, and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his throne, and caused a seat to be set for the king's mother; and she sat on his right hand.

In 2001 Harold Camping of Family Stations Inc. has been teaching that the churches are all dead and they are under the authority of Satan. He has since that time plundered Family Radio of all good Bible teachers and teaching and has commandeered it for his personal pulpit to spew this heresy. His disciples are also heavily involved in propagating this heresy. He uses the allegorical method of interpretation but he uses the eisegetical method of allegory. He also engages totally in the Inductive method of teaching which we previously saw as approaching the Bible and telling it what it says instead of the Bible

telling us what it says. For Camping to get away with this system, he had to create a false interpretation base which sounds feasible to his followers. Below are some of the words he has misused in this false system. Within his system, he just says things without any true back up.

### **Babylon - He says that it represents the corporate church. Supporting Scripture - NONE**

He uses Revelation 18:4 as his main verse for telling his people to leave the churches. (Rev 18:4 KJV) And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. On Page 222 of his book "The End of the Church Age and After" states that if Christians do not leave the churches, then they are subject to the plagues, which he goes on to claim that it is eternal damnation. He basically teaches that if you do not come out of your local church, then you will lose your salvation.

### **Jerusalem is the corporate church. Supporting Scripture - NONE**

Page 222 of the same book.

### **2300 Days of Daniel 8 = First half of tribulation period - Supporting Scripture - NONE**

(Dan 8:14 KJV) And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed. If this verse represents the first half of great tribulation, then how has the sanctuary been cleansed at the end of this time period because then according to him we go into the second half of the tribulation.

### **No one saved between 1988-1994 - Supporting Scripture - NONE**

(Rev 8:1 KJV) And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour. He makes the claim that the 2300 days represents the time period of 1988-1994 and that no one had become saved in the entire world during that time. Revelation 8:1 speaks of silence in Heaven for half an hour and Camping claims that this half hour of silence is the 2300 days where no one became saved. He couples this with:

(Luke 15:7 KJV) I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

(Luke 15:10 KJV) Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

He claims that because there is silence in heaven that no one became saved. This too has no Scriptural support, just eisegetical support. He teaches this on page 341 of his newest book "Time Has An End."

### **The Old Testament Temple is the corporate church - Supporting Scripture - NONE**

## **The Destruction of Judah in 587 B.C. represents the death of the church - Supporting Scripture - NONE**

He also does not deal with the fact that there are 5 Old Testament books which were written after the return of Judah from the 70 year captivity. If Judah returned to the land, then how can this represent the death of the church? Once again it is just an eisegetical belief without any scriptural backing.

### **Summary**

These six examples show us what damage that can be done to proper interpretation when someone uses allegory without any scriptural foundation. Whenever we read anyone's interpretation, we must always be careful to check them out carefully against the Scriptures. We live in a day when anybody and everybody can send any kind of teachings into the entire world by the Internet. There are many Christians in less developed countries who hear countless broadcasts and do not have the ability to thoroughly check out every teaching. Woe unto anyone who causes confusion to them by sending them a gospel based upon pure imagination instead of pure Scripture. Will everybody be one hundred per cent correct, the answer is no since we do not have perfect understanding but we do have the ability to teach proper doctrine because the Lord promised that the Holy Spirit will guide us into all truth. (John 16:13 KJV) Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. Let us be vigilant and truthful in our study and teaching of the Holy Scriptures.

## Differing Covenants

By Dr. Ken Matto

When we look at the covenants in the Bible, there seems to be an air of confusion concerning to whom they were given. Now in this article, I am not going to be looking at the essence of the covenants but to whom were what covenants given. The reason there is so much confusion concerning the covenants is because the majority of Christians continue to read prophecy books and theology books without even looking at the Scriptures. These types of books make assertions and then plaster a Scripture verse to their belief system to supply a pseudo-legitimacy to them. This is easily done because the writers of these books know full well that Christians do not check anything out objectively, only subjectively. One of the reasons for the great misunderstanding of end time events in the Christian church is the misunderstanding of what covenants were given to which particular people.

For example, when you read anything about the Abrahamic covenant which is the covenant of Grace, the eternal covenant, you can pick up any Pre-Millennial writing and you will automatically read that the eternal covenants were made to the nation of Israel. This is why the teaching that the “Jews are God’s chosen people” has made such a lasting deposit in Christian theology and the teaching that there is a future golden reign for them. That was a political statement and not a theological statement made at the 1956 Presbyterian Laymen’s League Convention. Some even teach that Israel will have a position of priesthood. These teachings are so far from the truth and are absolutely foreign to the Scriptures. In fact, right after the nation of Israel came into existence in 1948, the notes of the Scofield Bible were changed to embrace these ideas. This is called “Christian Zionism” and is a very dangerous position for any Christian to be in.

The problem with this excessive focus on the modern nation of Israel has caused it to become a god among typical Pre-Millennial Christians who follow and swallow that erroneous teaching. Their belief is that no matter what Israel wants, God wants. Well God does not follow the dictates of any apostate nation on earth. He directs them, not follows them. As a matter of fact, during the Reagan and Bush administrations, there were many Christian Zionists who went to the White House and began to postulate the Armageddon theories to the President and his staff. Some of these were the false prophet Hal Lindsay, Jerry Falwell (who was given a 3 million dollar jet by the nation of Israel), Pat Robertson, Mike Evans (a Hal Lindsay wannabe) One of the greatest Christian Zionists alive today is John Hagee and his obsession with the Jews has helped him draw the false conclusion that all the Jews are saved, even those outside of Christ. He bases this on the assumption that their relationship to God is all they need. He may sound very authoritative but there are two types of authority-Right and Wrong. He is wrong with authority.

There are some who believe that the Pre-Millennial teachings go back as far as the 1600’s which is another lie the dispensationalists tell their followers. The truth is that there is not one mention of a two-stage appearance of Christ in any historical writing before 1830, when it was trance channeled from Satan by an apostate woman named Margaret MacDonald in the Port Glasgow Prophecy Conferences in Scotland. Her channeled teachings were handed down to Edward Irving, then to J.N. Darby, and then to, surprise, surprise, C.I. Scofield. Every Puritan writing I have ever read has always mentioned the return of Christ on the last day, and not some two-stage event. Now I don’t want to get

into a big discussion on the false theory of Pre-Millennialism but it must be mentioned since it is the underlying teaching that has caused many to go astray in their thinking, this author included, for the first few years of his Christian walk.

### **Abrahamic Covenant**

*(Gen 12:1-3 KJV) Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee: {2} And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: {3} And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.*

Here is the first mention of the Abrahamic Covenant. As we read God is going to make Abraham a great nation, in fact, that blessing is going to extend to all areas of the Earth. That statement of the universality of the blessing gives us insight as to what God is speaking about.

*(Mark 16:15 KJV) And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.*

*(Mat 24:31 KJV) And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.*

All the families of earth will be blessed by the Covenant of Grace and not by the nation of Israel. Ask any country in the Middle East if Israel is a blessing to them. They must be factored in because they are a part of the earth. There is a large group of true Christians among the Palestinians in Israel but Christian tour groups are disallowed from visiting them.

Now if you look in any prophecy book or speak to any typical pre-tribber, they will automatically attribute the “curse and blessing” part of this covenant to modern Israel. This is because Christian Zionists have redefined the covenants and applied to Israel what applies to the Christians. These lies are so embedded in the church, that Christians actually fight against the truth.

### **Genesis 12:7**

*(Gen 12:7 KJV) And the LORD appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land: and there builded he an altar unto the LORD, who appeared unto him.*

Here is an interesting statement. It looks like God is telling Abraham that He is going to give him a specific patch of land where his descendants or his “seed” will dwell. If we look at this statement and isolate this passage, we can then easily conclude that the nation of Israel has an eternal place of refuge. However, we don’t do as the prophecy books do. Take a look at the verse below.

*(Heb 11:10 KJV) For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.*

*(Heb 11:13 KJV) These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.*

In Genesis 12:7, God specifically stated that the land that Abraham was seeing would be given to him and his seed. If that is taken literally, then why do we see Abraham still “looking “ for a city and then dying in faith without having received the promises but seeing them afar off? The answer to this dilemma is again found in Scripture and not a prophecy book.

*(Gal 3:16 KJV) Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.*

*(Gal 3:29 KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*

Here is the reason that God was speaking in a parable concerning the land. In Genesis 12:7, God promised this land to Abraham’s seed and Abraham’s seed are the redeemed Christians and as we saw in the Mark and Matthew verses, that the extent of the land on earth was the entire earth but the land that God showed Abraham was typifying the eternal home of the believers. Genesis 12:7, has absolutely nothing to do with physical land nor the modern nation of Israel. It is an extension of the initial promise of eternal salvation to the redeemed of Christ.

### **Genesis 13:14-17**

*(Gen 13:14-17 KJV) And the LORD said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward: {15} For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever. {16} And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered. {17} Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee.*

Here is the third mention of the eternal Covenant. Now we have already established that the physical land was just a type of the eternal home of the believers. In verse 15, in the above Scripture portion, we see the same words, “to thy seed.” Of course, we saw from Hebrews that the seed of Abraham are those who are in Christ. But in this verse God adds another word which further enhances the interpretation toward the eternal covenant. It is the word, “for ever.” This present world will be burnt by fire on the last day so the idea that the eternal covenant is going to be fulfilled in this world cannot happen. The reason that Abraham looked for a city whose maker and builder was God, was because he was not seeking an earthly kingdom but the Kingdom of God. This third mention of the eternal covenant has nothing to do with the physical land of Israel nor the modern nation of Israel. It too points to the eternal Kingdom of God where the Christian has eternal habitation. Also you can basically count the number of Jews on earth and they are small part of the population, but God is saying that through Abraham, there is going to be a great number of his seed. Remember who the seed of Abraham was? The redeemed Christian from all parts of the world including national Israel.

*(Rev 7:9-10 KJV) After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; {10} And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.*

### **Genesis 15:5-7**

*(Gen 15:5-7 KJV) And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be. {6} And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness. {7} And he said unto him, I am the LORD that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it.*

In the fourth mention of the eternal covenant, God is restating that the number of Abraham's seed will basically be uncountable. Again, God is also restating that he is going to give Abraham a specific land to inherit, yet we saw that Abraham looked beyond the promise of physical land to the promise of the spiritual land of Canaan which is Heaven. This is the problem that Pre-Millennialists have, they look at the literal and stop there. Basically, Pre-Millennialism is a very worldly system which re-focuses the believer's eyes on earth and off of Heaven.

Look at what they seek:

- 1) A physical manifestation of Satan, A "man" of sin.
- 2) A physical thousand year reign of Christ
- 3) A physical land as a fulfillment of the Abrahamic Covenant
- 4) A physical temple in Jerusalem with animal sacrifices
- 5) A physical Armageddon
- 6) A physical Jerusalem hanging between heaven and earth
- 7) 144,000 physical Jewish Evangelists
- 8) A reincarnation of David
- 9) A physical slaughter of 2/3 of all Jews on Earth

Need I go on? I know this is what they teach because for the first 7 years of my Christian walk, I was a Pre-Tribber who was "tossed about by every wind of doctrine" from prophecy books.

### **Genesis 15:18-21**

*(Gen 15:18-21 KJV) In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates: {19} The Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, {20} And the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, {21} And the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.*

In the fifth mention of the eternal covenant, God continues to say that the seed of Abraham was going to inherit land. However, in this verse we see that God widens the

parcel of land that He is promising to Abraham. Are we at an impasse? Absolutely not! Let us look at the verse below while keeping in mind who the seed of Abraham is.

*(Psa 2:7-8 KJV) I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee. {8} Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession.*

God mentions ten heathen nations that He is going to give to Abraham's seed. Abraham's seed is the believer and when we look at the Psalm 2 verses, we see that the heathen is going to be a part of the eternal redeemed church of God. Notice that God mentions ten heathen nations in the above verse and then specifically mentions the heathen will be the inheritance and the uttermost part of the earth. Remember, we saw in Matthew 24 that the angels of God went to the four winds of the earth to gather God's Elect. This is another way of saying that there is going to be Christians in every country on earth.

*(Amos 9:11-12 KJV) In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old: {12} That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen, which are called by my name, saith the LORD that doeth this.*

Here we read that there is going to come a time when God is going to include the heathen in the Covenant of Grace. We read the phrase "of all the heathen, which are called by my name." The only people who are called by God's name are the true believers. This means that back in the time of Amos, the heathen was already in God's plan of redemption. The book of Psalms predates the book of Amos and these verses give us a good confirmation that the God's plan of salvation not only included Jews but was going to go world wide and include the other nations of the world, typified by the ten nations that He mentions in Genesis 15.

*(Gal 3:8 KJV) And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.*

## **Genesis 17**

This chapter contains many insights into the Abrahamic Covenant, so we will be looking at many of these verses on an individual basis. This sixth mention of the eternal covenant will put the icing on the cake that it was a universal covenant and not a dedicated covenant to one nation alone.

### **Verse 2**

*(Gen 17:2 KJV) And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.*

In this verse we read a direct statement concerning who the covenant was made with. God said that He would establish His covenant between Him and Abraham. This statement quashes the idea that the eternal covenant was made to national Israel, since national Israel did not exist at the time God made the covenant. This is an important bit of

information that we must keep in mind when dealing with these covenants. God restates the fact that Abraham's descendants will be multiplied greatly.

#### **Verse 4**

*(Gen 17:4 KJV) As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.*

God reinforces what He stated in verse 2. The eternal covenant is going to be between God and Abraham. Then God adds that as a result of that covenant, Abraham is going to be a father of many nations. Abraham was going to become the father of the faithful. In other words, he will be the father of all the saved who will come after him.

*(Gal 3:9 KJV) So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.*

#### **Verse 6**

*(Gen 17:6 KJV) And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.*

Here God adds another aspect to the eternal covenant. He says to Abraham that kings are going to come out of him. The kings are the born again believers who will come after him. This may be the verse which many feel that is applied to some future priesthood for national Israel, however, the Bible does not support that.

*(Rev 1:6 KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*

*(Rev 5:10 KJV) And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.*

*(Exo 40:15 KJV) And thou shalt anoint them, as thou didst anoint their father, that they may minister unto me in the priest's office: for their anointing shall surely be an everlasting priesthood throughout their generations.*

If we also look at this Exodus verse, we will plainly see that God is saying that Aaron will be an everlasting priesthood throughout all generations. First, of all if something is everlasting, it is eternal in nature. We know that the Aaronic priesthood came to an end at the cross, since Christ now became our High Priest, the animal sacrifices were no longer needed as the type of Christ's coming sacrifice, and the true Christian is called a king and priest as we see in the two Revelation verses. The body of believers is now the worldwide priesthood of God as every Christian is a priest.

#### **Verse 7**

*(Gen 17:7 KJV) And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.*

As in verse 2, God is reiterating the fact that His eternal covenant, which is the Covenant of Grace AKA salvation in Christ, will be made between Him and Abraham. There is no

connection between the eternal covenant and the nation of Israel at this point. We will look at the connection later on. We know this is definitely speaking of the eternal covenant because God uses the word “everlasting.” It is the word “Olam” which in Hebrew means “Forever or Everlasting.” In fact one of the names of God is “the everlasting God.”

*(Isa 40:28 KJV) Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding.*

God also tells Abraham that he is going to be a God unto Him, and his seed that shall come after him, which means in succeeding generations. Those whom the Lord will call will be the Children of God and no one else.

*(Acts 2:39 KJV) For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.*

### **Genesis 17:8**

*(Gen 17:8 KJV) And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.*

Here God again mentions that Abraham and his seed will be inheriting the land of Canaan but you must also factor in that God also said, it was going to be an everlasting possession. Remember, before we said that this present world is coming to an end and then there will be a new Heaven and a new Earth? The only way anyone can enter into that New Heaven and Earth is through the cross of Christ which is the Covenant of Grace. God is using a physical land to typify the eternal home of the believers. He is speaking in parabolic language concerning His salvation program. The only everlasting covenant in the Bible is the Covenant of Grace.

### **Genesis 17:9-13**

*(Gen 17:9-13 KJV) And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep my covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations. {10} This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. {11} And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you. {12} And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed. {13} He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and my covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant.*

Here God brings in another aspect of the eternal Covenant. He tells Abraham that all the males born to him and those bought with his money are to be physically circumcised. This requirement comes a few hundred years before the law of God was instituted on Mt. Sinai through Moses. This is important because God is showing us here that since the nation of Israel was not yet in existence, a gentile from a neighboring country could be brought into the Covenant by means of circumcision. Now since everything in the Old

Testament was a type of something concerning the Covenant of Grace, we must ask the question concerning both situations-Circumcision of those born in the house and those who were bought with his money.

Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob were not Israelites but were descendants of the nation of the Chaldeans. The nation of Israel began in Jacob's later years through his twelve sons. Those who were born into the physical house of Abraham, including his descendants and any slaves which were purchased were to be circumcised as a sign of God's covenant. Now, because God brings in the term "everlasting covenant," we must look at what is being taught here concerning the everlasting covenant.

First of all, when God mentions circumcision in reference to the eternal covenant, can we conclude that physical circumcision is a requirement for salvation? The answer, of course, is no. No work that any human does can aid in "buying" salvation. So then what kind of circumcision would be in keeping with the everlasting covenant?

*(Deu 10:16 KJV) Circumcise therefore the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiffnecked.*

*(Deu 30:6 KJV) And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.*

What we are seeing in these verses is the "spiritual circumcision" that is in keeping with the eternal covenant. Whenever a physical circumcision takes place, blood is shed. No longer does blood have to be shed since the Lord Jesus Christ had shed His blood for the final sacrifice for His people. Now the Lord applies "spiritual circumcision" to the heart of the believer. That is, a bloodless application because the blood was drawn from Christ, which now removes the sin from His children. So no longer is physical circumcision needed as a sign of the covenant. As for those who are bought with money, the following verse adds a little insight.

*(Isa 55:1 KJV) Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; **come ye, buy**, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price.*

We can "buy" salvation only because the price for it has been paid! If I bought a full tank of gas for you at the local gas station, would you have to pay for it out of your pocket? The answer is no, it has been paid for fully. Wine and milk are both synonyms for salvation. The only ones that thirst after salvation, are God's Elect. The unsaved world wants nothing to do with it.

*(Mark 2:22 KJV) And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.*

*(Ezek 20:15 KJV) Yet also I lifted up my hand unto them in the wilderness, that I would not bring them into the land which I had given them, flowing with milk and honey, which is the glory of all lands;*

The glory of all lands is the eternal land of Canaan.

### **Summary**

Up to this point we see that God specifically made His covenant between Abraham and Himself. This was before the physical nation of Israel was brought into existence. The covenant that God made with Abraham, was not of a temporary nature, although God used temporary things to symbolize it. The covenant that God made with Abraham was the everlasting covenant of Grace which finds its fulfillment in the Lord Jesus Christ. We have also seen that the seed of Abraham is the children of God which are those who are born again in Christ.

### **The Covenant to National Israel**

*(Exo 34:27-28 KJV) And the LORD said unto Moses, Write thou these words: for after the tenor of these words I have made a covenant with thee and with Israel. {28} And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water. And he wrote upon the tables the words of the covenant, the ten commandments.*

Here we see the only Covenant that God made with Israel as a nation. It is the Sinaitic Covenant or the Covenant of Law. The requirement for Israel is found in the following verse.

*(Exo 19:5 KJV) Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:*

The key phrase in that verse is, “*if ye will obey my voice indeed,*”. How long was Israel out of Egypt before they started sinning against God? A few weeks! The covenant that God made with physical Israel was a temporary one. This was because once Christ went to the cross, He would no longer deal with only one nation anymore. God would deal with the entire world as we so plainly saw. God’s salvation plan was to go out the entire world. God knew that national Israel could not keep the law because they, like us, are cursed with sin that continually tries to get us to sin against God. So God did not make any eternal covenant with the nation of Israel as a whole, that covenant came through Abraham and his seed.

*(Deu 10:15 KJV) Only the LORD had a delight in thy fathers to love them, and he chose their seed after them, even you above all people, as it is this day.*

Notice this very important verse in Deuteronomy. God is saying that He loved the fathers, that is, because they were true believers. God then goes on to say, that He is going to choose the seed of Abraham! Physical circumcision did not guarantee anyone salvation, as water baptism doesn’t guarantee anyone salvation today. Remember, we saw that God was going to circumcise the hearts. This means that He is going to choose those who will be the seed of Abraham.

*(John 6:37-39 KJV) All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. {38} For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. {39} And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.*

### **The Two Israels**

*(Rom 9:6 KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:*

One of the main reasons that Christians get confused about the Covenants is the fact of the high ignorance of the plain teachings that there are two Israels in the Bible. Notice the verse above, “*For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel.*” There is an Israel inside of Israel. That Israel which God gave the Abrahamic or Eternal Covenant to are the true born again believers.

*(Rom 2:28-29 KJV) For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.*

We read in Deuteronomy that God was going to circumcise the heart, and in this verse, we see that those who are circumcised in heart are the real Spiritual Israel or the Israel of God.

*(Gal 6:16 KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.*

*(Phil 3:3 KJV) For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.*

In the Philippians verse we see that the believer is called the circumcision in spirit. We also read that that we are in Christ Jesus. Remember in Galatians we read that Abraham’s seed was those in Christ.

*(Gal 3:29 KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.*

By discerning the difference between the two Israels, we will plainly see that the eternal covenant was given to spiritual Israel which is made up of all those saved all around the world and the Covenant of Law or the Sinaitic Covenant was given to physical Israel. Once we begin to realize there are two Israels, then the passages in the Old Testament which speak of everlasting things, will become clearer and we will be able to interpret passages of Scripture the way they should be with the proper hermeneutic and not just make blanket statements based on the flawed theology of prophecy book writers.

### **Israel in the context of the Eternal Covenant**

*(Luke 3:23 & 34 KJV) And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, {34} Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,*

The physical nation of Israel was the chosen nation by which the Lord Jesus Christ would come through. Jesus came through the line of Judah. Israel was chosen to bring forth the Messiah but was never chosen, en masse, as the eternal people of God.

*(John 4:22 KJV) Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.*

In this verse, if we take it on the surface, it looks like we have to go to the Jews for salvation. However, the words “of the” is the Greek word “ek” which simply means “from or out of.” This verse is telling us that the Lord Jesus came out of the nation of Israel and that salvation is found only in Him. How is this deduced? The leaders were blind as to who Christ was and the Scripture tells us that they did not recognize who He was. Today, if you want salvation in Christ, is there a large population in Israel that will tell you to go to Christ for salvation? Absolutely not! In fact, if you mention His name you could get arrested. So therefore, by deduction, the only way to gain salvation is by Christ who came out of the lineage of Judah.

The question is then raised, are any of the Jews saved? The answer is yes because God promised thousands of years ago that a remnant of believers would come forth from the nation of Israel. Some people try to make the claim that a great number of Jews are going to be saved in the last days. This theory is not found in Scripture but is another product of “prophecy book philosophy.” The number of Jews that will be saved will be according to how many God named before the foundation of the world and no one knows the number.

*(2 Ki 19:31 KJV) For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the LORD of hosts shall do this.*

*(Isa 10:20-22 KJV) And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. {21} The remnant shall return, even the remnant of Jacob, unto the mighty God. {22} For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness.*

*(Jer 23:3 KJV) And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase.*

*(Jer 31:7 KJV) For thus saith the LORD; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say, O LORD, save thy people, the remnant of Israel.*

*(Ezek 11:13 KJV) And it came to pass, when I prophesied, that Pelatiah the son of Benaiah died. Then fell I down upon my face, and cried with a loud voice, and said, Ah Lord GOD! wilt thou make a full end of the remnant of Israel?*

*(Joel 2:32 KJV) And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.*

*(Micah 5:7 KJV) And the remnant of Jacob shall be in the midst of many people as a dew from the LORD, as the showers upon the grass, that tarrieth not for man, nor waiteth for the sons of men.*

*(Zep 2:9 KJV) Therefore as I live, saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, Surely Moab shall be as Sodom, and the children of Ammon as Gomorrah, even the breeding of nettles, and saltpits, and a perpetual desolation: the residue of my people shall spoil them, and the remnant of my people shall possess them.*

***(Zep 3:13 KJV) The remnant of Israel shall not do iniquity, nor speak lies; neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth: for they shall feed and lie down, and none shall make them afraid.***

*(Rom 9:27 KJV) Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved:*

*(Rom 11:5 KJV) Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.*

### **Christian and Jewish Relations**

The fact that so many Christians are relegating the eternal covenants to Israel are giving the Jews a false sense of security. They must be saved the same way everybody else is. All these prophecy books and these lying teachers who claim that all the Jews are saved by means of their relationship to God are all blatantly lying to the Jewish people. There will be many Jews at the Great White Throne Judgment arguing that they read they were saved in some prophecy book. The truth is that the Jews are not God's chosen people unless they are chosen for salvation, otherwise they are sinners who will face the same eternal judgment as the rest of the unsaved world. It is a hard truth, but nevertheless it is truth

### **Summation**

We have a come a long way in trying to understand and discern the two covenants in Scripture. The Temporary Covenant of Sinai was given to Israel as a nation. The Eternal Covenant of Grace was given to Abraham and promised to his seed. Many of his seed would be saved from the physical nation of Israel and many from surrounding nations of the world. It is the same today. Jews are being saved according to the election of grace and so are Gentiles from all over the world. God is no respecter of persons. The Jews who become saved do not have any closer relationship to God than the saved of any other race because they must come through the cross of Christ as others do. Whenever we see the mention of the eternal or everlasting covenant, then you can safely conclude that God

is speaking of spiritual Israel. When we see the temporary covenant, we see Him referring to national Israel.

## Does God Answer Every Prayer?

By Dr. Ken Matto

(Jer 33:3 KJV) Call unto me, and I will answer thee, and show thee great and mighty things, which thou knowest not.

One of the statements that I continually hear from Christians, both in the media, in person, or on line that “God didn’t answer my prayers.” Millions of Christians pray every single day and if what they pray for does not come to fruition, they claim that God did not answer certain of their prayers.

First of all let me start off by stating that if you are an unbeliever, whether one who opposes Christianity or one who is a member of a church, then God will not hear your prayers because prayers are heard through the ministry of the Holy Spirit.

*(Rom 8:26-27 KJV) Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. {27} And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.*

According to Romans 8:26-27, the Holy Spirit intercedes on behalf of the saints. Those who are unsaved do not have the Holy Spirit.

*(Rom 8:9 KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*

The unbeliever is spiritually dead and because of that lives only in the flesh void of the Holy Spirit. The spiritually dead have no ability to pray proper prayers and have them interpreted by the Holy Spirit since they do not have the Spirit. Many people go to church but are unconverted and that places them in the same category as any other unbeliever. If they become saved, then they are made alive unto God and will have a living relationship with God with the ability to have their prayers heard.

*(Isa 59:1-2 KJV) Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: {2} But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.*

*(Psa 66:18 KJV) If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me:*

Both of these sets of verses teach a major principle. While Isaiah was aimed at the nation of Israel at a time they were embracing idolatry and other ungodly practices and Psalm 66:18 is aimed at both the saved and the unsaved, they carry the same principle and that is, anytime one has sin in their life, it will affect their prayer life. That principle goes for both believers and unbelievers. Can Christians pray to God for something with a pack of cigarettes in their pocket? Can a person in a cult pray to a generic god? What I mean by generic god is that many cults and false religions teach that God is the God of all

religions and there are many pathways to God. This is absolutely untrue because the Scriptures outright reject that.

*(John 14:6 KJV) Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*

*Jesus is the only way to the Father and the promise of the Father is the giving of the Holy Spirit.*

*(Acts 1:4-5 KJV) And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me. {5} For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.*

Now this article is not about believers and unbelievers and answered prayer but is specifically aimed at the Christian who expects God to answer all their prayers. It is a total misunderstanding to believe that God does not answer all prayers and we will see why. We are going to look at four ways in which God answers all prayers. In our beginning verse, Jeremiah 33:3, God states that we are to call unto Him and that “He will answer.” He did not say that He may answer but that He will, and I am sure that you and I can easily take God at His Word.

### **Direct**

The first way that God answers prayers is directly. We may pray for something and if it is in the will of God then God will grant the petition. *(1 John 5:14-15 KJV) And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: {15} And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.*

### **Delayed**

The second way God answers our prayers is when He says yes, but He brings the answer in His timing which may be different than ours. Probably one of the best examples in Scripture for the delayed answer is that of Zacharias, the father of John the Baptist. *(Luke 1:13 KJV) But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. Zacharias must have been praying for a son and finally he is told that his prayer has been heard and he will have a son. He was not told when this would happen, but that it would.*

### **Disguised**

Probably one of the best disguised answers to prayer in the Bible is found in 1 Samuel 17. This where the army of Israel was facing the army of the Philistines. *(1 Sam 17:16 KJV) And the Philistine drew near morning and evening, and presented himself forty days. Goliath had taunted the Israelite army for forty days and there was no one who would challenge Goliath. David was the youngest son of Jesse and he dispatched David to the valley of Shochoh where the battle was taking place. (1 Sam 17:17-18 KJV) And Jesse said unto David his son, Take now for thy brethren an ephah of this parched corn, and these ten loaves, and run to the camp to thy brethren; {18} And carry these ten cheeses unto the captain of their thousand, and look how thy brethren fare, and take their pledge. Jesse was just dispatching David to send food to his brethren and some cheese to*

the commander. It never crossed Jesse's, David's, Saul's, Eliab's or any of their minds that little David would be the answer to their prayers to deliver them from the taunting giant of Gath. Yet, it would be David, through the power of God, who came as the answer to their prayers to have victory over the Philistine. Could you imagine the consequences they would have faced if they sent David home right away and would not allow him the opportunity to face Goliath? The answer to their prayers were in a teenage boy and not the mighty seasoned warriors of Israel.

### **Denied**

Here is the reason why Christians claim that God does not answer their prayers. The reality is that "no" is an answer. When we were younger and we asked our parents for something and they said no, that was an answer. It is not the answer we want to hear but it is an answer and we better realize that "no" is a part of the Christian life. When God says "no" it does not necessarily mean that you are asking wrongly or in selfishness but your request is not God's will for you and therefore you need to accept the reality that God has denied your prayer. It does not mean He is angry with you, but he is just protecting you because he sees the future and you don't.

### **Summary**

We have looked at four ways that God deals with prayer and in every instance, God gave an answer. God answers every prayer we pray but we do not like to take "no" as one of the main answers. Once we accept the fact that "no" is an answer, we will begin to realize that God takes our prayer life more serious than we do. We can always count on Him to answer our prayers, even if He said "no," because it is an answer!

## SUBTLE FALSE CHURCH TEACHINGS

compiled by Dr. Ken Matto

Over the years the Church has developed many doctrines which are not found in Scripture and if they are not found in Scripture then they must be categorized as false. The 19th and 20th century saw an influx of emotional, psychological, man-glorifying, and racial favoring doctrines which have no basis in Scripture. The church has adopted these resulting in a departure from the Scriptures. Here are some doctrines which have been seriously adulterated and all I ask is that you check them out against Scripture and see if what you are being taught is true. The time is long past for us to trust the clergy or seminaries. The Bible must be our guidebook in this last hour.

**Common Teaching:** Pre-Tribulational Rapture

**Bible Teaches:** Last Day Rapture

John 6: 39, 40, 44, 54; 11:24; 12:48

**Common Teaching:** God and Jesus Love Everybody

**Bible Teaches:** God loves His Own

Ps. 5:5-6; 7:11; John 13:1; 1 Peter 3:12

**Common Teaching:** We can accept Christ

**Bible Teaches:** God accepts us

Mt. 1:21; John 1:12-13; 6:37,39; Acts 13:48; Rom. 3:10-12; 8:29-30; Eph. 1:4; 2:1-5; Rev. 13:8;17:8

**Common Teaching:** Jews are God's Chosen People

**Bible Teaches:** Christians are God's Chosen People

Isaiah 45:17; John 8:38-44; Rom. 2:28-29; 4:13; 9:6; 11:26; Gal. 3:16, 29; Eph. 2:12; Phil :3; 1 Peter 2:9-10; Rev. 2:9;3:9

**Common Teaching:** Literal 1,000 Year Reign of Christ

**Bible Teaches:** No Literal Millennium

Matt. 24:29; 1 Cor. 10:11; Heb. 9:26, 28; 2 Tim. 3:1; James 5:3; Heb. 1:1-2; 1 Pet. 1:5 & 20; 2 Pet. 3:3; 1 John 2:18; Jude 18

**Common Teaching:** Sabbath is still Saturday

**Bible Teaches:** God changed Sabbath to Sunday

Matt. 28:1; Mark 16:2 & 9; Luke 18:12; 24:1; John 20:1 & 19; Acts 20:7; 1 Cor. 16:2  
(Note: teaching is in Greek and not English. "□□□□□□□□□□□□□□" should be "first of the Sabbaths" and not "first day of the week." Translating singular for plural is error.)

**Common Teaching:** A Coming World Ruler known as Antichrist

**Bible Teaches:** Satan is the Antichrist

2 Thess. 2:3-4 & 7-9 > Isaiah 14:12, 16-17 (The vital link, Lucifer is called "The Man")  
1 John 2:22; 4:3; 2 John 7

**Common Teaching:** Slain in the Spirit is Evidence of the Holy Spirit

**Bible Teaches:** Slain in the Spirit is a sign of judgment (Falling backward or going backward) Gen. 49:17; Ps. 70:2; Isa. 1:4; 28:13; Jer. 7:24; 15:6; Lam. 1:8

**Common Teaching:** Age of Accountability  
**Bible Teaches:** Responsible from Birth  
Job 15:14-16; Ps. 51:5; 58:3-4; Rom. 3:10-12

**Common Teaching:** Roman Catholics are Christians  
**Bible Teaches:** Unregenerate RC's are not Christians  
Ex. 20:4-5; Isa. 45:5; Jer. 7:18; 44:17-19, 25; Matt. 6:7; 15:9; Mark 7:7-9; Luke 1:46-47;  
Col. 1:18; 1 Tim. 2:5; 4:3; Heb. 9:27; 10:11-12; 1 John 5:21

**Common Teaching:** Signs, Wonders, and Tongues are for today  
**Bible Teaches:** Biblical Tongues (languages) ended in the first century  
Deut. 4:2; Prov. 30:6; Matt. 12:38-40; 1 Cor.14:21-22; Rev. 22:18-19

**Common Teaching:** Ecumenical Movement is acceptable  
**Bible Teaches:** Bible Commands Separation  
Ezek. 22:25-26; 44:23; 2 Cor. 6:14-18

**Common Teaching:** You can lose your salvation  
**Bible Teaches:** Christians are eternally secure  
Terms used in Scripture:  
Everlasting life - 11 Times  
Eternal Life - 26 Times  
Life Everlasting - 4 Times  
John 6:39; Rom. 6:23; 8:33, 37-39; 11:29; Eph. 4:30; Heb. 8:12 & 10:17

**Common Teaching:** Rewards for Christian Service  
**Bible Teaches:** No Rewards  
Luke 17:10; 18:29-30

**Common Teaching:** Carnal Christians  
**Bible Teaches:** Christians are Spiritual not Carnal  
Rom. 8:5-14

**Common Teaching:** Pictures of Jesus are acceptable  
**Bible Teaches:** No representations of Deity are permitted  
Ex. 20:4-5; Acts 17:29

**Common Teaching:** Revelation is a Chronological Book  
**Bible Teaches:** Not Chronological  
5:9 - Believers in Heaven  
7:9 - Believers in Heaven  
6:12-17 - Return of Christ  
19:11 - Return of Christ  
20:15 - Unsaved cast into hell  
21:8 - Details future Judgment of unsaved

**Common Teaching:** God still owes the Jews a land

**Bible Teaches:** God fulfilled His Promises

Joshua 21:43-45; 23:1-5; 1 Kings 8:56; Neh. 9:7-8, 23

**Common Teaching:** All the Jews will be saved when Christ returns

**Bible Teaches:** All unbelievers will be judged

Job 34:18-19; Mt. 5:45; John 3:36; Acts 10:34; Romans 2:8-9; 10:12; 1 John 5:12

**Common Teaching:** Christian Psychology is Acceptable

**Bible Teaches:** The Word alone without admixture

Joshua 1:7-8; Psalm 4:4-5; Isaiah 26:3; 48:18

**Common Teaching:** Christ died for everyone

**Bible Teaches:** Limited Atonement

Matt. 1:21; 20:28; 22:14; 26:28; Mark 13:20; John 1:12-13; 13:1; 13:18; 15:16;

2 Thess. 2:13; Heb. 4:3

**Common Teaching:** Man is Good

**Bible Teaches:** Man is Totally Depraved

Gen.5:3; Rom. 3:10-19

## Gathered To Your People

By Dr. Ken Matto

There seems to be some confusion on the part of many Christians concerning what happens when a Christian physically dies. Now I am not speaking about the rapture on the last day, which Christ mentions five times in the book of John. (John 6:39; 6:40; 6:44; 6:54; 11:24) Some Christians feel that when a Christian dies there is a waiting time or they go to a place called Abraham's Bosom which is sort of a holding place for true believers until the last day. However, the Bible is very clear on what happens to the believer when they physically die. We do not have to concoct any scenarios because the Bible is plain. Before we get into the promotion of the believer to glory, we must know why the believer is able to go directly into the presence of the Lord upon physical death.

Every person on earth has sinned and there is no question about that. However, when a person becomes a Christian by the electing grace of God, something happens to them internally. The flesh or our physical body has not been redeemed but will continue to decay until it finally dies and then it is buried where the body will continue to decompose until it is finally gone. There will come a time on the last day when our body will be raised in the resurrection. *1 Corinthians 15:42 (KJV) So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption:* The physical body corrupts but the soul is eternal and cannot corrupt.

The change that the believer experiences is in the soul. Our physical body is laden with sin and one can see the struggle the Apostle Paul had as he details it in Romans 7:14-25. Before a person is saved, the soul of that person is dead and will go along with whatever the flesh wants to do. *Ephesians 2:5 (KJV) Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)* This is why as unbelievers, we did not have a problem committing sin because our dead soul and flesh were in agreement. Now I want to take Ephesians 2:5 a little deeper because the real person is the soul of a person and not the flesh. *Romans 7:17 (KJV) Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.* The apostle Paul had a deep understanding of this situation. He states that when he sins that it is no longer him that does it but sin that dwells in him. When a person becomes saved, as I stated before, their physical body has not been redeemed and that is where the sin lies. When Paul states that it is no longer him that does it, he is referring to the real him which is the resurrected soul that he received at the moment he was saved. We must be very careful that we never equate the dying physical body with the resurrected soul. *2 Corinthians 4:16 (KJV) For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.* The resurrected soul of the believer is being renewed and strengthened every day.

Let us briefly discuss the resurrected soul and what it is. We see a good understanding of the resurrected soul in Revelation 20:5-6. Now many erroneously attach these verses to some mythical thousand year reign of Christ but the context of these verses cannot and do not support such a teaching. If you notice that in these two verses, they speak about the first resurrection. The key to understanding this is found in verse 6 where it states, "on such the second death hath no power," and we must understand what the second death is. *Revelation 20:14 (KJV) And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.* The second death is when both death and hell will be cast into the lake of

fire. No longer will there be any sin, so the consequences of sin which is hell and death will also be cast into the lake of fire. This is called the second death or eternal damnation. *(1 Cor 15:26 KJV) The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.* The Apostle Paul had given us prior knowledge that death would be the last enemy and in 20:14 we see that death will be destroyed. No longer will anyone die in the New Heaven and New Earth because only the redeemed of God will be there and they have been granted eternal life through the shed blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. So we see that the second death does not affect those who have become born again in Christ. So we understand that those who have become born again in Christ are not affected by the second death as recorded in Rev. 20:6.

*Revelation 20:5-6 (KJV) But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. {6} Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.*

*Romans 6:4 (KJV) Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. Romans 6:4 spells it out for us that as Christ was raised we are also raised to live in newness of life, that is we live the Christian walk.*

*Ephesians 2:6 (KJV) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:* Ephesians 2:6 takes the raising of the believer further. Not only do we walk in newness of life on this earth, God has already raised us up and from His vantage point, we are already in Heaven with Christ. Now that is a great disclosure of biblical truth concerning the believer. Now before we can get to this point in our Christian walk, something had to take place within us so we can be qualified to gain Heaven. Now we get to the reason that the true believer goes right into the presence of the Lord upon their physical demise.

*Psalms 103:12 (KJV) As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.*

*Colossians 2:13-14 (KJV) And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; {14} Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;*

*Isaiah 43:25 (KJV) I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.*

*Hebrews 8:12 (KJV) For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.*

*Hebrews 10:17 (KJV) And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.*

We see from these six verses that God not only removes all sin from the soul of the believer, He blots out all ordinances against us, He blots out all our transgressions, and

three times He states that He will not remember our sins. The reason that the believer, whether on the Old Testament side or the New Testament side, can go right into the presence of the Lord is because the believer has been fully cleansed by the blood of Christ and there is now nothing hindering their entrance into Heaven. *1 Peter 1:4 (KJV) To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,* The inheritance is already reserved for the believer so there is no waiting period. Now let us attend to the examples in Scripture that teach us of the instant translation of the believer.

### **Abraham**

Genesis 25:8 (KJV) Then Abraham gave up the ghost, and died in a good old age, an old man, and full of years; and was gathered to his people.

If you notice the case of Abraham, that as soon as he gave up the ghost, that is, as soon as he physically died he was gathered to his people, and where is his people? They are in Heaven because Abraham was a redeemed child of God.

### **Isaac**

Genesis 35:29 (KJV) And Isaac gave up the ghost, and died, and was gathered unto his people, being old and full of days: and his sons Esau and Jacob buried him.

We see the same scenario with Isaac that as soon as he gave up the ghost, he was instantly gathered to his people.

### **Jacob**

Genesis 49:29 (KJV) And he charged them, and said unto them, I am to be gathered unto my people: bury me with my fathers in the cave that is in the field of Ephron the Hittite,

Genesis 49:33 (KJV) And when Jacob had made an end of commanding his sons, he gathered up his feet into the bed, and yielded up the ghost, and was gathered unto his people.

Here we read about Jacob that as soon as he laid in bed and gave up the ghost that he was instantly translated into Heaven.

### **Aaron**

Numbers 20:24 (KJV) Aaron shall be gathered unto his people: for he shall not enter into the land which I have given unto the children of Israel, because ye rebelled against my word at the water of Meribah.

Numbers 20:26 (KJV) And strip Aaron of his garments, and put them upon Eleazar his son: and Aaron shall be gathered unto his people, and shall die there.

Deuteronomy 32:50 (KJV) And die in the mount whither thou goest up, and be gathered unto thy people; as Aaron thy brother died in mount Hor, and was gathered unto his people:

Here we read that Aaron had died in Mount Hor and upon his death, he was gathered unto

his people, that is, instantly translated into Heaven.

### **Moses**

Deuteronomy 32:50 (KJV) And die in the mount whither thou goest up, and be gathered unto thy people; as Aaron thy brother died in mount Hor, and was gathered unto his people:

Numbers 27:13 (KJV) And when thou hast seen it, thou also shalt be gathered unto thy people, as Aaron thy brother was gathered.

Numbers 31:2 (KJV) Avenge the children of Israel of the Midianites: afterward shalt thou be gathered unto thy people.

Here we read about Moses that he was to avenge the children of the Midianites and then he would be permitted to see the promised land and after he saw it, he would be gathered unto his people.

### **Thief on the Cross**

Luke 23:43 (KJV) And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

The thief on the cross went to Heaven with the Lord Jesus Christ. The teaching that Jesus went to the spirits in hell and preached to them is a ridiculous teaching. *Luke 23:46 (KJV) And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.* As soon as Jesus died, He commended His spirit to the Father and his body was buried in Joseph's tomb. Jesus didn't go to hell but went right to Heaven. As soon as the saved thief had died on his cross, he went right into the presence of the Lord as the Lord promised him. There was no wait or going to some place called Abraham's bosom. Abraham's bosom is not a separate place, it is a synonym for Heaven because we already saw that Abraham was gathered to his people and the redeemed of the Lord are in Heaven.

Revelation 6:9-11 (KJV) And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: {10} And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? {11} And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

Revelation 7:9 (KJV) After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

Revelation 6:9-11 and 7:9 reveal to us that there is a great multitude in Heaven before the throne of the Lamb and notice they have white robes which is representative of the fact that they are pure because of the blood of Christ. So true believers do not go anywhere in this universe except into the presence of the Lord upon their physical demise. If believers

did not go to Heaven, then where did that great multitude which no man can number come from?

## US

2 Corinthians 5:8 (KJV) We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

Paul speaks about being confident in the salvation of the Lord that when we are absent from the body, that is, when we physically die, our soul and spirit are separated from our body. The body goes into the ground and the soul goes back to God. Ecclesiastes 12:7 (KJV) Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.

## Summary

We have looked at quite a number of verses and have plainly seen that God has removed our sins making our souls clean because of the blood of Christ. This means that the real us, our soul and spirit, are readied for Heaven and as soon as we physically die on this earth, the real us go directly into Heaven, immediately into the presence of the Lord. There is no waiting time or judgment because Christ already paid for our sins on the cross and now there is nothing hindering our translation into Heaven. As we saw the Old Testament Saints who were gathered to their people immediately upon their physical demise, the same will be for us. As soon as our eyes close here for the last time, and there will be a last time unless the Lord returns first, we will go directly into the presence of the Lord. It will be an instant translation.

John 11:25 (KJV) Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:

## Jesus: King of the Jews

By Dr. Ken Matto

Matthew 27:11 (KJV) And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

For two millennia the normal teaching is that Jesus was the king of the Jews. This can be taken from Zechariah 9:9. Zechariah 9:9 (KJV) Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass. Of course, this verse deals strictly with the triumphal entry of Jesus into Jerusalem on Palm Sunday, the week before Resurrection Day.

Matthew 21:4-5 (KJV) All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, {5} Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

So we see that in both the Old Testament and in the New Testament that Jesus is referred to as the king of the Jews. However, in these instances He is not specifically referred to as the King of the “Jews” just as their King. The term King of the Jews is used 17 times in the four Gospels and not to be found anywhere else in the New Testament.

John 19:21 (KJV) Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

In John 19:21, we read that the Jews wanted the inscription over Jesus on the cross to be changed from “King of the Jews” to “he said, I am King of the Jews.” I have found nowhere in Scripture where Jesus ever claimed to be King of the Jews. He did, however, accept the title of “King of the Jews” from Pilate.

Luke 23:2-3 (KJV) And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King. {3} And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.

Notice in Luke 23:2-3. In verse 2 the Jews were accusing Christ of claiming to be a king but if you will notice in verse 3, it is Pilate who then adds to their words and calls Jesus “King of the Jews.”

We read the same scenario in John 18:33-34 and ask Jesus if He was King of the Jews? Then Jesus responds to Pilate by asking him if he is asking on his own or did others tell you that about me?

John 18:33-34 (KJV) Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? {34} Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?

Then Pilate continues on questioning Jesus concerning why the chief priests have

delivered Jesus to him.

John 18:35 (KJV) Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done?

Now the next two verses are pivotal verses in understanding the term “King of the Jews.” The first verse is John 19:15. At the trial of Christ, Pilate was trying to get Jesus released because Pilate knew that Jesus was innocent and that He was delivered to him for envy and jealousy. Matthew 27:18 (KJV) For he knew that for envy they had delivered him. Then in John 19:15, Pilate asks a straightforward question, “Shall I crucify your King?” Then the response comes back to Pilate, “We have no king but Caesar.” This is very important because it now shows that Jesus was not king of the physical nation of Israel.

John 19:15 (KJV) But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

Then what seals the deal on this subject is the final verse which deals with the kingdom that Jesus is the King of. We find the answer to that in John 18:36:

John 18:36 (KJV) Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

Here Jesus details the fact that His kingdom is not on this earth because if it was, then His servants would fight to free Him from two things: Rome who is about to crucify Him and notice what other information he reveals, “that I should not be delivered to the Jews.” If Jesus came as King of the physical Jews, then why would He use the term “delivered to the Jews?” This information is also applicable to the false teaching of a mythical thousand year reign that the kingdom of Jesus is not on this earth and will not be set up as such.

Now then, if Jesus is not king of the physical Jews here on earth and His kingdom is in Heaven, then what do we do with the 17 usages of the term “king of the Jews.” Remember when Jesus said to Peter, Get thee behind me Satan? Jesus was not calling Peter Satan because Satan has no chance of ever being saved but Peter was going to be saved. So Jesus looked beyond the earthly desire of Peter of not wanting Christ to go to the cross and spoke directly to the spiritual aspect of it, and that is, if Jesus did not go to the cross, then salvation would be non-existent. Now in the Scriptures, using the same principle of interpretation, we look beyond the earthly meaning of “King of the Jews” and lo and behold, a beautiful understanding emerges.

Romans 2:28-29 (KJV) For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: {29} But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Romans 9:6 (KJV) Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are

not all Israel, which are of Israel:

Romans 11:26 (KJV) And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

Galatians 3:29 (KJV) And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

Galatians 6:16 (KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

Philippians 3:3 (KJV) For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

Revelation 3:12 (KJV) Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

Revelation 21:2 (KJV) And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

The terms "Jew, Israel, Circumcision, Abraham's Seed" all took on new meanings after the cross:

1. Abraham's seed is the Christian.
2. The true circumcision is the Christian.
3. A biblical Jew is a Christian
4. The Israel of God is the Church.
5. The "all Israel" that God has in view for salvation is not national Israel but it is the completion of the body of Christ at the last day.

Therefore we can safely conclude that Jesus is not the king of the physical Jews as the pre-tribbers conclude but Jesus is King of the Jews, that is, King of all the true believers who have become born again. Jesus reigns over the body of believers. Hebrews 3:6 (KJV) But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end. Notice that Hebrews 3:6 states that Christ is over His own house, which is the body of believers, where it reads "whose house we are," which means He rules over the Christians worldwide. This is why He told Pilate that His kingdom was not of this world because it would have been limited to one small nation, instead Christ is king over the body of believers on a worldwide scale. Today Christ rules the body of believers from the right hand of God the Father, thus making Him, "King of the Jews," that is, spiritual Israel, the Israel of God that He purchased with His own blood.

Acts 20:28 (KJV) Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

Hebrews 9:12 (KJV) Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

Hebrews 13:12 (KJV) Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

Revelation 1:5 (KJV) And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Therefore the conclusion is obvious. The physical Jews have no king but Caesar. The Christian has no king but Jesus! So Jesus is the King of the Jews, that is, those who are born again!

## Last Will and Testament of Christ

By Dr. Ken Matto

*Hebrews 9:16 (KJV) For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.*

In Hebrews 9, we read in verses 14-17, the subject of a will. A will is a legal document which allows the lawyer of the deceased or testator to divide their estate according to their wishes while they were still alive. While the testator lives, the will may be changed but once that person dies, there can be no more changes to that will because it now is in force. The testator is a person who makes or leaves a testament or will to give instruction on how to divide up their estate to those named in that will after their death and not before. This is another section of Scripture which puts the death knell to the myth of free will.

In Hebrews 9:14-17, we read about the last will and testament of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Hebrews 9:14 (KJV) How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?* The word “your” in this verse is a pronoun, second person plural and in the genitive case (case of possession) which means that the author is speaking to a certain group of people. If you notice that this verse is dripping with the words of salvation. It speaks about a person who is having their conscience purged from dead works to serve the living God. This means that a person has become saved because they go from dead works to serve the living God. If you notice, the verse is also stating that it was the blood of Christ, through the eternal Spirit that has done the purging. It is not done by the will of man but by the Holy Spirit in conjunction with the blood of Christ.

*Hebrews 9:15 (KJV) And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.* Verse 15 builds upon the teaching of verse 14. It speaks about Christ being the mediator. The mediator is one who comes between two parties, especially in a legal situation. *1 Timothy 2:5 (KJV) For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;* The Bible is very clear that Christ is the mediator between God and man. *John 14:6 (KJV) Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* It is clear that no one comes to the Father except through Christ making Him the only mediator of salvation. The first testament was the law of Sinai which no one would be able to keep. Salvation was unattainable by means of the Law. Hebrews 9:15 then speaks about those who are called that may receive the promise of eternal inheritance. It sounds like those who are called unto salvation may not receive it. This is easily explainable by the following passage. *Matthew 22:14 (KJV) For many are called, but few are chosen.* Many are called by means of the Gospel proclamation but not everyone will become saved. Only those who are chosen unto salvation will receive the promise. *Ephesians 1:4 (KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:* According to Ephesians 1:4, only a certain group of people were chosen before the

foundation of the earth and that is the Elect of God. *1 Peter 1:2 (KJV) Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.* We are elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father. Notice that in this verse also the blood of Christ is working in conjunction with the Holy Spirit.

Back to Hebrews 9:15. We read that it was the death of Christ that was made for the redemption of His elect from their transgressions made under the first covenant or the Law. Every person in this world that is unsaved at the time of death will be judged according to the Law. If therefore any transgression of the law be found in an individual, it will be like they have broken the entire law and will be sentenced to eternal damnation. *James 2:10 (KJV) For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.* Therefore since Christ died for His Elect, they will no longer be held guilty for the transgression of the law because Christ fulfilled all the requirements of the Law by means of His sacrifice. Since the believer is in Christ, it is like they too have kept every tenet of the Law. *Colossians 3:3 (KJV) For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. Since we are hidden in Christ, no accusation of the law can ever touch us.*

*Hebrews 9:16 (KJV) For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.* Now comes the legal, binding part of the testament. The testament is changeable only while the testator lives and has no legal or binding authority but once the testator is dead, the testament now goes into force and has legal authority and cannot be changed anymore. The testament is to remain as is at the point of the death of the testator. Christ was the testator of the New Testament or Covenant and His death at Calvary sealed the contents of His Testament or will. Just as a person makes a will, it can be changed any time the person is still alive but once they are dead, the will is now sealed and no more changes are to take place.

*Hebrews 9:17 (KJV) For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.* A will is a dead document and carries no legal authority until the death of the testator occurs. It is not like a power of attorney which a person has over another which is a document that is in force as long as the person it is designed to protect is still alive. Once that person passes away, then the power of attorney is null and void and at that time the will or testament is activated and the final wishes of the testator are then carried out.

Now here is the part which puts another death knell into the myth of free will. Once the Lord Jesus Christ died, then all those who were named before the foundation of the world unto salvation were now sealed. *2 Corinthians 1:22 (KJV) Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.* Then until the last one is saved, the call goes out to the world but only the elect will be chosen unto salvation. Only those whose names who were written in the Lamb's Book of Life will become saved. *Revelation 21:27 (KJV) And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.* The place in Heaven was already prepared for the believer from the foundation of the world. *Matthew 25:34 (KJV) Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the*

*world:*

Now here is the boot to free will. Have you ever been to the reading of a will? If not let me make up a typical scenario.

John Jones had died and now his family has come to the Lawyer's office for the reading of the will. Now John Jones was worth One million dollars so the reading of the will is important.

The Lawyer now reads the will which John made ten years ago and for the purpose of better understanding, we will say that his wife had predeceased him and only the children are now in the will.

“To my three children I hereby bequeath my entire estate which is to be divided up equally. My three children being Abigail, Jane, and Deborah. Now the will has been executed and the estate has been legally divided up.

**BUT WAIT!**

Before the session is over, a neighbor comes in and says to the Lawyer, add my name to that list and divide up the estate four ways.

The lawyer tells the man, “I am sorry but you cannot just add your name to the will because once a person dies, the will is in force and cannot be changed.”

Neighbor says, “Yes, but I choose to be part of that estate.”

Lawyer says, “I am sorry but you cannot add your name to a document which has been sealed and is now in force.”

Neighbor says, “But I will myself to be part of that estate.”

Lawyer says, “Sorry, but you cannot add your name to a will already in force and with all the named inheritors now please leave because ‘we never knew you.’”

And so it is with those who think that they can add their names to Christ's last will and testament. He died for His people, the Elect of God, and those were named before the foundation of the world and only those who are named will become saved and because the testament is in force, no other names can be added to it. No amount of free will, will ever get anyone into Heaven, simply because no one can add their names to the will. This is why on the last day, Jesus will say to the unbelievers. *Matthew 7:23 (KJV) And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.* This is why Jesus says to the unbelievers that He never knew them because they were not named in His will and therefore He did not die for them. So no matter who thinks or preaches that a person has free will and can “accept Christ” they are teaching a rank heresy and need to study their Bibles. Christ died for a specific group, namely His Elect.

*Matthew 1:21 (KJV) And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name*

*JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.*

*John 13:1 (KJV) Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.*

*John 17:9 (KJV) I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.*

Notice in these three verses, we read that Christ is only praying for and saving His people, which are the Elect of God and not the whole world. Now just one more section and that is back to legal talk. Remember in a will the beneficiaries receive an inheritance and that is exactly the language which God uses in describing what the believers receive.

*Acts 20:32 (KJV) And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.*

*Ephesians 1:11 (KJV) In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:*

*Ephesians 1:14 (KJV) Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.*

*Ephesians 1:18 (KJV) The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,*

*Hebrews 9:15 (KJV) And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.*

*1 Peter 1:4 (KJV) To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,*

The word “inheritance” is used 203 times in the Bible and the word “inherit” is used 61 times. These are legal terms with only specifically named people in view, just as the six verses above show us.

### **Summary**

To summarize this article, we have learned that a will, when the testator is still alive can be changed but once the testator dies, the will is now in force and nothing can be added or changed anymore. What makes us think that the Last Will and Testament of Christ is any different? No one of their own “supposed” free will can add their name to a document which is now in force, especially since Christ was the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. *Revelation 13:8 (KJV) And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the*

*foundation of the world.* This means that in principle Christ was already slain before the first man was formed and that means the last will and testament of Christ was already in force when the world was created. The mythical free will of man is an affront to God when He already has everything worked out since the dawn of time. *Hebrews 4:3 (KJV)* *For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.* Free will is the feeble attempt of man to usurp the authority of God by believing he can add his name to a finished document and then believe that God is obligated to save him. Those who are to be saved have already been named, whether the free willer accepts it or not.

## The Old Testament Genealogies Their Importance for the Believer!

By Dr. Ken Matto

These sought their register *among* those that were reckoned by genealogy, but it was not found: therefore were they, as polluted, put from the priesthood. (Nehemiah 7:64)

Have you ever wondered why the Genealogies were such a vital part of the Old Testament and to the nation of Israel? It goes way beyond “he beget him, or he was the son of so and so.” Many skip over the genealogies because they find them to be boring. However, they are anything but that. God saw fit to place the genealogies in the Hebrew Scriptures and placed great emphasis on them. The first eight chapters of 1 Chronicles was dedicated to them. Ezra 2 & 7-8, Nehemiah 7 & 11 are some chapters which are heavily loaded with genealogies. So if God saw fit to dedicate so much Scripture to genealogies then we need to sit up and ask the reason why?

In Nehemiah 7:64, Nehemiah could not find many names in Zerubbabel’s register and that meant those people were unqualified to perform the service of priest and therefore Nehemiah removed them until they could be verified by Urim and Thummim. Since their names were not found in the register, they were considered Gentiles and therefore polluted and could no longer perform the duties of a priest which was reserved for the Levites in the lineage of Aaron. Now to the great representation the Old Testament genealogies attested to.

According to Revelation 13:8 & 17:8 the names of all the true believers were written in the Lamb’s Book of Life before the foundation of the world.

And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. (Revelation 13:8)

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17:8)

The Old Testament genealogies was an earthly representation of the Heavenly Register of all true believers otherwise known as the Lamb’s Book of Life. It is where the true believer’s name was written before the foundation of the world. This is why the Lord Jesus Christ came to earth to pay for this sins of his people and not everyone in the whole world.

And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. (Matthew 1:21)

The earthly genealogies were also a legal document denoting who was a true Israelite and who was an unbeliever. In the books of Nehemiah and Ezra, they held to the register which gave proof of those who were truly Israelites and those who were not. This was

important because when Judah went into captivity, they had integrated their lives with the heathens to the point that many stayed in Babylon even after the release date. It was like a person spending 5 years in prison and then staying another year after their sentence was up. So Nehemiah and Ezra had to make sure there were no mixed heathen blood among those who returned and especially those who were performing the duties of a priest. There is also a legal document in the New Testament which pertains to the true believer.

<sup>15</sup> And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. <sup>16</sup> For where a testament *is*, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. <sup>17</sup> For a testament *is* of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth. (Hebrews 9:15-17)

It is quite interesting to note that this information was included in the book of Hebrews since they would have been familiar with the genealogies being a legal document. If a person's name was not found in the register, then they were considered as outcasts or Gentiles. If their names were included then they could have full rights as a citizen of Israel and if they were of a priestly family, they could then legally perform the functions of a priest. Now we turn to the legal document in Hebrews. It is speaking of a will and legally only those who are named in the will be the inheritors. Those who are not named in the will have no claim on any of the contents of the estate. Above we saw the names of the true believers were written in the Lamb's Book of Life before the foundation of the world which means Christ died only for that select group and because of his death, the will is now in force. This means the named believers were now heirs.

And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with *him*, that we may be also glorified together. (Romans 8:17)

And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise. (Galatians 3:29)

That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. (Titus 3:7)

Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation? (Hebrews 1:14)

Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? (James 2:5)

Here we have five particulars the true believer is heir of because of the last will and testament of Christ. We are heirs of God, heirs of the promise made to Abraham, heirs of eternal life, heirs of salvation, and heirs of the kingdom. So every believer who is named in the Heavenly Register will inherit all five of the items above and more.

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: (Colossians 1:12)

The word “us” is speaking about the body of believers.

Only true believers have the authority to go forth and bring the true gospel. The unbelievers who play church do not have the authority and are unsaved which means they are Gentiles according to the flesh. <sup>16</sup> *But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, or that thou shouldest take my covenant in thy mouth?* <sup>17</sup> *Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest my words behind thee. (Psalm 50:16-17)* Gentiles in the Old Testament were separate from Israel because they were the unsaved, outside of the true body of believers. The heathen nations did not care about the true God of Israel. They were too busy making up their own gods like Athena, Moloch, Baal, Mars, Jupiter, etc.

Is there a parallel to the Old Testament priesthood? There sure is!

But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: (1 Peter 2:9)

The true believers are called “a royal priesthood” which means they are the only ones commissioned to bring the true gospel which also means the unbeliever is unqualified and has never been commissioned to bring it. In other words, they are “put from the priesthood” as they were under Nehemiah. (Nehemiah 7:64) The unbeliever is in constant rebellion against God because they are in an unregenerate state. Just like the false priests whom God calls wicked in Psalm 50:16-17 had no right to declare his word since they themselves did not understand it nor obey it, in fact he states they hated it. Just as Nehemiah opened the books to see the lineage of all those who were with him, on the last day the Heavenly Register will also be opened and those who are not written in it will be sentenced to eternity in hell.

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. (Revelation 20:12)

And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire. (Revelation 20:15)

Remember one main thing that specific names were written in the register that Nehemiah used and specific names are written in the genealogies we find written in the Scriptures.

To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. (John 10:3)

I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine. (John 10:14)

As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. (John 10:15)

In these three verses in John we read an amazing fact about the sheep. In verse 3, the Lord Jesus Christ calls his own sheep by name. In verse 14, he states he knows his sheep and then in verse 15, he states that he gave his life for those sheep. So Christ died only for his own sheep and not the whole sheep pen because he knew who his sheep were and are and he knew and knows them personally. This is why on Judgment Day he will say to the unbelievers. *And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:23)* First, he never knew them because they were not named in the Heavenly Register, and secondly, they are workers of iniquity which means they have not been redeemed. Just as the earthly register that Nehemiah used to determine who was a true Israelite, the Heavenly Register will be opened on Judgment Day to determine who is the Lord's and who is not.

### **Summary**

The earthly genealogies were a picture of the Heavenly Register which in both cases contains specific names. Only one major difference between the two. A saved grandfather or father cannot get anyone into Heaven, each person must be redeemed individually. In the earthly register ancestry of a true Israelite could give a person access to Israel and show they belonged to the nation without any Gentile blood polluting the line. So the next time you read the genealogies in Scripture, don't skip over them because God gave them to you as an encouragement if you are a true believer showing you that names and individuality in the body of believers is important. Christ died for you personally because your name was in the Heavenly Register. Take it personally because that is how the Lord meant it.

## Pentecost The Misunderstanding

By Dr. Ken Matto

Acts 2:1 (KJV) And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

One of the greatest misunderstandings taught today circles around the day of Pentecost. Many pastors and theologians tout the day as “The Birth of the Church.” This is far from the truth and it is based upon the belief that the Holy Spirit did not indwell believers in the Old Testament. That also is an inaccurate understanding of Scripture. When Stephen was standing before the Sanhedrin and giving his testimony, he referred to Israel as the church in the wilderness.

Acts 7:38 (KJV) This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us:

Now when we hear the word “church” sometimes we automatically think about a special building with a steeple. The word “church” as defined in the Greek is the word “ekklesia” which means “a called out assembly.” It is referring to the eternal, blood-bought church of Christ, not a building or denomination. We do not go to church on Sunday rather the church goes to a special religiously designed building to worship. Stephen had it totally correct when he spoke of Israel in the wilderness as a church because they were called out through the lineage of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob to bring forth the Messiah through the tribe of Judah.

When the day of Pentecost had come, the church was already in existence but in a subdued mode. In fact it was part of the great mystery of Christ.

Ephesians 3:3-6 (KJV) How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, {4} Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) {5} Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; {6} That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel:

As we read in Ephesians 3:3-6 that the great mystery concerning Christ and the church was not made known in past ages yet it was in existence among many of the Old Testament Saints. In the Old Testament, it was strictly all about Israel but in the New Testament the Gentiles will be fellowheirs with the Jews who became saved. This is evidenced today by the Gospel being preached all over the world. Now let us look at just a few of the Old Testament Saints which shows the Holy Spirit indwelled these believers and I will tell you how that is very obvious.

*Romans 4:3 (KJV) For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.* How could Abraham believe God if he was

spiritually dead? Without the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, a person remains spiritually dead.

*Exodus 3:4 (KJV) And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I. If Moses was spiritually dead as an unbeliever, how could God have called him? God never calls any unbeliever to lead his people. Moses stood in the presence of God and was not consumed because he was qualified to speak with God.*

These are just two of the Old Testament Saints as there are many others such as David, Solomon, Naboth, Elijah, Elisha, Samuel, et al

*Matthew 17:4 (KJV) Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.*

On the Mount of Transfiguration the Lord Jesus Christ appeared with two of the most prominent Saints from the Old Testament, Moses and Elijah. Both of them were physically dead for hundreds of years and yet here they were alive and well. So salvation was present in the Old Testament but it was much sparser than it was after Pentecost.

Since the church was interspersed throughout the timeline of Israel, and we really need to say it went back further in time than just the nation of Israel, going way back to possibly Adam and Eve if they became saved. In other words, what I am trying to say is that the church did not suddenly appear on Pentecost but was already a living entity for thousands of years at that point.

Let me just give an illustration. The law of gravity was not known in an academic manner thousands of years before the New Testament. Isaac Newton laid out the law of Gravity in a book in 1687. However, we can be certain that the law of gravity was present throughout all of man's time on earth. For example, in 2000 B.C. if a person fell off a high cliff, he would no doubt die from the fall. Even after 1687 when Newton explained the law of gravity, if a person fell off a high cliff, that person would also die from the fall. What I am saying is that just because something is not known academically does not mean that it does not exist. Gravity was around a long time before 1687 but was not known by that term.

So then, what did the Day of Pentecost bring forth if it was not the birth of the church? It brought forth the birth of two things: First, it brought forth the beginning of the last days as we read in Hebrews 1:2: *Hebrews 1:2 (KJV) Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;* Secondly, it was the birth of world evangelism. *Acts 2:8-11 (KJV) And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? {9} Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, {10} Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, {11} Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.*

And resulting in the fact that all the visitors heard the gospel in their own tongue or language was a great harvest of souls on the first day:

Acts 2:41 (KJV) Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

Since the day of Pentecost, the Gospel has been circling the globe with the message of eternal salvation and everyday people somewhere are becoming saved.

So just to recap the day of Pentecost was the beginning of the last days of this earth and the beginning of world evangelism in fulfillment of Colossians 1:27. *Colossians 1:27 (KJV) To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:*

## Our Mediator

by Dr. Ken Matto

(1 Tim 2:5 KJV) For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

A few days ago I won a two month battle with AT&T. They charged me for 3 collect calls from Sierra Leone in Africa totaling \$37.02. They claim infallibility of their operators that they would not have charged me if no one was home to answer the phone. One of the days on which one of the calls came was August 8 at 9:27 AM. At that time I was in the Olav B. Olson Auditorium at Tuscarora Inn awaiting Dr. Otero to take the Podium and give another great teaching.

Now I had called AT&T directly about these calls several times and their glib answer all three times was that AT&T does not credit long distance collect calls since a code could be uttered by the caller or receiver and therefore a free call would take place. Now I had told them I was refusing to pay for the calls since I had evidence I was not home when these calls came in. They didn't care, they wanted me to pay for their 3 mistakes. So they told me they were noting it on my account that I refused to pay.

I then got off the phone with them and called Verizon which is my local carrier and told them why the \$37.02 would be consistently showing up on my bill. I told her of my plight with AT&T and she told me that she could do nothing about removing the charges. She told me that AT&T could hand it over to a collection agency and maybe my credit would be ruined. I told her fine and I would litigate since I had evidentiary information on the side of my innocence. The rep. then suggested to me to stand by and she would call AT&T and she explained it to the rep. at AT&T. The Verizon rep. then conference called all 3 of us and the woman at AT&T acceded to the fact I was innocent and removed the charges.

I sat here and asked what is the spiritual lesson here? Then the obvious answer came that I won my case by means of a mediatrix. When I went directly to AT&T I was unable to plead my case with satisfaction. It is like many in the world today who believe they can go directly to God without the mediatory life of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Scriptures teach very clearly on this subject. (1 John 2:23 KJV) *Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.* Those in false religions and churches who deny that Christ is God and His office of mediator and believe they can bypass Christ will not be able to plead their case before God successfully. One can only come into the presence of a Holy God through the Lord Jesus Christ and if you deny Him, you have no advocate to plead your case. (1 John 2:1 KJV) *My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:* Those who choose to go directly to the Father will find they will go directly to Hell. To bypass the Lord Jesus Christ is to bypass the essence of God's salvation plan. It is to ignore His sufferings and agony for His elect. Those religions and false churches which reduce the Lord Jesus Christ to a mere prophet are sentencing their people to Hell. Only God Himself can be a mediator of the New Covenant and for His people. (Heb 12:24 KJV) *And to Jesus the*

*mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*

So let us discover some principles which teach us how marvelous it is to have the Lord Jesus Christ as our mediator.

### **Our Mediator:**

**1) helps in the area we are the weakest** - (Rom 8:26 KJV) *Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.*

**2) destroyed our sins** - (Isa 43:25 KJV) *I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.*

**3) gave HIMSELF for our sins** - (Heb 9:26 KJV) *For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.*

**4) empowers us** - (John 15:5 KJV) *I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.*

**5) gave us peace with God** - (Rom 5:1 KJV) *Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:* When I went directly to AT&T, there was enmity between us but when the mediator stepped in, there is now peace. It is the same situation when a person tries to go directly to God without the Lord Jesus Christ, the enmity will still exist but when a saved person goes through the Lord Jesus Christ, peace will ensue.

I realize that this week's Zion's Gate is not brimming with Scripture as other weeks but I wanted to remind us that the office of mediator which the Lord Jesus Christ holds is a very strategic part of not only His ministry in Heaven but ours here on earth. Sometimes this part of the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ is neglected or taken for granted. It is incumbent upon the believer that we consider every aspect of the ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ, after all, He is doing it for our benefit. Till we meet at Jesus' feet! (10/15/00)

## **PEACE ON EARTH!**

By Dr. Ken Matto

Luke 2:14 (KJV) Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

With Christmas upon us there seems to be another major confusion as to why Christ came to this earth. It seems the majority of people believe that it was for the purpose of bringing peace on earth. Of course, the peace they are thinking about is the type of peace where two people stop fighting or two countries stop throwing bombs at one another. While that is a nice belief it has nothing to do with that in the initial stage of true peace. When Christ came to earth, even He prophesied the destruction of Judah in 70 A.D. which he also orchestrated based upon verses in Daniel. So world peace was not established at that time. Since the time of Christ, there have been many wars including world wars and localized wars which means if Christ came for the purpose of establishing that type of peace, then His mission was a complete failure.

So then what type of peace did Christ come to establish on earth when Luke 2:14 speaks about peace on earth. The answer to that is found in Romans 5:1:

Romans 5:1 (KJV) Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

The peace that Christ came to establish was a qualified peace between God the Father and those who would believe. As Jesus stated in John 14:6 that no one can come to the Father except through Him. The unbeliever is at war with God the Father. The Bible calls it enmity which can also be understood as hostility.

Ephesians 2:14-16 (KJV) For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; {15} Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; {16} And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:

As we read in Ephesians 2:14-16, that the sacrifice of Christ on Calvary had abolished the differences between Jew and Gentile which created out of these two groups, one complete body of Christ which are reconciled unto God the Father in peace because Christ slew the enmity or hostility that existed between God and those who had become saved. The peace on earth that Christ came to bring was not a physical peace on earth since that could not happen because every human being has the sin nature in them which can be ignited in a moment. The peace that Christ came to bring was the gospel that those who became saved will no longer be at enmity with God. That is the peace on earth which is the true peace. Those who are saved have experienced the true peace with God.

Romans 15:33 (KJV) Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

Philippians 4:9 (KJV) Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

Two times in the New Testament God the Father is called “the God of peace.” This is because He was the one who sent His Son to the manger for the purpose of dying for His Elect of all ages so that peace can be eternally existent between the saved and God the Father.

Now I want to dispel another myth which has been believed for many years by many. It is found in Matthew 5:9:

Matthew 5:9 (KJV) Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

In the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus states that “Blessed are the peacemakers...” What are the peacemakers and why would they be called the children of God? First of all we must understand that to be a child of God, we must be saved in Christ, not religious but truly saved in Christ. The peacemakers are those truly saved people who send forth the gospel to the ends of the earth. Let us say you hand someone a tract and they become saved. They, like you, are now at peace with God because the hostility has ended. The peace maker in view is the one who sends forth the gospel to see others become saved and as a result, when they become saved, they are no longer at enmity with God, the war is over.

There two other verses which must be looked at to give us a complete view of this subject of peace:

Matthew 10:34 (KJV) Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

Luke 12:51 (KJV) Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division:

Here in both Matthew 10:34 and Luke 12:51 we see that Christ did not come to bring peace on earth but a sword and division. The true gospel has split families and cost many friendships. In this time of year, try bringing the truth of why Christ came and see what the good church folk say to you or try to tell parents not to allow their children to believe in Santa Claus. Is your health insurance paid up? If Christ came to bring peace on earth, then why is the gospel banned in many countries? How can there be peace if there is no true gospel? The true peace that Christ came to bring is for one person at a time, not a country or continent.

Above I had stated that peace among warring countries or two people who hate each other was not in the initial stages of true peace. When two people are fighting and one becomes saved, they will cease hostilities against the other person. Outward peace is a result of the inward peace that God gives through salvation. So a person receives salvation, the peace of God in their lives, and it makes them less hostile and less desirable to fight. If you fill a bathtub with water and keep filling it, eventually it will overflow and a person who has peace in their life, that too will overflow into their daily living.

To summarize the peace that the world seeks and sings for on Christmas is not world peace but the individual peace that God gives to those that He saves. Peace apart from salvation is not peace but an emotional illusion. So that is the peace that Christ came to give at Christmas, the cessation of hostilities between the Elect of God and God the Father through salvation in Christ!

## Theological Slavery

By Dr. Ken Matto

Whenever I refer to “the Bible” it is always the King James Bible and not the modern counterfeits.

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)

You may have never heard the term “Theological Slavery” but it is a compartmentalization of Christianity in which all Christians are subject to if they allow it. What has happened to Christianity is horrendous where Christians have departed from the teachings of Scripture and created theological systems which are not only erroneous but are in total contradiction to the Scriptures which means they are lies. Christians have set aside the true Bible and are now placing their trust in theologians, pastors, and media ministries which are nothing more than wardens to keep the Christian in slavery to their teachings. This article is specifically aimed at Christians. The idea came to me when I had a discussion on Facebook with a woman who stated I was “way off” and refused to even look at any of my material. How can you claim someone is way off when you do not even look at their material? It is nothing more than bearing false witness. Then I realized why she said that because she is a slave to her theological system and is not allowed to go beyond what her church commands her to believe.

In ancient Israel, both the northern and southern kingdoms were taken into captivity by pagan empires. They had a good start in declaring their obedience to God. *And all the people answered together, and said, All that the LORD hath spoken we will do. And Moses returned the words of the people unto the LORD. (Exodus 19:8)* Then as you progress in the history of Israel you will plainly see that they blatantly disobeyed God and eventually the northern kingdom was removed from the land never to be returned again and the southern kingdom was completely wiped off the face of the map in 70 A.D. because of their rebellion to God. The problem that initiated their rebellion was that they were Scripturally illiterate.

They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. (John 7:52)

He restored the coast of Israel from the entering of Hamath unto the sea of the plain, according to the word of the LORD God of Israel, which he spake by the hand of his servant Galilee, the son of Amittai, the prophet, which *was* of Gath-hepher. (2 Kings 14:25)

The Pharisees who were supposed to be the leaders and experts in the Hebrew Scriptures showed their illiteracy by claiming that no prophet came out of Galilee. Jonah was of the tribe of Zebulun and Gath-hepher was near the Sea of Galilee. The problem was that they went from a study of the Scriptures to the Babylonian Talmud which was a series of commentaries. So basically they went from the teachings of God to the teachings of man. The very same thing is happening today in Christianity. It is no longer what the Bible says but what does the pastor say, or the media minister, or the seminary professor

say? Christians have set aside the Bible and have relegated their belief system to men. Some of the theological systems which keep Christians compartmentalized and separate are:

### **Dispensationalism (Pre-Tribulationism)**

Trance-channeled in 1830 by a woman named Margaret MacDonald. Trance-channeling is satanic and is used by the New Age movement to contact their ascended masters which is nothing more than demonic spirits otherwise known as familiar spirits. Tenets of their belief system are: 7 year tribulation period, rapture of the church before the tribulation period begins, rewards, physical 1,000 year reign of Christ from Jerusalem, modern Israel is a rebirth of ancient Israel. Not one of these can be proven from the Scriptures unless Scripture is twisted to fit this belief system.

### **Preterism**

Preterism was a created theological system which was a product of a Jesuit Priest Luis Del Alcazar in the 16<sup>th</sup> century to confront the teachings of the Reformers who taught that the Pope was the Antichrist. So he created a system of beliefs that placed everything as fulfilled in 70 A.D. thus taking the eye off the Pope and back on Jerusalem. His commentary "Investigation of the Hidden Sense of the Apocalypse" claimed that the book of Revelation was about ancient Rome and the first six centuries of the Church's existence. Alcazar believed that all the prophecies of Revelation except for chapters 20:4-22:21 were fulfilled in 70 A.D. They also believed that Christ returned in 70 A.D. in the role of the Roman army to destroy Jerusalem. Many church fathers place the book of Revelation during the reign of Domitian which was 81-96 A.D. and that the Apostle John was exiled under his reign.

### **Christian Reconstructionism**

Christian Reconstructionism, otherwise known as Christian Dominion, is a belief system which was created under the teachings of Rousas Rushdoony who was considered the Father of Christian Reconstructionism. He also taught that the world would become Christianized making way for the second coming of Christ. He also advocated a return to the law of God which would mean a keeping of the Mosaic Law. This view peaked in the 1990's and was declared a dead movement by 2008.

### **Antinomianism**

Right on the heels of the Christian Reconstructionist movement are the Antinomians. The word is made up of two Greek words "anti" which means "against" and "nomos" which means "law." They believe that when Christ died on the cross we are saved by grace alone without keeping any aspects of the law which is true but they take it one step further by believing that the Christian should not obey the moral laws of God. This belief system runs into a problem on two fronts: 1) Sin is the transgression of God's law (1 John 3:4) which means the law is not null and void in the area of morality which would be stealing, murder, adultery, etc. Christians are to live a godly life and not partake in sinful activities, 2) Christians are under the law of Christ. *If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: (James 2:8)* The law of Christ is the royal law and it is based upon loving they neighbor as thyself, in other words, putting others before yourself in all matters.

### **Hebrew Roots Movement**

It is a movement which attempts to Judaize the Christians and the churches by emphasizing the fact that the church has walked away from the Hebrew roots found in the Hebrew Scriptures. They teach that Christ and his disciples practiced the law of Moses and they did until Christ went to the cross and then the veil in the temple was rent in two which spelled the end of the Mosaic law as Christ now fulfilled all the aspects of the law of God and that is imputed to all his followers until the last one is saved. The book of Galatians was written as a warning against trying to keep the law for salvation while under grace. The two are antithetical and no amount of keeping the law will ever gain salvation for anyone.

### **Christian Zionism**

Christian Zionism is the belief that the modern nation of Israel is the fulfillment of some promise God made to Israel for a restoration of the nation of Israel. Normally Christian Zionism is married to dispensationalism and is normally embraced by Baptist and Fundamental churches. They will normally have the flag of Israel on their platform not realizing they are placing their church under the star of Moloch. The six pointed star is one of the highest signs in Satanism and David never had a star because he knew it was idolatry. *But ye have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun your images, the star of your god, which ye made to yourselves. (Amos 5:26) Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon. (Acts 7:43)* Christian Zionists make all kinds of excuses for Israel no matter what they do. Their motto is "If Israel wants it, then God wants it." I know because many years ago I accepted that false belief.

### **Post-Tribulationalism**

This is the belief that the return of Christ will happen after the Tribulation period because they believe they must be here as a final witness during that time.

### **Mid-Tribulationalism**

This belief system states that the church will be raptured in the middle of the Tribulation Period which is three and one half years into it.

### **Post-Millennialism**

This is a belief that states that the return of Christ will be after the Millennium which will be composed of the increase in Christian ethics and influence. This belief system piggybacks Christian Reconstructionism.

### **Amillennialism**

This is a belief which teaches that the Millennium found in Revelation 20 is symbolic for the entire New Testament period. There is no literal 1,000 year reign of Christ. He comes back on the last day which is simultaneous with Judgment Day and the rapture of the church. Many of the Reformers taught this.

### **Charismatic**

This system believes that the sign gifts which God gave to the church before the completion of the Bible are still active today such as tongues, interpretation of tongues, prophecies, healing, visions, dreams, miracles. The modern charismatic churches also

promote health, wealth, prosperity making it a very worldly gospel because you do not hear anything about the afterlife and if you do it is shrouded in much theatrical wording.

### **Emergent Church Movement**

This is the newest heresy to invade the church and embraced by Christians. It is based on the belief of experience rather than biblical instruction. This movement has crossed many denominational boundaries. They use rituals from many different churches such as the Roman Catholic Church, Celtic Christianity, Orthodox. They also allow the use of prayer beads, icons, walking the labyrinth, and Christian mysticism.

How do theological systems perpetuate? They perpetuate by means of generational indoctrination. For example, a person is born into the Baptist church, when they get old enough to marry they will have children and they will be brought up in the same church thus continuing the theological belief system. This would be fine if a person is brought up in a church which teaches biblical truth. Now no one is going to be 100% correct because we as finite creatures are attempting to understand a book given by an Infinite God. So we will have variables within the belief systems. However, small variant beliefs or teachings does not mean you build an entire doctrine on them and then go search the Scriptures to find a verse or two which can be twisted to make the case. For example, probably 95% of all Christians believe that the rapture is going to be before the tribulation period begins.

<sup>16</sup> For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: <sup>17</sup> Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. (1 Thessalonians 4:16-17)

After this I looked, and, behold, a door *was* opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard *was* as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter. (Revelation 4:1)

John was already given information on the things which were and the things which are and now he is going to be given the information on what is going to happen in the last days. The “last days” is the period from the cross to the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. In chapters two and three letters were sent to the existing churches on Earth but now the scene shifts to Heaven. This verse has been so misunderstood by the pre-tribulation crowd. They have taught for so long that it represents the rapture and they attempt to tie it in with 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18 but there is absolutely nothing by way of timing. The timing is added by means of whatever theological system one belongs to. Revelation 4:1 has nothing whatsoever to do with the idea of a pre-tribulation rapture. This verse is teaching us that the scene now shifts from earth to Heaven. Just as Ezekiel had heavenly visions, John is now having them. *Now it came to pass in the thirtieth year, in the fourth month, in the fifth day of the month, as I was among the captives by the river of Chebar, that the heavens were opened, and I saw visions of God. (Ezekiel 1:1)*

What I have listed above are just some of the major theological systems that Christians are attached to and the longer they stay in them, the more of a slave they become to them. Christians get to the point where they start defending these systems as if they are

all 100% true. When you place all these systems next to each other, ask yourself a simple question, “How can they all be correct when they all differ from each other?” For example, how could Christ come before the tribulation, in the middle of the tribulation and after the tribulation? Do you see the dilemma that puts Christians in if they believe one system and another believes another system, how can they all be right? Well the reality is that they are not all correct! Yet, Christians fight and argue and defend their position not realizing they are not defending biblical truth but a created theological system.

Each system has its own set of verses that it adheres to and they will not let their people look at other verses which may challenge their teachings. This is a very cultic method to use to control Christians. They may think they are not being controlled but they are by the wardens of the theological system. This was very evident in Christianity between 2001 and 2011 when Harold Camping was teaching that the rapture of the church would be on May 21, 2011 and the end of the world would be October 21, 2011. During that ten years, many of us debunked his teachings yet his minions called us “heretics, scoffers, and mockers.” They based this on 2 Peter 3:3 and Jude 18:

Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, (2 Peter 3:3)

How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. (Jude 18)

We refuted his heretical teachings using only the Word of God because of its power and guess what? I am writing this portion on June 9, 2020, 9 years after the supposed “biblical guarantee” of the return of Christ in May 2011.

I remember speaking with a Jehovah’s witness in my friend’s garage and we came to 2 Corinthians 5:8. *We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. (2 Corinthians 5:8)* When we read that to him, his exact words were “I didn’t even know that was in there.” That is because theological systems, whether Christian or not are scripted. Theological systems dictate to the believer what they will believe and if they go outside any of the parameters of the Script, then they will be castigated as a heretic or false teacher. In the last section, I am going to use the Rapture as my example to show how diametrically opposed to Scripture some of the theological systems are.

Have you ever heard the following statement? “In Essentials Unity, In Non-Essentials Liberty, In All Things Charity.” In 1999, H. J. M. Nellen found the quote in a 17th Century writing from the Marco Antonio de Dominis (d. 1624). It is a quote from one of the most untrustworthy theologians in Church history: a twice-declared heretic who could not seem to unify with anybody! He was a Roman Catholic Archbishop. And yet this unbiblical quotation is used by many Christians to halt any challenges to their theological stance. Do you know of any non-essential teachings of Scripture? *All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)* God gave all Scripture which means there is no such things as essential and non-essential, all Scripture is essential.

We also hear another unbiblical statement which is used very frequently by those who wish to halt any challenges to their theology. "Let's Agree to Disagree" (ATD) Let me just give you three consequences of hiding behind that statement:

1. Truth remains buried
2. No challenge to search the Scriptures
3. The Christian remains under false teachings

*These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so. (Acts 17:11)* The Apostle Paul commended the Berean believers because they searched the Scriptures daily, not theology books or theological systems.

Basically when someone hits you with an ATD, they are literally saying, "I will believe what I want to believe, and you believe what you want to believe." When someone uses an ATD, they are being spiritually smug in thinking they have stopped an argument or debate. What really happened, is that person is stunting their own spiritual growth and development by choosing to remain where it is the most comfortable and palatable. The true gospel is an offense, even to Christians since it zings us too. If I was to define ATD in one statement, it would be, "The avoidance of truth." How many times have you heard, "don't rock the boat?" The true gospel not only rocks the boat but it overturns ships. If you are a person given to ATD philosophy, you are really hurting yourself spiritually. How do you expect to grow if you set the standard of what you will believe rather than God's standard?

**For what saith the scripture?** Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. (Romans 4:3)

The first five words in Romans 4:3 is probably the most important in the Bible because it points us to what the Bible is teaching. Unfortunately, many Christians go to their pastor, theology books, prophecy books, or media ministry instead of going directly to the Bible and getting the answer and I know why. They fear the Bible because the answer may interfere with their plans. I know this from personal experience. Many years ago a woman came to me and asked me about marriage after divorce. I showed her the Scriptures which plainly teach that marriage after divorce is adultery. She did not care what the Bible taught and found four people to tell her what she wanted to hear and got married anyway.

<sup>11</sup> And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. <sup>12</sup> And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. (Mark 10:11-12)

Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery. (Luke 16:18)

<sup>2</sup> For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. <sup>3</sup> So then if, while *her* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. (Romans 7:2-3)

The reason why there are so many theological systems out there is simply because the Christians do not study their Bibles. Reading theology books, prophecy books, or listening to the preacher or a media ministry is not studying the Bible, instead that is relying on someone's interpretation of the Bible. That is like reading the Living Bible or New Living Translation and think you are reading the Bible when in essence you are not because they are paraphrases.

It seems that there is no end to theological systems and new denominations which are coming and going. It seems every church has a different interpretation of the Bible and if you listen to Christian radio, you will hear a different theology every half hour which throws more confusion into the mix. It seems Christians are trapped no matter where they go. They must adopt the theological system that their church does or they will be tossed out. The Lord himself gave us a tool which is the great equalizer and teacher. The Bible will either confirm or condemn your beliefs and we need to pay attention because if we do not, we will remain in the prison of our personal beliefs.

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. (2 Peter 1:20)

Here is the reason that there are so many different theologies and movements. Many have taken the Bible and interpreted it according to their preferences, bias, desires, and emotions and have created doctrines which are palatable to the flesh but are total error. Interpretation of the Bible belongs to the Bible itself. *Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. (1 Corinthians 2:13)* We compare Scripture with Scripture to make sure our conclusions harmonize with what is taught in the rest of the Bible. Once we do that we will begin to straighten out our understanding of Scripture. When I got rid of all my prophecy and theology books and went to the Bible alone for my understanding, the Bible became alive as it never did before, like a deluge in a thunderstorm. Difficult passages were now understandable as before when interpreted according to a theological system they remained closed and many times when approached, were twisted. I will give some examples of this to show a theological system will not stand the scrutiny of Scripture.

### **Emancipation Proclamation**

Theological systems have done nothing but shroud the truth in religious terms. I know this personally because when I first became a Christian, I followed dispensational theology until I ditched my prophecy books and started studying the Bible without the predisposition of a theological system, the ideas I was taught proved to be total fabrications. God gave us the Bible for the purpose of freeing us from these systems. The true Bible is the Emancipation Proclamation given to Christians by God himself for the purpose of us knowing the Lord and Jesus Christ and the redemption of

his Elect. Theological systems keep Christians in bondage to specific beliefs and teachings and does not allow a Christian to go beyond its borders. This means the Christians will only believe what they are told to believe and that is nothing but being in a theological prison. Just like a prison, an inmate cannot go beyond the walls to freedom. If a church adopts a specific theological or eschatological (end time teaching) stance, then those in the church must continually adhere to those teachings or else they will be escorted out the door.

When I was a new Christian I bought prophecy books and within those books was written something called “The Rapture of the Church” and in all those books was a common teaching that the rapture would take place before the final tribulation period would begin. For some years I believed that and it was called “The Pre-tribulation Rapture.” It is still widely taught today in the majority of churches and if a person questions it, they are basically criticized for rejecting biblical truth. I know this personally, because I have been accused of that very thing many times by inmates of the system of Dispensationalism. Now I want to show you a liberating truth in Scripture. Always keep in mind, if you claim and proclaim a false teaching, then you are helping to deceive other Christians. *And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)* Remember, Jesus spoke these words to the Pharisees who thought they were God’s special people but Jesus goes on in verse 44 stating they were and are of their father the devil. Jesus spoke those words to the religious crowd because religion, rather than the Hebrew Scriptures, was what they obeyed and studied. How do I know this? Remember Jonah above. If they knew their Scriptures, they would have known that there was a prophet from Galilee.

The same situation exists within Christianity today. The majority of Christians have placed their faith in theological systems which cover the truth rather than proclaim it. At this point I want us to look at the Rapture which is proclaimed to be before the final tribulation. Above I quoted 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17 and Revelation 4:1 as being linked together which Dispensationalists use as their proof texts of a pre-tribulation rapture. Now let us compare what they teach to what the Bible actually teaches:

And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. (John 6:39)

And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:40)

No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:44)

Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:54)

<sup>23</sup> Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. <sup>24</sup> Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. (John 11:23-24)

He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. (John 12:48)

Here we have six verses straight out of the Bible which state plainly that the rapture of the church is on the last day. As plain as these Scriptures are concerning the rapture, yet you have the Pre-tribulation and the Mid-tribulation crowd teaching a different timing of the rapture. The Mid-tribulation crowd claims the rapture is in the middle of the tribulation period. Do you see how both of these theological systems are teaching an unconcealed lie? Yet, they will not recant that teaching. Why? Because they are slaves to a theological system. If those six verses are not enough, then here is another proof of a last day rapture and resurrection.

And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame *and* everlasting contempt. (Daniel 12:2)

<sup>28</sup> Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup> And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (John 5:28-29)

Daniel 12:2 speaks about a day when the dead will be raised and both groups are included in that resurrection which are the saved and the unsaved. The book of Daniel was written about 600 B.C. Then we read in John 5:28-29 a more detailed account of what we found written in Daniel. John states the same thing that there is going to be one general resurrection of both the saved and the unsaved on the last day as we read in John 11:24 & 12:48 where both believers and unbelievers are in view. Let's look at Daniel 12:4:

But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, *even* to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. (Daniel 12:4)

Daniel 12:4 tells us that Daniel was to shut up the words and seal the book until the time of the end. When did the end commence? The end commenced at the time of the cross.

Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; (Hebrews 1:2)

So we see that the last days commenced at the cross and Daniel's book was now unsealed as we read in John 5:28-29 which was written after the last days commenced and was penned about 75-90 A.D., 675-90 years after the book of Daniel was written. Then John once again harmonizes his teachings with that of Hebrews 1:2.

Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. (1 John 2:18)

The word "time" in this verse is the Greek word "hōra" which means "hour." Here John calls the entire New Testament period, "the last hour." Let us look at one more false teaching found in Dispensationalism. They teach that there are going to be two resurrections. One will be of the believer before the final tribulation period and one at the end of the millennium when all the unbelievers will be raised to be taken to

judgment. However, we already saw that both the believers and unbelievers will be raised on the last day but here is the icing on the cake.

<sup>32</sup> And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats: <sup>33</sup> And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. (Matthew 25:32-33)

If there are two resurrections that are separated by 1,000 years and each one is a dedicated resurrection, that is one for the believers and one for the unbelievers, then why are both the believers and unbelievers standing together simultaneously before the throne of Christ? Then we see that at that time Christ will be separating the sheep (saved) from the goats (unsaved). So how could there be two separate, dedicated resurrections if all the people of the world are standing before the throne of Christ? Do you see how Daniel 12:2, John 5:28-29, and Matthew 25:32-33 harmonizes perfectly without even attempting to over-explain or force fit any explanation. Include in that the six verses of John we saw and they all harmonize perfectly bringing us to truth. Yet even though these are in the Bible, many Christians and churches will choose to continue to follow the false theological systems when the truth is right in their hands marked Holy Bible.

### **Unity in Christianity**

<sup>13</sup> Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: <sup>14</sup> That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; (Ephesians 4:13-14)

The reality is that there will never be true unity in Christianity as long as it is compartmentalized into theological systems. True unity can only be achieved when theological systems are discarded and all Christians unify under the teachings of Scripture. God gave the Bible to believers for them to live by and to guide them and to get to know the Lord Jesus Christ, God the Father, and the Holy Spirit better. Unity can never happen as long as different theologies are taught by different churches. Christians must adhere to the Scriptures whether they like what is written or not. If Christians continue to follow biased theologians and churches, unity on earth will never materialize. The Bible unifies Christianity but theological systems separate it into parts which can never be joined together because of the disparity of the individual systems. The Bible speaks of Christianity as a body. *That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. (1 Corinthians 12:25)* The word “schism” carries with it the meaning of “division, rent, or split.” A body can only survive if it is solidly connected together. Let’s be real, the body of Christ is divided by theological systems creating body parts all over the place. There is no unity. It is true we are together because Christ has saved us and we are looking forward to Heaven but once you get beyond this, the body lies in fragments. It has even gotten to the point that we no longer call ourselves Christians anymore, we refer to ourselves as Baptists, Methodists, Presbyterians, Reformed, etc. We have transferred identity from Christ to the church we attend. If we are going to attain true unity of the faith then theological systems must be rejected and the Bible must take its rightful place as our book of understanding. Whenever we choose to (and it is a choice) follow a

theological system, we have chosen to follow the interpretations of man and not the teachings of God and then we wonder why Christians are so weak, confused and fearful. Instead of the power which stands behind the Bible, we have the weakness of man as our strength. Then you wonder why you cannot defeat sin in your life! We cannot repeat the error of ancient Israel by placing the interpretations of men in a higher place than God's Holy Word.

### **Summary**

The reason I penned this study was to openly show how opposed to Scripture theological systems are, even those that are taught in churches for many years. If one is going to come to truth then it comes only through the Bible. God gave us the Bible as a guidebook for our living and learning but many Christians and churches have replaced the Bible with the teachings of man. Whenever there is some type of appealing media minister or pastor, people seem to gravitate to them as if their charm is the standard for truth. The reality is that the more appealing and famous they are, the more compromised they are. The Christian's truth comes from the Bible not the teachings and interpretations of men which saturate the church. The Bible is judged by theology and prophecy books instead of the Bible judging them. If Christians are going to learn and live in truth, then they must escape the prison of theological systems and learn from the Bible alone. Let me warn you, Christians themselves will excoriate you for not following the benighted tenets of their system. Here is the reality, the Lord Jesus Christ saved you, not your church or your theological system and you owe allegiance to him and not the church or even other Christians. Remember it was the theological system of Judaism that hated and crucified Christ and continues that hatred today. So you must make a choice, either you live under a theological system or you seek emancipation through the Scriptures. Remember John 8:32 again:

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)

The word "free" in John 8:32 also carries with it the meaning of "liberate." To be a truly liberated Christian, the Bible must be your only source of truth whether others accept you or not. Now you know the truth between theological slavery and theological freedom!

## THE SUPREMACY AND SUFFICIENCY OF SCRIPTURE

by **Dr. Ken Matto**

*(Psa 119:105 KJV) Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.*

With the destruction of the twin towers of the World Trade Center on September 11, 2001, Islam has been given almost consistent front page exposure as being a peaceful religion. This religion is even being touted by those in high offices in our land. Islam is just another false religion which is damning the souls of millions to Hell. Their book, the Qur'an, is on the par with such books as Moon's "Divine Principle," Joseph Smith's "Book of Mormon," The New Age Urantia Book, Ellen White's "The Great Controversy," "The Lost Books of the Bible," "the Apocrypha," and other false books which fuel false religion. These books were all written by humans and under no divine inspiration or authority from God. They are all false writings used of Satan to draw people away from the Bible and its timeless truths.

We live in a time which paralleled the era before the Reformation. Before the time of the Reformation, the truths of the Bible were hid from the people by the Roman Catholic Institution. The people were being fed mysticism, writings by the "saints," approved dogma, contemporary opinion, works for salvation, money for salvation, etc. The people were fed all these things to keep them away from Biblical truth. The Bible scares any false religion. It was toward the end of the Renaissance period, which officially ended in 1527, that there was a cry in Europe for a return to the original languages of the Bible. God was ready to begin the task of worldwide evangelism by opening up the Scriptures to the poor people.

*(Luke 21:20-21 KJV) And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. {21} Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto.*

In the above verses, we see that God commands the true believers to flee to the mountains when we see Jerusalem compassed with armies. Jerusalem was one of the most bloodied cities in the world and has been the center of much military action throughout history. Therefore, these verses are speaking to us on a spiritual level about a spiritual event. Before the Reformation, there were some true churches which bought the truth through the Middle Ages. They were the Waldensians, Albigenses, and the Lollards. These people groups were severely persecuted by the Roman Institution, yet in the face of overwhelming numbers, they held to the truth of the Scriptures. It was toward the end of the 15th century, that a return to original languages of the Scriptures was needed. They saw that the Roman Institution was evil and was suppressing the truth. These true believers, which the Bible calls the New Jerusalem, were surrounded by spiritual armies. They now were fleeing to the mountains, namely the true Word of God. The mountains in Scripture are symbolic for the Kingdom of God.

*(Psa 87:1 KJV) His foundation is in the holy mountains.*

*(Isa 2:2 KJV) And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it.*

*(Psa 121:1 KJV) A Song of degrees. I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills, from whence cometh my help.*

*(Isa 49:13 KJV) Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the LORD hath comforted his people, and will have mercy upon his afflicted.*

*(Isa 55:12 KJV) For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands.*

The fleeing to the mountains has happened twice in history. The first time was before the Reformation, when people started reading the Bible without commentary and allowing the Holy Spirit to do the interpretation. The second time, is in our time, when many churches have replaced true Bible teaching with teachings foreign to the Bible, some of which I will discuss further in the article. Christians who are students of the Scriptures can see a great migration from the truths of Scripture, and now many are fleeing to the mountain of the Word of God. This return to the Word of God will also yield many souls in these closing days since it is the Word of God which brings people into the Kingdom, and not dissemination of philosophies.

The Reformation, simply defined, was a watershed event which brought the religious world out of the darkness of tradition and superstition, and into the light of the True Word of God.

At the beginning of the 16th Century, the power of the Papacy declined from the immense power it enjoyed under such Popes as Gregory VII in the late 11th century and Innocent III (1198-1216). These two Popes systematized the power, dominion, and authority of the RC church. The greatest power of Rome was felt between Leo IX (1049) and Boniface VIII in (1303).

Then came a series of scandals and power-grabbing. Between 1378 and 1417 there were three Popes vying for the throne, and it was called the Great Schism. During this time, the seat of the Pope was temporarily moved to Paris, France. This began the decline of Papal authority. Many monarchs were no longer bowing the knee to Rome. In 1229, the Council of Valencia placed the Bible on the forbidden list.

The Renaissance came in the 15th century, and with it was an outcry of "Ad Fontes," which means "to the primary sources." This was an increasing desire in the seminaries in Europe for a return to the original languages of Scripture.

This desire for a return to the original languages dealt the beginning of the death blow to the papal claims to power. It was not until October 31, 1517 when Martin Luther nailed his 95 theses to the door at Wittenburg.

In Luther's works, Vol. 48, Page 68, states, "his opposition was directed towards what he termed impious, false, and heretical teachings which were associated with the granting of indulgences." However it involved much more for Luther as the following two theses states:

- 32 - Those who believe that they can be certain of their salvation because they have indulgence letters, will be eternally damned, together with their teachers.
- 62 - The true treasure of the church is the most holy gospel of the glory and grace of God.

By the end of 1519, Luther had developed such an understanding of what the church was that excommunication was no longer to be feared. His excommunication became official on January 3, 1521.

By this time he came to understand the church to be "inner, spiritual, and invisible fellowship of the heart." The Bible calls us "the Israel of God," and the "New Jerusalem." Luther desired to help those he pastored whom he knew were in spiritual darkness. All this happened because one man had a hunger to know God's Word.

Is there a pre-Reformation parallel today?

Before the Reformation, the true Gospel was hidden by tradition and deceit. What is it hidden with today?

### **Psychology - Christian Psychologists Are Deceivers**

With Christian Psychology, the Christian's gift of grace is turned into works by means of trying "to find themselves" through worldly manipulations and behavioral patterns, which are melded with the Bible to give them a Christian flavor, but the problem is that the psychology comes through and not the Grace of God. Christian psychology, like secular psychology, focuses on the person and not on God. It is man-centered, no matter what you call it.

### **Politics**

There are some churches that are so heavily involved with politics that they probably have no understanding of what the grace of God is. They probably teach that salvation comes through joining the Republican party. Radio and TV preachers love to mix politics and the gospel. Little do they know, this is what the Roman Institution did and still does today. The Christian's responsibility is to send forth the true Gospel. God heads up the Sovereignty Party!

### **Dead Protestant Traditions**

Catechism, First Communion, Baptism, Lord's Supper, along with dead orthodoxy. Many churches proclaim these things as steps to salvation. When I include the Lord's Supper, it is not to denigrate the memorial the Lord commanded the church to celebrate until the last day, but that many churches treat it as a means of grace or a step in the process of salvation. In a church I attended, they taught that the congregation's sins were removed when the Minister raised his hands and pronounced the absolution of their sins, and then

proceeded to give out the Lord's Supper. The true Gospel and its true teachings have been shrouded by these traditions.

The three items are sufficient to give an idea of how the true Gospel has been obscured in the church. Anytime salvation is portrayed as having to do something yourself, they are giving a false view of salvation. God is the one who qualifies a person to hear the true Gospel. *(Luke 24:44-45 KJV) And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. {45} Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,*

**Following "Sola Scriptura" will help prevent the following disasters:**

**ERROR 1. False Understanding of Salvation**

Only God can grant a person salvation. There can be no work on the part of anyone, since it is all of grace. The one receiving salvation is totally passive, or in other words, does absolutely nothing except receives it. Even though many churches like to hype their rituals as steps to salvation, the truth is that nothing the church does physically can save a person. The only thing a church can do to aid in the salvation of a person is to preach the true Gospel, since faith comes by hearing the Word of God. If a person is one of God's elect, and if that is the moment God is calling them, then they will become saved.

Titus 3:5 states, *"Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;"* The word "washing" is the Greek Word "λουτρον" (loutron), which carries with it the meaning of "washing totally of our sins by the blood of Christ." The same word is found in Revelation 1:5. *(Rev 1:5 KJV) "And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,"* Looking at Titus 3:5, we read about renewal. The renewal of the believer is only associated with salvation. No one can be renewed without salvation.

**ERROR 2. Belief in Every Doctrine**

*(1 John 4:1 KJV) Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.*

In the above verse, the word "try" carries with it the meaning of prove. Why do we prove? The answer to that is found in Ephesians 4:14:

*(Eph 4:14 KJV) That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*

It is imperative that a child of God checks everything out by Scripture so they will not be taken off course in their Christian walk. The word "sleight" in this verse carries with it the meaning of "trickery." Many false teachers are tricky in the use of the Bible and can lead many astray. "Whereby they lie in wait to deceive" may also be translated "with a view to the systematizing (□□□□□□□□) of error." The Bible helps us identify any

system of error or false teachings. How does one utilize the Scriptures in identifying a false teaching? The way to do it is, to check out the Scriptures without any commentary from the person giving the teaching. This way there is no subliminal persuasion. Ask the question, what did these verses mean to me before I heard the teaching? If a person is a false teacher, then those verses will probably remain the same in meaning as they did before you heard the false teachings. Unfortunately, many Christians are following teachers instead of Christ and they are being drawn away in their errors.

### **ERROR 3. Judgment Will Not Happen**

*(2 Pet 3:4 KJV) And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.*

The third disaster which could happen is the desired belief that judgment will not take place, or that if you are immersed in your church's teachings or their rituals, then you are ready to face Christ. When cults write books, which become their "spiritual source or guide," they normally do not include the subject of judgment on sin. They speak of Nirvana and how one could attain the spiritual utopia which all humans seek. If you ever look at materials written by the Jehovah's Witnesses and the Hare Krishna, you will see in their publications, many pretty pictures of the perfect earth, and perfect harmony with many bucolic scenes. These scenes play on the mind as one would desire to be out in the country on a warm day with blue sky and sun. However desirable those things are, they are not reality because those who follow false teachings will wind up at the White Throne Judgment, as recorded in Revelation 20.

There were two Judgment Days: The first was when the Lord Jesus Christ went to the Cross to die for His elect. This was where Jesus became the substitutionary sacrifice for the Christian. It was because of His sacrifice that the true Christian is justified and freed from the judicial penalty of the law. The second day of judgment is on the last day when all the dead will be raised and the righteous go into eternal life, and the unbeliever will stand for judgment of their sins because they had no Savior. *(Heb 9:27 KJV) And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:*

The verses below will never be found in the cult books, because they could never draw any people if they spoke of judgment instead of Elysian fields of eternal bliss. As a matter of fact, because of the sinful and prideful nature of man, Christianity would have no adherents either, if it wasn't for the fact that God draws us and places us into His Kingdom. It is only after we become Christians that we become biblically cognizant to the reality that we have been freed from the penalty of eternal death, and then we are glad we are Christians. I am thankful that God is not a gentlemen and does go where He is not wanted, or else none of us would be saved.

*(John 5:28-29 KJV) Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, {29} And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.*

At this point, I want to give ten reasons from the Scriptures why the Scriptures are sufficient and supreme over the cult books. Of course, the primary reason is that God,

through holy men of old, penned the Scriptures. The cult books are all written out of the imagination of men and normally under satanic influence. Not one of them draw their adherents to Christ but always away. Let us look at just ten reasons why the Scriptures are supreme. There are many more, but these will whet your appetite. Please note, when I speak of the Bible in this context, I am speaking of the King James Bible, whose lineage can be traced back to the originals in an unadulterated manner. The prostituted new versions just engender confusion and are from corrupted manuscripts.

### **Psalm 119:9 - Cleanses Our Walk**

*(Psa 119:9 KJV) Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to thy word.*

One thing the Bible definitely does is to give us strict instruction on how to have a clean life. Once a person becomes saved, the Bible tells us how to sanctify our lives. It teaches us what sin is. When we were unbelievers, sin was thought of as murder or robbery, but now we realize that the slightest infraction of God's holy law is sin and enough to send a person to Hell. The Bible helps us clean up the small areas in our life, which eventually mushroom into the larger areas. When this happens, we begin to live that sanctified life. An interesting facet of the Bible is the fact that God opens up the lives of His people. For example, David was beloved of God, yet we are told of his sinful ways with Bathsheba. If the Bible was written only by men, without divine inspiration, then only good things would be written about people and their dark sides left to speculation. God allows us to see the weaknesses and failures of some of His greatest prophets, like Jonah. God even shows us in Acts 21 where the Apostle Paul compromised his testimony in being ceremonially cleansed.

### **Psalm 119:13 - Gives Us the Message To Proclaim**

*(Psa 119:13 KJV) With my lips have I declared all the judgments of thy mouth.*

The Bible also gives us the message which we are commissioned to proclaim. The cult books, since they are all written by men, are subject to change at the whim of the author. When the State of Utah declared Polygamy illegal, I believe the year was 1898, all of a sudden the leaders of the Mormon church had simultaneous revelation, that polygamy was wrong. The message of the Bible has not changed in 2000 years. Each generation proclaims the message to its own generation and then trains the next generation to minister to theirs. This verse gives us a little insight into the best method of Gospel proclamation, and that is word of mouth. With 60% of the world having never used a telephone, which method does God still use as His most effective way of communicating the message? The spoken word!

### **Psalm 119:19 - Guides Our Walk**

*(Psa 119:19 KJV) I am a stranger in the earth: hide not thy commandments from me.*

As Christians, we are strangers and pilgrims on the earth. There are so many snares which can take hold of us if we are not armed. The Bible has been written in a way that helps us identify any snares which could stultify our Christian walk. This is why God has written the Bible with so many narratives of real people who had real struggles in their walk. This makes comparison of our lives to theirs much easier. For example, Peter

obviously had a struggle with his mouth, since we read many times, "Peter answered and said," when no one asked him anything. I identify with Peter many times in my life, as I have opened mouth and inserted foot. God has given His children the Bible as a guidebook through this wilderness.

### **Psalm 119:23 - Prepares Us for Opposition**

*(Psa 119:23 KJV) Princes also did sit and speak against me: but thy servant did meditate in thy statutes.*

One of the principle teachings found throughout Scripture is the guarantee that, if you are a true believer and you take up the mantle of God's truth, you will face persecution. The Bible teaches us to arm ourselves with this knowledge (1 Peter 4), so we will not be surprised when, not if, it comes. This verse teaches us that the opposition to Christianity is not just found on the lower levels of social strata, but at the highest levels of leadership in both government and industry. On the job, it is permissible to speak about saving the whales, or the teachings of Buddha, but speak of Jesus Christ and you are told to shut up, and even fired. Yet, even under these types of threatening conditions, we are still commanded to go forth. This is because God is in control and will care for us. God is not threatened nor terrified by what the unbeliever does. His children are ultimately victorious, even though for the time being, things look bleak.

### **Psalm 119:26 - Teaches Us Distinction Between Our Ways and God's Ways**

*(Psa 119:26 KJV) I have declared my ways, and thou heardest me: teach me thy statutes.*

If you ever read any cult materials, you will quickly see that they all fall in line with worldly ways. God teaches us the difference between the holy and the profane (Ezek. 44:23). What the world may call good, God may call evil. This is why we are to study the Scriptures, so we may glean from the mind of God. God's ways are definitely above the ways of the world and there is a definite separation between the thought patterns of God and those of the world. The only way we will know the difference is to be immersed in Scripture. Since we live in the world, it is easy to adopt a way of thinking which is opposite of Scripture. Justification is not only a biblical doctrine, but it is also a worldly doctrine. The world can justify any of its actions and if we are not biblically astute enough to know the difference, then we too may become caught up in the ways of the world again.

### **Psalm 119:28 - Gives Us Daily Strength**

*(Psa 119:28 KJV) My soul melteth for heaviness: strengthen thou me according unto thy word.*

None of us knows what a day may hold. When I wrote this article, (12/2001) seven days prior, my company had started advertising for my job behind my back. I went into work that morning, and by afternoon, I was faced with the reality that I had to find employment. Whenever, we read the Scriptures, they give us comfort, because we realize that God cares for us and will strengthen us in times of affliction. We read the Scriptures and see what the Bible characters went through and how God cared for them during their lowest times. I am convinced that whatever we read from the Scriptures in the morning, will be needed for that day. *(Deu 33:25 KJV) Thy shoes shall be iron and brass; and as*

*thy days, so shall thy strength be.* This verse also reveals that God will strengthen us but it is according to His word. If we do not read and study the Bible, we may not identify areas of strength that God is giving us. That strength may be in humility, defense, or confrontation, and it is imperative we know the difference, and how to engage each one properly.

### **Psalm 119:45 - Has A Liberating Effect On the Believer**

*(Psa 119:45 KJV) And I will walk at liberty: for I seek thy precepts.*

When a person becomes a true believer, there is no longer any cloud of judgment or eternal damnation over them. The believer no longer looks at the Scriptures as a law book to keep for salvation. The believers now see the Bible as God's personal word to them. They are pardoned from their sins for all eternity and now can read and study the Scriptures through the eyes of Grace rather than Law. This, of course, does not mean the believer is free to sin. Instead, they are free to serve God without the gnawing hindrance of having to do a certain amount of works or to keep ceremonial laws for salvation. When sin's shackles are removed, the believer is now free in the Lord. Satan nor any human being can ever hold the past sins of the believer against them, for God has taken them away eternally. *(Rom 8:33 KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.* Those who are enslaved to cult books will find themselves immersed in a never-ending slew of works, to gain Nirvana or the favor of the rulers of their cult. The problem is that the end is eternal damnation.

### **Psalm 119:49 - Gives Us Hope**

*(Psa 119:49 KJV) Remember the word unto thy servant, upon which thou hast caused me to hope.*

If there is one thing this world lacks, it is hope. What does the world hope in? Government? Financial experts? Industry? Medical profession? The true believer looks in the Scriptures and finds hope on every page. Hope in God's compassion! Hope in God's salvation! Hope in the midst of trials! Hope in Christ's intercessory ministry! Hope in the eternal sacrifice of the Lord Jesus! Hope in the truth of Scripture! Hope for a dying world! Hope for the poorest Christian! There are so many things in Scripture which give hope to all phases of the Christian's life. The cult books give no hope just more burden of works and threats of judgment if those works are not done.

*(Job 27:8 KJV) For what is the hope of the hypocrite, though he hath gained, when God taketh away his soul?*

*(Psa 31:24 KJV) Be of good courage, and he shall strengthen your heart, all ye that hope in the LORD.*

What a difference in the terminal essence of these two verses.

### **Psalm 119:50 - Comforts Us**

*(Psa 119:50 KJV) This is my comfort in my affliction: for thy word hath quickened me.*

Sometimes when we go through the valley of affliction, we feel dead to the things of God. When we go to the Scriptures, we will find that they tend to make us alive, and wake us up to the truth that God is in control of whatever circumstance we are facing. This is where the comfort factor of Scripture comes in. Whenever we read through the Word and see what others faced, we can quickly see how God aided them. There is no difference in how God views those believers in the Bible versus those Christians today. God loves all of them equally, and He comes to our aid in the same way. *(2 Cor 1:3-5 KJV) Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; {4} Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God. {5} For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.*

### **Isaiah 40:3-4 - Stabilizes the Believer's Life**

*(Isa 40:3-4 KJV) The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. {4} Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain:*

Unlike the man-centered cult books, you will find the Bible brings stability to the Christian walk. If you look at these verses, you will see, in metaphoric language, that God promises to stabilize the Christian walk. He says the mountains will be made low and the valleys will be exalted. Picture what you have if a mountain is made low and the valley is raised. Instead of having a roller coaster existence, the road will be made flat and straight for the Christian. This does not mean there will be no tribulation in the life of the Christian, it means simply, that through rough times, God can stabilize the Christian's walk. This would control disbelief, anxiety, thoughts of hopelessness, and other destructive elements. The Christian walk is a continuum because salvation is a continuum. As a child of God, whenever we find something in Scripture which pertains to our situation, we may bring it before the throne of Grace. Our Christian walk may seem marred, but because of the character of God and His Word, we can be stable.

### **Final Thoughts**

We have looked at some reasons that the Bible is supreme over cult books. Only the Word of God can guide the believer into a victorious Christian life, even if it looks like we are falling apart. God promises to keep us strong till He calls us home. *(1 Pet 1:5 KJV) Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*

### **Only the Word of God can give:**

Stability  
Distinction  
Hope  
Strength  
Cleansing  
Liberation  
Proclamation  
Comfort

Guidance  
Preparation

What in this world can offer us these things?

After knowing this, it can no longer surprise us how many were willing to give their life for the message of God's Word!

## The Full Christian Life

by Dr. Ken Matto

John 1:16 (KJV) And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.

“Christians are not a special group of people who can be proud; Christians are those who are redeemed-that is all” - Francis Schaeffer (Schaeffer on the Christian Life by William Edgar)

A friend of mine posted this quote on Facebook and it did not seem right when I read it. The first half of the statement is totally true and that Christians should never walk around with a prideful attitude. When I read the second part, there was a major vacuum in Francis Schaeffer’s understanding of Christianity. If he were alive on earth, he might look at that statement again and then realize how erroneous that was. What I am challenging is the truncated view of Christians that Schaeffer has. He says dogmatically "that is all" and that is not all. The Charismatics accuse us of not having the full gospel and in a way they are right. No, I am not talking about speaking in gibberish tongues or fake healing or the false prosperity gospel. I am speaking of the fullness of what Christ did for us at Calvary. How many Christians know what Calvary did for them beyond initial redemption? Redemption is the portal to a great life which goes way beyond just being saved. If more pastors would teach the full Christian life, then Christians would think more like Saints than "sinners." In the Scriptures, God never refers to His children as sinners but children or saints. Christ did not go to the cross to make us sinners or keep us in that pre-salvific state.

We cannot suppress biblical truth because of what someone else might think. It is our responsibility to know what God has fully said in His Word. God didn't include the following descriptions in Scripture to give us pride but to give us encouragement and to teach us how extensive salvation in Christ really is. It goes way beyond “fire insurance.” You will see this because those descriptions of the believer are written across the pages of Scripture, in many different books. What I am going to share is not my opinion but what is written in Scripture. I am going to print out the entire Scripture verse so no one can come back to me and claim I am making this up. When we realize what Christ did for us at Calvary, we will have a fresh new perspective on our salvation. When was the last time your pastor did an extended study of what happened at Calvary? Can't remember? In my 35 years of salvation, I only heard one pastor ever open up this subject and that was Charles Stanley.

God has a special relationship with His children and He makes no bones about what He has done for us. The Scriptures give us a beautiful description of this. I want to show the beautiful relationship which exists between God and His children. There are many Christians who walk under a cloud of condemnation simply because many pastors do not understand our relationship to God "our" Father and pass that ignorance on to the sheep. My goal is to acclimate Christians to the Scriptures. Christians must rediscover the Bible without the folly of theology books telling us what we shall believe. This monograph is written to aid Christians in their understanding about their relationship to God. I would like to look at one of the most significant chapters in Scripture dealing with "How God views His Children." We will look at Ephesians chapter one and when we have

completed this chapter, you may be surprised how God views you if you are a true child of God.

Many Christians are ignorant of how God views them. This is not a slanderous statement but a stark reality owing to the high rate of biblical illiteracy in the church and individual Christians. In today's church, psychological teachings and sensationalism are usurping the teaching of pure Scripture. The next time you hear a sermon, listen carefully and you will hear much psychological dogma mixed with Scripture and presented to you as absolute truth and authority. The sad result is that many Christians do not know how wonderfully they stand with God because of their relationship to Christ. I feel sorry for those Christians who are told every Sunday that they are nothing but dirty rotten sinners that should have gone to hell. This kind of teaching from the pulpit on a continual basis tends to tear believers down instead of building them up.

Let us now look at the extensive blessing of Salvation.

### **Saints, Holy and Reliable**

Ephesians 1:1 (KJV) Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

The word "saints" may be translated "dedicated, set apart, sacred or holy." God views each Christian as one who is sacred and holy. The word "faithful" may also be translated "a believer, a faithful one, trustworthy, or one on whom we may rely." Here God views His children as reliable

### **We are Reunited with God**

Ephesians 1:2 (KJV) Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Greek word "eirene" is translated "peace" throughout the New Testament except in three places. The first place is Acts 7:26 where it is rendered "one again" which carries the meaning of reunification of two which were separated. The second place is Acts 9:31 where it is rendered "rest" which carries the idea of a state of peace, tranquility with the inducement of a state of security. The third place is Acts 24:2 where it is rendered "quietness" which also carries with it the idea of a place of security and repose. The regular translation of "eirene" into peace carries with it the idea of inner peace resulting from forgiveness. We see in this one word how God views the believer as being reunited with Him.

### **Good Spoken of by God**

Ephesians 1:3 (KJV) Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

Every spiritual need the believer has on earth was already supplied. The word "blessings" is the Greek word "eulogia" which means "good speaking praise." God has given His praises to those in Christ Jesus. We literally have a divine commendation as we read in *Romans 2:29*, "*But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.*" This

verse speaks of the believer as being praised by God because of our relationship to His Son. This is not to imply that God worships man because that would be outright blasphemy. God was well-pleased with Christ and because of Christ, He is well-pleased with the Christian.

### **Chosen - Holy and Without Blemish of Sin**

Ephesians 1:4 (KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

The word "chosen" comes from the Greek word "eklegomai" which means "select, choose, elect." Here we read that God has literally hand-picked every Christian. (*John 6:37 KJV*) "All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out." Man did not choose God but God chose man. (*John 1:12-13 KJV*) "But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: {13} Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God." This may be borne out with many other Scriptures. Verse 13 is normally omitted in free will churches.

Refer to the section on "saint" because the same root word in the Greek is used for both "saint" and "holy." If God says we are holy, how can we just be sinners? Is there such a thing as a holy sinner? The words "without blame" may be translated "without blemish of sin, disgrace, or unblameable." This phrase shows how unscriptural the phrase "sinner saved by grace" is when describing the Christian, because God is stating He views us as having no blemish of sin.

### **Predestinated and Adopted**

Ephesians 1:5 (KJV) Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

The word predestinated may also be translated "predetermined, foreordain, or decree beforehand". This one word reveals to us that we were already in God's plan eons ago. God chose to save you, and He predetermined your life as He did for Jeremiah, Paul, and John the Baptist:

The word "adoption" carries with it the meaning of "to place as a son." We are taken from the kingdom of Satan and placed into the Kingdom of God with all the rights as of a natural born child in a human family.

### **Accepted in Christ**

Ephesians 1:6 (KJV) To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

The "beloved" in view is the Lord Jesus Christ. The word we are focusing on is "accepted," which may also be translated "to make lovely, endue with special honor, or to bestow grace upon." No matter how we feel, we are accepted by Christ because of His sacrifice. Isn't it marvelous how God made us accepted and never to be rejected? When the world rejects us for any reason, we know that we may come to Christ who will never reject us. (Heb 13:5) Since we are accepted we may come with confidence to the throne of grace (Heb. 4:16) and speak whatever is on our heart. The unsaved cannot do this because they are not accepted. Let us remember that it is with God we are going to spend

eternity, so if the world rejects us, so what, because this world is fleeting away but the believers life is ready to flourish. So have courage because you are accepted! This one verse also puts to death the idea that one can "accept Christ" as their Savior. It is God who made us accepted in the beloved. We could never make ourselves accepted.

### **Redeemed and Forgiven**

Ephesians 1:7 (KJV) In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

This is another glorious word in this spiritual catalog. Redemption may also be translated "ransom in full, a buying back, deliverance from guilt and punishment from sin." Never will a believer have to stand in judgment for their sin because the work of Christ was complete on our behalf. We were totally redeemed from all sin and guilt. This applies to past, present, and future because when Christ went to the cross all your sins were in the future. Our redemption was secured by God Himself plus He declares us sinless in our souls. It would do good to read Romans 8:33 again. So let the accusers accuse, the mockers mock, the gossipers gossip, because God knows who His children are and once He has declared them redeemed, it is forever.

The word "forgiveness" may also be translated "freedom, pardon, or release from sin." This word states the Christian has absolute pardon from all their sin. Since we have been totally forgiven, we are eternally secure because God sees us as sinless in our soul essence. Being in Christ guarantees our place in Heaven. We are totally free from all spiritual penalties owing to sin. However, there may be physical penalties for sin, such as AIDS for sexual sins or liver disease from drinking et al. You can take comfort that even though our flesh is corrupting, the inner man is being renewed daily. *2 Corinthians 4:16 (KJV) For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.*

### **Inheritors of Heaven**

Ephesians 1:11 (KJV) In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

The word "inheritance" may also be translated "to allot, to obtain, possess." The Christian is guaranteed to inherit heaven and all the spiritual blessings as we previously discovered. If our hope was only in this world, I would definitely be depressed but because God is viewing us as His children, He has given us the greatest inheritance that we could ever ask for or dream of, HIMSELF! Genesis 15:1 states: *(Gen 15:1 KJV) After these things the word of the LORD came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward.*

As we have read in just the first chapter of Ephesians, twelve descriptions of the true believer. Now I did not take any unclear word and attach a personal meaning but took everything directly from the Scriptures. So far Ephesians 1 has shown Francis Schaeffer to be in error because Ephesians 1 refutes "that is all." Now let us look at other descriptions that are written in various parts of the Scriptures.

### **The Lord's Portion and Inheritance**

(Deu 32:9 KJV) For the LORD'S portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.

The portion is a part of something which has been separated from the whole. The Lord's portion is the entire body of believers which were redeemed by the blood of Christ. Jacob is a synonym for the body of believers, even though Jacob was a real person. *Romans 11:26 (KJV) And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:* Romans 11:26 teaches us that the Lord Jesus Christ, who is the Deliverer, will bring in godliness to Jacob, that is, the body of believers by means of salvation. Jacob is also the lot of His inheritance. The word "lot" carries with it the meaning of "something which measures like a rope or cord." It means that there is a certain number whom God will save, not one more, not one less.

### **A Preserved People**

(Psa 37:28 KJV) For the LORD loveth judgment, and forsaketh not his saints; they are preserved for ever: but the seed of the wicked shall be cut off.

The word "preserved" carries with it the meaning of "protected or guarded." This means that Satan can never have anyone who is born again in Christ. *1 Peter 1:5 (KJV) Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.* The word "kept" carries with it the meaning of "guarded" thus confirming the word "preserved" in Psalm 37:28.

### **A Turtledove**

(Psa 74:19 KJV) O deliver not the soul of thy turtledove unto the multitude of the wicked: forget not the congregation of thy poor for ever.

A turtledove is a gentle bird which has only one mate in life to which it is very faithful. The Christian has only one mate for eternity and that is the Lord Jesus Christ. *2 Corinthians 11:2 (KJV) For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.*

### **The Assembly of the Saints**

(Psa 89:7 KJV) God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them that are about him.

The word "assembly" in the Hebrew has an interesting meaning. It is speaking about intimate counsel or even secret counsel. It speaks about the intimate prayer and communication that the believers have with God when they are assembled together. This is why church is only for believers and not unbelievers. The unbelievers divert that intimate prayer and mood by bringing in the things and philosophies of the world. Many churches gear their services toward unbelievers when weekly services are to encourage and strengthen the true believer, and that is why they are worldly and weak. This verse speaks about the intimacy of the Saints which are the believers and not the unbelievers because there is no fear of God in the unbeliever. *Romans 3:18 (KJV) There is no fear of God before their eyes.*

### **The Assembly of the Upright**

(Psa 111:1 KJV) Praise ye the LORD. I will praise the LORD with my whole heart, in the assembly of the upright, and in the congregation.

The word “assembly” is the same word and meaning as found in Psalm 89:7. The word “upright” carries with it the meaning of “straight or just.” The believer is viewed as being one who is straight before the Lord because of salvation. This is in contrast to those who are crooked. *Philippians 2:15 (KJV) That ye may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world;* Yet, those who are crooked and are the Elect of God will be made straight. *Isaiah 40:4 (KJV) Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain:*

### **The Congregation of the Saints**

(Psa 149:1 KJV) Praise ye the LORD. Sing unto the LORD a new song, and his praise in the congregation of saints.

The word “congregation” carries with it the meaning of “assembly, gathering, or multitude.” The Lord’s praises are specifically sung in the congregation of the Saints because the Saints are saved. The unbelievers cannot truly praise God because they are in the flesh and not Spirit. *John 4:24 (KJV) God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.* One must be born again and once that occurs, we then have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit which then qualifies us to worship God in the Spirit. Without salvation, one does not have the Holy Spirit. *Romans 8:9 (KJV) But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*

### **Witnesses**

(Isa 43:10 KJV) Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.

The body of believers are to be witnesses in the entire world. *Acts 1:8 (KJV) But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*

### **The Branch of God's Planting**

(Isa 60:21 KJV) Thy people also shall be all righteous: they shall inherit the land for ever, the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified.

The true believer by electing grace will be like a branch which is planted. *Psalm 92:13 (KJV) Those that be planted in the house of the LORD shall flourish in the courts of our God.* When something is planted, it is done by an outside source namely the gardener. The Lord himself will be the one who plants the believer in the house of the Lord. We will be planted together by means of the death and resurrection of Christ. *Romans 6:5 (KJV) For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also*

*in the likeness of his resurrection:* If you notice, Isaiah 60:21 plainly states that salvation of the believer is the work of the hands of the Lord and no one else. One cannot “accept Christ” just as a flower cannot plant itself.

### **Beulah and Hephzibah**

(Isa 62:4 KJV) Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.

The name “Hephzibah” carries with it the meaning of “my delight is in her.” The name “Beulah” carries with it the meaning of “married” because of the blessing of God. As we previously read that the body of believers is married to the Lord Jesus Christ. 2 *Corinthians 11:2 (KJV) For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.* As for “Hephzibah” the Lord delights in the body of Christ because we are redeemed by His Son. *Psalms 16:3 (KJV) But to the saints that are in the earth, and to the excellent, in whom is all my delight.*

### **Holy People, Redeemed of the Lord, Sought Out and A City not Forsaken**

(Isa 62:12 KJV) And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD: and thou shalt be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken.

This verse is replete with biblical descriptions of the true body of believers. First, they are called the holy people. This means that God has taken them from the pits of sin and by salvation has made them holy unto the Lord, set apart for Him. Secondly, they are called the “redeemed of the Lord” which means one who is bought back as one who is ransomed. It means the Lord is the one who redeemed His own children and no one else. Thirdly, they are the people who are sought out of the Lord for salvation. *Ezekiel 34:11 (KJV) For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out.* They are known in the New Testament as God’s Elect. *Romans 8:33 (KJV) Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.* Finally, they are called “a city not forsaken.” This is not speaking of an earthly city but a heavenly city. *Hebrews 13:14 (KJV) For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.* The city is one that God had prepared without human hands, the one which Abraham searched for. *Hebrews 11:10 (KJV) For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.*

### **A Pleasant Portion**

(Jer 12:10 KJV) Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness.

The words “my pleasant” carries with it the meaning of “something desirable, valuable or precious things.” God sees the body of believers as something precious in His sight because we were not redeemed with earthly things but with the blood of His Son. *1 Peter 1:18-19 (KJV) Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; {19} But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:* The portion is a part of something which has been separated from the whole as the

body of believers which has been separated from the rest of the human race which remains unsaved.

### **A Loved People**

(Jer 31:3 KJV) The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.

*John 13:1 (KJV) Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.* The love of God is a qualified love and in John 13:1 we read that the Lord Jesus Christ “having loved His own” which means His love was also qualified. The body of redeemed believers is loved not with just a temporary love in this lifetime but an eternal love which will go into eternity with us.

### **The Place of God's Throne**

(Ezek 43:7 KJV) And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places.

The body of believers is where God rules and reigns from is the place of His throne. *Psalm 22:22 (KJV) I will declare thy name unto my brethren: in the midst of the congregation will I praise thee.* From the congregation of the Saints go out the praises and worship of God and the Lamb. Hebrews 2:12 (KJV) Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee. God plainly states that He will dwell among the body of believers. *2 Corinthians 6:16 (KJV) And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

### **The City of Truth, the Mountain of the Lord, and the Holy Mountain**

(Zec 8:3 KJV) Thus saith the LORD; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the LORD of hosts the holy mountain.

*Revelation 21:10 (KJV) And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,* The first description in this verse is the body of believers will be known as the city of truth. It is further shown to us in Revelation 21:10 that it is speaking of the body of believers. A physical city is not in view but the city of New Jerusalem which is the redeemed body of believers. The next description is called the “mountain of the Lord.” *Psalm 48:1 (KJV) A Song and Psalm for the sons of Korah. Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in the city of our God, in the mountain of his holiness.* Here the body of believers is called the “mountain of his holiness.” The mountains in Scripture normally allude to the kingdom of God and where is the kingdom of God on earth? *Romans 14:17 (KJV) For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.* The Kingdom of God is found in the body of believers which represents the kingdom of God on this earth and evangelizes

to bring all the Elect. The next description which we are given is “the holy mountain.” Now we know that there is no holy mountains on this earth because the entire earth was cursed because of Adam’s sin. However, what God makes holy is the believer, taking them from a sinful state and washes them in Christ’s blood and then they are made holy. *Ephesians 2:21 (KJV) In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:* Ephesians 2:21 likens the body of believers to a holy temple in the Lord.

### **OT Summary**

We have looked at only a few verses in the Old Testament and found 21 descriptions of the body of believers. When we looked at those descriptions, we saw they were all New Testament in substance. Even back in the Old Testament God was already describing the eternal body of believers, the chosen people in Christ. *Ephesians 1:4 (KJV) According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:* Now these examples are not the only ones found in the Hebrew Scriptures but they are shining examples that the biblical description of the body of believers goes way beyond just “being redeemed, and that’s all.”

Let us return once again to the descriptions found in the New Testament. We have already seen what was written in Ephesians 1 and if we stopped there, we would have sufficient descriptions to reject the “that’s all” belief system.

### **A Pearl of Great Price**

(Mat 13:45-46 KJV) Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: {46} Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Here we have a description of the body of believers as “one pearl of great price.” If you notice very carefully that it is describing it as “one” pearl. Now I have heard in the past, especially from benighted dispensationalists that there are two chosen people in the Bible, the Jews and the Christians. Does verse 46 state “two pearls” or “one pearl?” It is one pearl which is speaking of the body of believers that contains both saved Jews and Gentiles. The word in the Greek behind “great price” carries with the meaning of something “very valuable or precious.” *Psalm 49:5-8 (KJV) Wherefore should I fear in the days of evil, when the iniquity of my heels shall compass me about? {6} They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches; {7} None of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him: {8} (For the redemption of their soul is precious, and it ceaseth for ever:)* As you can read in Psalm 49:8 that redemption of the soul is precious in God’s sight.

### **The Vineyard**

(Mat 21:41 KJV) They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

A vineyard is a place where plants grow. *Psalm 1:3 (KJV) And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.* Psalm 1:3 speaks about

bringing forth fruit as do plants which are planted in a vineyard. The body of Christ grows as on worldwide vineyard as each one that is planted, will grow and bear fruit. *Psalm 104:16 (KJV) The trees of the LORD are full of sap; the cedars of Lebanon, which he hath planted;* A tree that is full of sap is like a believer filled with the Holy Spirit, a spiritually healthy Christian.

### **The Fold and Flock of Christ**

(John 10:16 KJV) And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.

The word in the Greek used for “fold” in the first instance is a word which carries with it the meaning of “an open space, corral, palace or courtyard.” *John 18:15 (KJV) And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.* So Jesus is saying that all the other sheep will be gathered into palaces and he must bring them. This rules out free will as some teach that Jesus is waiting for them to “accept Him.” Jesus isn’t waiting for anyone and in their appointed time, He saves His Elect. The second usage of the word “fold” is a different word carrying with it the meaning of “flock” which has to do metaphorically with people, namely the adding of new believers daily. Then the verse ends with stating that there will be one shepherd and that will be the Lord Jesus Christ over the body of believers. This was prophesied as far back as Ezekiel. *Ezekiel 37:24 (KJV) And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.* When it speaks of David in this verse it is speaking about the Lord Jesus and not the physical David who will be raised on the last day with all the other believers, so he could not possibly be the one shepherd who is in view. *Hebrews 3:6 (KJV) But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.* Christ is the son who is over his own house which is the body of believers which he purchased with his own blood. *Acts 20:28 (KJV) Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.*

### **Little Children**

John 13:33 (KJV) Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you.

Here the believer is affectionately called “little children.” Just like parents care and nurture their very little children, this is what God has in mind with us. He cares for us and nurtures us after He saves us. In John’s first epistle, he uses this term nine times.

### **The Church of God**

(Acts 20:28 KJV) Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

The word “church” in the Greek is the word for “called out assembly.” It is also interesting that the word is in the feminine gender and that lines up beautifully because

the body of believers is referred to as the Bride of Christ. The words “of God” are in the genitive case which is the case of possession which teaches us that the body of believers belong to God.

### **We are God's Laborers and Tilled Field**

(1 Cor 3:9 KJV) For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.

The body of believers are laborers together with God, that is we go out and spread the Gospel but God gives the increase. *1 Corinthians 3:6 (KJV) I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.* There is no such thing as an unemployed Christian. All believers have responsibility in getting out the gospel to the world.

The word for “husbandry” in the Greek is an interesting word. It carries with it the meaning of a “tilled field.” It means a field which has been cleansed, especially of rocks, trees, or weeds and is prepared to receive seed. *Matthew 13:23 (KJV) But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.* The believer receives the seed of the Gospel to become saved but afterwards comes the bearing of fruit as the seeds grow into plants and trees which bear fruit, which is the fruit of the Gospel.

### **We are the Temple of the Living God**

(2 Cor 6:16 KJV) And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

Just as God inhabited the Old Testament Temple with His glory, He now inhabits the New Testament temple which is the body of believers. God indwells us through the person of the Holy Spirit. *1 Corinthians 3:16 (KJV) Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?* Whether in a corporate sense or as individuals, God indwells His children and that indwelling makes us the temple of the Holy Spirit. There is no physical temple in view to be built in Israel. In the Old Testament, where did people go to learn about God? They went to the temple. In the New Testament, where do people go to learn about how to become saved? They go either to individual Christians or they go where there is a gathering of Christians.

### **The Israel of God**

(Gal 6:16 KJV) And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

The physical nation of ancient Israel was a figure or a foreshadow of the eternal Israel that was to come. Then name “Israel” means “prince with God.” *Psalms 47:2 (KJV) For the LORD most high is terrible; he is a great King over all the earth.* Since God is a great king over all the earth, that would make His children Princes and Princesses, which is what the name “Israel” alludes to. God does not have in view the physical nation of ancient Israel and He definitely does not have in view the modern nation of Israel. The Israel which is to be built from the time of the cross to the last day, is the Israel of God

which is the body of believers. There is nothing in the New Testament about a re-birthing of a physical nation of Israel. God is now dealing with the entire world and the Israel of God is now a world wide nation. *Matthew 21:43 (KJV) Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.* The old nation of Israel lost its right to bring the Gospel because of its rank disobedience and choler. The nation which has been given that task is the body of believers described here as a nation. *Philippians 3:3 (KJV) For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.* Here God speaks about the body of believers as being the true circumcision which worships God in the Spirit and one must be born again to have the Spirit of God. *John 4:24 (KJV) God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.*

### **The Body of Christ**

(Eph 1:22-23 KJV) And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, {23} Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Here we have the eternal church being described as the “body” of Christ. Since Christ is the head, then the rest of the body represents the body of Christ which is the body of believers. Just like the human body, each part has a specific function. (1 Corinthians 12:15-20) No one is less important or more important than another. There are public ministries and behind the scenes ministries but both are level at the foot of the cross.

### **We are His Workmanship**

(Eph 2:10 KJV) For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

The Greek word behind “workmanship” is used only two times in the New Testament. *Romans 1:20 (KJV) For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:* The twin usage gives us tremendous insight. In Romans 1:20, it is speaking about the creation which God made. Here in Ephesians 2:10, it is speaking about Christians which were made by God. We were made Christians by the blood of Christ. So we see that the act of creation and the act of redemption are both works of God and not of man.

### **The Family of Heaven and Earth**

(Eph 3:15 KJV) Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

Here we have a passage describing the body of believers as a family. If you notice, not even death breaks up that family because the believer who physically dies, at once is united with the other part of the family in Heaven.

### **Reconciled unto God**

(Col 1:21 KJV) And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

The true Christian has become reconciled unto God, that is, we were once far off or at enmity with God but now through the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ on Calvary, we are no longer enemies of God but now we are reconciled unto Him. Those in religion who attempt to appease God through their works are still in darkness and separated from God. Reconciliation comes only through the cross of Christ.

### **Children of Light and Children of the Day**

1 Thessalonians 5:5 (KJV) Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.

In this verse two metaphors are used to describe the spiritual state of the believers. First we are children of light. *Matthew 5:14 (KJV) Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.* Jesus stated that we are the light of the world. This is in contrast to the whole world being in the darkness of sin. *Colossians 1:13 (KJV) Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:* When we became saved through Christ, we were instantly transferred from the kingdom of darkness, Satan's kingdom, into the kingdom of light, which is the Kingdom of God. Secondly, we are children of the day. In the day there is sunshine and much light. The world walks in the night of sin from which we were delivered from. *1 Thessalonians 5:7 (KJV) For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night.* 1 Thessalonians 5:7 teaches us that the world does all its sinning at night, that is, they sin because they walk in darkness and are not regenerated unto salvation. The darkness and the night for the unbeliever is constant no matter what time of day it is for all their works are tainted with sin. *1 John 1:5 (KJV) This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.* God is light and those who become saved also become children of light.

### **Church of the Living God & Pillar and Ground of Truth**

(1 Tim 3:15 KJV) But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

The body of believers and not necessarily a church building because in every church there are unbelievers. The church of the living God is made up of only those who are born again in Christ. *Mark 12:27 (KJV) He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err.* Those who are in Christ are those who have eternal life and because of that God is the God of the living. This is in comparison to those religions or houses of worship where there is a false gospel making them the church of the dead. They are spiritually dead and if any do not become saved, they will experience the second death.

Then we are called "the pillar and ground of truth." The words "pillar and ground" are used metaphorically because they are both used in the understanding of constructing a building. The word "pillar" deals with the principle of support as physical pillars support a building. The pillar was used widely in ancient times to uphold or support a structure. The church functions in the same manner that it upholds these truths. Each true believer is a pillar in that they support and uphold the truth of the Gospel going forth to all lands. Then the word "ground" has to deal with the foundation of a building. Now it must be

realized that the church does not establish the truth, the truth is given by God in his Word. The truth is also the Lord Jesus Christ Himself as He stated in John 14:6. (*John 14:6 KJV*) *Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* When the passage speaks concerning the church being the ground of truth, it is speaking of the responsibility of the church in two areas. First, the church is built on the foundation of the prophets and apostles. (*Eph 2:20 KJV*) *And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;* This means that their authority for preaching the true gospel has been handed down to the church and the church now holds the foundational truths of Scripture. Secondly, what it does with these truths is to uphold them in an evil world. Now when compared to the false religions of the world, the true church comprised of all true believers, holds the true foundations of truth and upholds those truths against all the false religions of the world. So the pillar and foundation works hand in hand to maintain a solid and strong structure.

### **City of the Living God & Mount Zion**

(*Heb 12:22 KJV*) But ye are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

The believers are called “mount Zion” which is in contrast to Mt. Sinai which was the giving of the law. Mount Zion is the New Testament description of the body of believers. It is because one who is called can approach and enter by grace alone. At Mt. Sinai, if anyone came near to the mountain, they were instantly killed but Mt. Zion is a Mountain of eternal life through Christ and in it is no death. (*John 10:28 KJV*) *And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.*

In 1 Timothy 3:15 we are called the “church of the Living God” and here we are called “the city of the Living God.” (*Hebrews 11:10 KJV*) *For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.* It is the city which Abraham looked for. He wasn’t looking for an earthly tract of land as today’s dispensationalists are looking for and at, but his horizon’s were set much higher, in the realm of eternity. He looked for the city of the living God which was the body of believers here and Heaven after that. After Adam and Eve sinned, God cursed the ground for their sakes. Abraham did not seek a tract of cursed land instead he sought the glorious, eternal kingdom of God.

### **General Assembly & Church of the Firstborn**

(*Heb 12:23 KJV*) To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

The words general assembly carries with them the idea of a festive gathering. It describes the joyful praise and celebration in the heavenly Jerusalem. Here was a great declaration which would have boggled the minds of the first century church which was living in the midst of an empire that was bent on wiping them out. First they are told that they have come unto the general assembly which carries with it the meaning of a great festival of joy and celebration which overshadowed the fear which was experienced at Sinai.

Then they were called the “church of the firstborn” which means that every believer, no

matter who it is, is on equal footing with every other believer. In the Old Testament economy the first born in a family was entitled to a double portion of the inheritance and here it is being told that all Christians are viewed as firstborn. The names of all the Christian were written in Heaven before the foundation of the world. *(Rev 17:8 KJV) The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.* So every believer is written in the Lamb's book of Life. Salvation goes way beyond the double portion of the inheritance of the firstborn in the Old Testament.

### **Chosen, Holy, Royal, Peculiar People**

(1 Pet 2:9 KJV) But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

God calls us a chosen generation which means we are the elect of God and the word generation means a race or family. This means those who are chosen of God to be born again are His family because we become His offspring by salvation. He then goes on to say that we are not only family but a kingly priesthood which means we are royalty in His eyes. *Revelation 1:6 (KJV) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.* Revelation 1:6 teaches us that we are not only saved but we are elevated to the dual office of Priest and King.

Then God states that we are a peculiar people which means we belong to Him exclusively as His special possession through the Lord Jesus Christ. The entire body of believers, whom God has redeemed, will now be able to bring forth the praises of God who has redeemed us from the kingdom of Satan and darkness and brought us into the wonderful light of the Gospel. *(1 John 1:5 KJV) This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.*

### **The Sons/Daughters of the Living God**

(1 John 3:2 KJV) Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

Here John makes a comparison between the present state of the believers and the future. First, we are told that "now" we are the sons of God, meaning that we are the children of God from the moment of salvation and not the moment we die. This speaks of the fact that when one becomes a Christian, they are now family, family of God that is. We must understand that eternal life begins at the point of salvation. While we have this heavenly treasure in earthly vessels at present, we do not know what the future holds for us in the area of new bodies. We can be confident that when the Lord Jesus Christ returns, our bodies will be changed so we will be qualified to see Christ in all His glory, this way we will not be consumed with the brightness of His glory. We know this to be fact because the Apostle Paul in 1 Corinthians 15 discussed the nature of the new body for the believers. If our bodies were not qualified to see the Lord Jesus in His Glory, then we would be consumed in a nanosecond. We saw a glimpse of His Glory on the Mount of

Transfiguration. (*Mat 17:2 KJV*) *And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.* Can anyone look into the sun and not suffer blindness?

### **The Heavenly Jerusalem**

(*Rev 3:12 KJV*) Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

Here we once again see the description of the pillar. Those who become saved will be made a pillar in the temple of God. Then there are three names which will be attached to the believer for eternity. Just as old Jerusalem was associated with the earthly nation of ancient Israel, New Jerusalem is associated with the body of believers.

The first name is going to be the name of God. (*Rev 14:1 KJV*) *And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.*

The second name is the city of God which is New Jerusalem. (*Rev 21:2 KJV*) *And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.*

The third name is the new name of the Lord Jesus Christ. (*Rev 19:12 KJV*) *His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.*

### **The Holy City**

(*Rev 21:2 KJV*) And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

Here is another description of the new Jerusalem. It is called the holy city because all the believers who are in the city have become holy by means of salvation in Christ. *Colossians 1:22 (KJV)* *In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight:* This is why the city will be flawless.

### **The Bride of Christ**

(*Rev 21:9 KJV*) And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.

The last description we are going to look at for the body of believers is “the bride of Christ.” This means that we will be married to him eternally and will never be divorced. It also means that we will dwell in His house forever and never have a worry about being excommunicated. The body of believers is now made pure forever.

### **Final Thoughts**

The descriptions we looked at are not the only ones in Scripture but they give us a good

idea that salvation is a lot more than just initial redemption. As we started out, we know that what we have discovered here is not something to be proud of or hold over somebody's head. God is openly showing us the result of becoming saved in Christ that salvation goes far more in depth than just redemption. There is a major transformation which takes place in the believer, both here and in Heaven. We are not going to be just a bunch of robe wearing choirboys and girls but because of the positions which we will hold, it will be something far greater and God wants us to know these things. I know many preachers who hold to false humility that like to keep the Christian down as low as possible so they can self-exalt themselves in the congregation but the reality is that all Christians are equal and earthly position or title does not change anything. *Deuteronomy 29:29 (KJV) The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.* The key to all this is that God does want us to know what waits for us in the new heavens and new earth. Deuteronomy 29:29 is key and teaches us that those things revealed belong to us. It is not wrong nor is it egotistical to teach these things or to understand these things.

If we are to teach about sin or evil, or other things like that, then why is it prohibited for us to teach and learn the realities which God placed in the Bible concerning the believer. It is not pride but it is Bible and not be neglected. We always associate the full counsel of God with sin and judgment, but we never associate it with the future of the believer. If God did not want us to know, then He would not have placed those descriptions in the Bible, but He did and therefore they belong to us! So Christian, read and study and see how God describes you. If you start to think that you are more than just a "sinner saved by grace" then you are going to act more like a redeemed saint and your life will begin to take on a new meaning. You will not find this type of teaching in the majority of churches and that is sad. What I have written in this article can be a great encouragement to believers. Maybe if the biblically challenged clergy would start teaching these truths, there would be much less self-centered and depressed Christians. They would see their salvation in a whole new light and would come out of the spiritual gutters the churches keep them in.

Nehemiah 8:10 (KJV) Then he said unto them, Go your way, eat the fat, and drink the sweet, and send portions unto them for whom nothing is prepared: for this day is holy unto our Lord: neither be ye sorry; for the joy of the LORD is your strength.

The joy of the Lord is our strength but it requires knowledge of who we are in Christ to attain that stable joy in our life.